John Adams Library.

IN THE CUSTODY OF THE
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.

SHELF Nº
ADAMS
250.4
v 2.

The WORLD DISPLAYED;

OR, A

Curious Collection

OF

Voyages AND Travels.

Selected and compiled from the

WRITERS of all NATIONS;

BY

Smart, Goldsmith, & Johnson.

FIRST AMERICAN EDITION.

Corrected & Enlarged.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

VOL II.

Philadelphia.

Publish'd by Dobelbower, Key, and Simpson. 1795.

W. Harrison fec.t sculp.t

3618

ADAMS 250.M-2

CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

The Settlement of Braſil, by the Portugueſe, 1

Diſcoveries of the Engliſh in America, - 78

Diſcoveries and Settlements of the French in America, - - - - - - - - 264

Diſcoveries and Settlements of the Dutch in America, - - - - - - - - 302

Diſcoveries of the Danes in America, - 318

The Voyage of Sir Francis Drake, round the World, - - - - - - - - - 321

The Voyage of Schouten and Le Maire, round the World, - - - - - - 345

The Voyage of Captain William Dampier, round the World. - - - - - - 375

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES IN VOLUME II.

	Page
Brazilians and their houſes to face . . .	5
Admiral Lichthart, &c.	44
Ten Canoes of Indians, &c.	112
Venables attacks Jamaica, ...	203
Beavers building their huts, ...	322
Admiral Drake ſeizes the Silver, . . .	332
The Engliſh coming to their boat, &c. .	383

THE

SETTLEMENT OF BRASIL,

BY

THE PORTUGUESE,

AND ITS SEVERAL REVOLUTIONS.

CHAPTER I.

The diſcovery of Braſil by Don Pedro Alvarez de Cabral. The ſmall advantages at firſt expected from it. Some account of the country, and its ancient inhabitants, and the manner in which it was firſt ſettled by the Portugueſe.

IN the ſecond voyage of the Portugueſe to the Indies in 1500, De Cabral, after paſſing the Cape de Verde iſlands, ſtood ſo far out to ſea with a view of avoiding the calms, common on the coaſt of Africa, that on the 24th of April he obſerved an unknown country on the weſt; but the ſea running high, he was obliged to ſail along the coaſt as far as 15 degrees ſouth latitude; where finding a good haven, he gave it the name of Porto Seguro, or the Safe Port; and the country itſelf he called the Land of the Holy Ghoſt; but this name was

afterwards changed to that of Brafil, from its abounding with Brafil wood, which had been ſo called in Europe about 300 years before this country was diſcovered.

Cabral ſent ſome people on ſhore to examine this new country, and they reporting that it was well watered, extremely fertile, full of fruit trees, and inhabited by a mild and gentle people, he reſolved to ſuffer his men to refreſh themſelves on ſhore. On his landing he found the place exactly agreed with the deſcription that had been given of it, and that the peaceful natives were ſo far from offering any inſult to the Portugueſe, that they received them with more kindneſs than they had reaſon to expect. As De Cabral had ſome condemned criminals on board, whoſe ſentence had been changed from that of death to tranſportation, he left two of theſe fellows in the country, to learn the language, to make farther diſcoveries, and to acquire the beſt knowledge they were able, of this unknown land and its inhabitants. Being ſenſible that this diſcovery was of great importance, he reſolved to loſe no time in ſending an account of it to the king of Portugal, and therefore immediately diſpatched one of his veſſels back to Liſbon, with ſome perſons on board, on whoſe fidelity he could depend, together with one of the natives, in order to his being inſtructed in the Portugueſe language. He alſo ſet up a ſtone croſs as a monument of his having been there, and of his having taken poſſeſſion of the country in behalf of the king of Portugal; which was the more neceſſary, as Columbus was then on his third voyage, making ſuch diſcoveries as amazed all Europe.

In conſequence of this advice, the king of Portugal ſent ſeveral perſons to make diſcoveries of the coaſt, who ſoon found that this was part of the continent of that new world diſcovered by Columbus;

upon which great diſputes aroſe between the two crowns, about the extent and boundaries of this country diſcovered by the Portugueſe; but it was at laſt ſettled, that from the river of Maranon to the river of Plate ſhould be yielded to the king of Portugal.

Affairs in the beginning went on very ſlowly: the firſt Portugueſe inhabitants were ſufficiently ſenſible that the ſoil was fertile, the air temperate, and the country well watered; but they could report no more. Braſil appeared a pleaſant, fruitful, and well ſituated country, capable indeed of furniſhing abundance of the neceſſaries of life, though it was imagined to be deſtitute of gold and ſilver.

Upon theſe reports, the miniſtry did not deſert the country, though they contented themſelves with tranſporting thither from time to time thoſe villains whoſe crimes brought them under the cenſure of the law; which not only gave the Portugueſe a mean opinion of the colony, but proved an effectual method of corrupting the poor Indians.

Indeed neither theſe diſcoverers nor the court of Portugal, could from any diſtinct idea of the importance of ſo vaſt a country, which, according to its preſent boundaries, may be reckoned 2000 miles from north to ſouth, and 1000 from eaſt to weſt; though the Portugueſe even to this time have ſcarce any where penetrated 500 miles. As the northern parts of the country lie near the equator, they are ſubject to great rains and variable winds, particularly about the months of March and September, when they are frequently diſturbed with hurricanes and tempeſts, which lay the country under water.

The middle part of Braſil from 5°. of ſouth latitude to the tropic, has the winds and ſeaſons directly the reverſe of thoſe in other parts of the

world, within the ſame latitudes; for in them the dry ſeaſon comes on when the ſun advances to the northward, and the wet ſeaſon begins when the ſun returns to the ſouthward; but here the wet ſeaſon begins in April, when the ſouth-eaſt wind ſets in, with violent tornadoes, thunder and lightning; and in September, when the wind ſhifts to eaſt-north-eaſt, it brings with it a clear ſky and fair weather. There is no country between the tropics where the heats are more tolerable, or the air more healthful, it being conſtantly refreſhed with breezes from the ſea, and cooled by the lakes and rivers which annually overflow their banks; and in the inland part of the country, the winds from the mountains are ſtill cooler than thoſe that blow from the ocean.

That part of Braſil which lies more to the ſouth, and without the tropic of Capricorn, is in all reſpects one of the fineſt countries in the known world; but here the Portugueſe dominions are narrow, they being confined by the Spaniſh territories and the river Plate.

The Indians differ very little in ſtature or complexion from the Portugueſe themſelves; but much exceed them in ſtrength and vigour. Some lived in villages, and others moved about according to their humours. Theſe villages conſiſted only of three or four very large houſes; in each of which a whole family or tribe lived together, under the authority of the eldeſt parent. They procured ſubſiſtence by fowling and fiſhing, and made up the reſt of their diet with the fruits of the earth; but though they had no luxurious plenty, yet, in ſo fertile a country, they were in no great danger of want. They were, however, continually at war with each other; but for what cauſe is not eaſily determined, unleſs we ſhould admit what ſome old writers affirm, that they made theſe wars

E. Reiche sc

The Brasilians & their Houses

chiefly that they might kill and eat each other, eſteeming human fleſh the greateſt dainty. But perhaps the teſtimony of thoſe, who own themſelves guilty of extirpating thouſands of theſe poor creatures, to whom they could have no quarrel worthy of rational beings, ought not to be of much weight; ſince men are apt to calumniate and miſrepreſent thoſe they have injured; as if by aggravating their vices, they could juſtify, or at leaſt palliate, their own. And beſides, as none of the late travellers obſerve any ſign of their ever being cannibals, they ought to be vindicated from ſo cruel an aſperſion.

The Portugueſe and Dutch writers give the name of Tapuyers to the native inhabitants of the north part of Braſil, and that of Tupinambies or Tupanamboys to thoſe who dwell in the ſouth of Braſil; but divide theſe again into ſeveral petty nations, who ſpeak different languages, though their manners and cuſtoms are much the ſame.

The Tapuyers are pretty tall, and as they live almoſt under the equator, are of a dark copper colour, their hair which is black, hanging over their ſhoulders; but they have no beards nor hair on any part of their bodies, and go naked, the men only incloſing their nudities in a caſe, and the women concealing theirs with leaves; the men alſo wear a cap or coronet of feathers. Their ornaments are glittering ſtones, hanging to their lips and noſtrils, and bracelets of feathers upon their arms; ſome of them paint their bodies of various colours; while others rubbing themſelves with gums, ſtick beautiful feathers upon their ſkins, which at a diſtance make them look more like fowls than human creatures.

The Tupinambies who inhabit the ſouth of Braſil, are of a moderate ſtature, and not of ſo dark a complexion as their northern neighbours, who

live nearer the line. They are indeed neither of them ſo dark as the Africans in the ſame latitude, for there were no negroes in America, till they were tranſported thither by the Portugueſe and Spaniards. The Tupinambies, however, reſemble the Africans in their flat noſes, which being eſteemed a beauty, are made ſo by art in their infancy. They have alſo black lank hair upon their heads; but, like the Tapuyers, have no hair on their bodies and faces, and, like them, paint their bodies.

The general food of the Braſilians is the caſſavi or mandioka root dried to powder, of which they make cakes like our ſea-biſcuits. This flour they alſo carry with them on journeys, and it being infuſed in water, ſerves them both as meat and drink; they do not appear to have had any corn till the Europeans carried it thither. They alſo feed on other roots, fruit and herbs; on wild-fowl, the veniſon they take in hunting, and on fiſh, and with every thing eat a great deal of pepper. They generally drink ſpring-water, of which they are ſaid to have the beſt and the greateſt variety in the world; yet they have other kinds of liquors made of the fruits preſſed and infuſed, or of honey, with which they ſometimes get very drunk, ſitting whole days and nights over their cups.

Before the arrival of the Portugueſe, they were maſters of the art of ſpinning, weaving, and building their houſes, and of forming their arms, which conſiſted of bows, arrows, lances and darts; and they had ſome knowledge of the virtues of ſeveral herbs and drugs, which they frequently adminiſtered with ſucceſs to the ſick.

Hunting, fowling and fiſhing were then rather their buſineſs than amuſement, theſe being abſolutely neceſſary for the ſupport of their families, in a country where they had no tame cattle or corn;

drinking, dancing and ſinging were more properly their diverſions, which they practiſed on their days of rejoicing for a victory, or on the birth of their children. They are at preſent great ſmokers and take the ſtrongeſt tobacco; their pipes are a hollow reed or cane, and the bowl is a large nut-ſhell that almoſt holds an handful of tobacco.

In ſhort, they are a tractable and ingenious people, ready to learn any art or ſcience the Portugueſe will teach them, and taking nothing ſo kindly of the prieſts as the inſtructing of their children; whence the Jeſuits have made many converts; and thoſe who live under the Portugueſe, generally conform to their cuſtoms in eating, drinking, and cloathing. They are but little inclined to labour, from their not being infected with avirice: for their deſires are but few, and thoſe eaſily gratified. Their greateſt vice is their thirſt of revenge.

To return to the ſteps by which the Portugueſe ſettlements in Braſil became at length ſo conſiderable.—The crown had at firſt recourſe to the making extenſive grants to ſuch as were inclined to ſettle there, or had the power of ſending others; whence ſome of the richeſt and moſt powerful of the nobility had diſtricts given them equal in extent to Portugal itſelf. This was at firſt attended with little inconvenience, ſince the king might without expence, give to others what he never actually poſſeſſed. This ſtep was the more neceſſary, as the whole attention both of the miniſters and nobility was taken up with the Eaſt-Indies, where the latter found means to repair their fortunes by obtaining governments, by which they ſoon acquired vaſt eſtates; while thoſe who were contented to try their fortunes in this new colony, found that the natives were reſolved not to bear the yoke of ſlavery, and grew deſperate at every attempt to bring them into ſubjection.

The fertility of the country, however, made ſome amends for theſe inconveniencies, by drawing abundance of people from other parts of America to ſettle there, where they erected a new kind of government, dictated by neceſſity, in which every maſter of a family was both a planter and a ſoldier. He laid out as much land as himſelf and his family could cultivate, and daily performed his military exerciſes to enable himſelf to defend his property; and hence every diſtrict had the title of captainſhip; which they ſtill retain, though the ſtate of affairs is abſolutely changed.

By this means the colony grew apace, and in fifty years time ſpread over a large tract of country, and erected many good towns, the principal of which were Tamacara, Fernambuca, Illheos, Porto Segura, and St. Vincent, each of which was ſurrounded by a populous and well cultivated territory.

The flouriſhing ſtate of Braſil ſoon began to awaken the attention of the court; king John III. became concerned at the grants made by his predeceſſors, and therefore in the year 1549, ungeneroufly revoked all thoſe made to the original proprietors. The ſame year he made Thomas de Souſa governor-general of Braſil, who ſetting ſail with a fleet of ſix men of war, carried with him many officers, civil and military, with a conſiderable body of ſoldiers, and ſix fathers of the new order of Jeſuits, who were to convert the Indians. He had alſo a new plan of power adjuſted according to the views of the court, and was directed to build a new town in the bay of All Saints.

De Souſa, ſoon after his arrival at Braſil, began to enter upon the execution of what he was ordered to perform. He made war upon the natives, built the town of St. Salvador, and erected monaſteries for the Jeſuits.

What De Sauſa could not finiſh, was completed by Edward Acoſto, his ſucceſſor, in whoſe time the number of towns and of the inhabitants was doubled; he was alſo obliged to ſtrengthen the towns, by erecting better fortifications than thoſe with which they had been hitherto ſurrounded. He therefore demoliſhed the old fortifications, which were of earth, and raiſing others of brick and ſtone, furniſhed them with artillery, the neceſſity of which was ſoon juſtified by experience.

CHAPTER II.

Attempts made by the French to ſettle a colony in Braſil by the Sieur de Villegagnon, capt. Riffaut, and M. Rivardier, without ſucceſs.

AT this time the affairs of France being in the greateſt confuſion, and the diſputes between thoſe of the church of Rome and the Calviniſts being carried to the utmoſt height, many of the moſt active and induſtrious people were deſirous of leaving their native ſoil, and ſeeking an eaſier and more contented ſtate in diſtant climates. Among theſe was Nicholas Durant, lord of Villegagnon, knight of Malta, and vice-admiral of Britany, who being treated ill at Nantz, ſuddenly reſolved to leave the kingdom, and carry a colony into ſome diſtant part of the world, and hearing ſome account of Braſil, he drew up a ſcheme for fixing a ſettlement in that country. This he preſented to Gaſpar de Coligny, admiral of France, deſiring his aſſiſtance towards fitting out a ſquadron for that purpoſe.

The admiral was diſtinguiſhed for his abilities and virtues, and, being a very zealous proteſtant, readily promiſed to give him all the encouragement he could deſire, in hopes of ſettling a proteſtant colony; that, in caſe the affairs of his friends ſhould be totally ruined in France, they might have a place to which they might retire out of the reach of their enemies. De Villegagnon, readily undertaking to put this in execution, the admiral made ſuch a repreſentation of the affair to king Henry II. that he had leave to fit out three large veſſels, with a ſufficient number of ſeamen and adventurers on board; and in May 1555, this ſmall ſquadron ſailed from Havre de Grace for Braſil, where, after a tedious and troubleſome voyage they arrived in November.

This colony landed upon a rock, which they found uninhabitable; but marching farther within land, fixed upon a very commodious ſpot of ground almoſt under the tropic of Capricorn, where they erected a convenient fortreſs for their ſecurity both againſt the natives and the Portugueſe, which they called fort Coligny. From this place the Sieur de Villegagnon ſent the admiral a long account of his proceedings and ſituation; deſcribed the country and its inhabitants, and obſerved that it was extremely practicable to make that both a uſeful and thriving colony; but remarked that ſuch as were ſent to him muſt not expect the delicacies of Europe, that their bread was made of a certain root ground to powder, that they had no wine, much fiſh, and ſome veniſon; and that thoſe who could live contentedly upon ſuch proviſions, might find a ſecure retreat at his fort in Braſil.

This letter the admiral communicated to the famous reformer John Calvin of Geneva, who prevailed on a dozen zealous proteſtants of that city, to engage in the deſign of improving this new ſet-

tlement. Du Pont, a man of ſenſe, with a good character, was put at the head of this affair, and with him were joined two miniſters, Peter Richer who had been formerly a Carmelite, and William Chartier; theſe ſetting out together from Geneva, waited upon the admiral at Chatillon, who gave them a kind reception; and by his aſſiſtance, joined to their own intereſt, they ſoon got together 300 men, who embarked at Honfleur on board three veſſels, in November 1556, and arrived at fort Coligny on the 7th of March 1557, where they werereceived with great joy.

Things, however, did not long continue in this ſituation; for the Sieur de Villegagnon, who had pretended to be a rigid calviniſt, ſoon ſhewed, that he had only worn a maſk. This produced a quarrel between him and the miniſter Richer, in which the diſputes roſe ſo high, that he drove the latter and all his adherents out of the colony; upon whch they ſailed up the Rio Janeiro, and eſtabliſhed themſelves upon its banks; where having ſtaid about eight months, they returned to France, where they repreſented the Sieur de Villegagnon, in the blackeſt colours, as an hyprocrite and an impoſtor: at which the admiral, finding that this affair was not likely to be of any advantage to the proteſtant cauſe, reſolved to give himſelf no farther concern about it.

The Sieur de Villegagnon being thus abandoned, took the beſt meaſures he could for the ſecurity of the colony in his abſence, and then returned to France; where he endeavoured to raiſe a belief of his being a zealous calviniſt, and publiſhed an apology for his own conduct, in which he painted the miniſters in as bad a light as they had placed him; but findnig this produced no good, he retired to a commandery of his own order, and ſpent the remainder of his days in writing againſt the pro-

teſtants. In the mean time the Portugueſe laid hold of this opportunity to rid themſelves of their new neighbours; and the next year Emanuel Sa, governor of Braſil, cut off the French that were left behind, and demoliſhed their fort.

It is obſervable, that during the ſhort time the French were poſſeſſed of this ſettlement, they made a greater progreſs in trade, and eſtabliſhed a more friendly correſpondence with the natives, than the Portugueſe had been able to do in about fifty years. This indeed was owing to a very odd accident. About twenty years before, a ſhip from Normandy having been loſt upon that coaſt, ſome of the men got un ſhore, where being well received by the natives they married among them, and exactly conformed to their manners, and theſe men were of great ſervice to the colony.

The Portugueſe now for ſome time quietly enjoyed their ſettlements, till at length one captain Riffaut, who had been cruizing on the Spaniards, touched at the iſland of Maragnan, on the coaſt of Braſil, contracted ſo great an intimacy with the Indian chief of the iſland, that he invited him to bring a ſufficient number of his countrymen to fix a ſettlement there, promiſing to give him all the aſſiſtance in his power. This offer the French captain readily embraced, and at his return to France, found means, by his credit and intereſt, to equip three ſhips ſo effectually, that there was great reaſon to expect extraordinary ſucceſs; but his men mutinying before he reached the iſland, and the largeſt of his ſhips running upon the coaſt as ſoon as he got to it, by which means ſhe was loſt, he was obliged to return to France; but ſome of his people, among whom was M. de Vaux, choſe to ſtay with the natives, who made them extremely welcome: This young gentleman was remarkably briſk and active; he liked the climate, and continued

there ſome time. His behaviour to the Braſilians was very engaging, and he in many reſpects proved ſo uſeful to them, that they made the ſame applications to him, as the Indian chief had done to captain Riffaut, which at laſt engaged him to think ſeriouſly upon the ſubject, and to return home by the firſt opportunity.

On M. de Vaux's arriving in France, he applied to king Henry IV. to whom he repreſented the vaſt advantages that would flow from ſuch an eſtabliſhment; upon which that prince who had the good of his ſubjects at heart, and was unwilling to place too great a confidence on the credit of a young adventurer, ſent a ſmall veſſel, under the command of M. Rivardier, a perſon of great merit, upon whoſe report he could depend, who took M. de Vaux with him, and after remaining ſix months in Braſil, returned to France, from whence he made ſeveral voyages back, before the government could come to any reſolution about ſettling a colony. Preparations were, however, at length actually made for ſending a ſtrong ſquadron thither, when a ſtop was put to them by the murder of Henry IV. But M. Rivardier was ſo fond of the place, and ſo fully perſuaded that a ſettlement there would immediately turn to account, that he embarked his whole private fortune, and engaged ſeveral of his friends to do ſo too; by which means he equipt three ſtout veſſels, and engaged about 300 men to go to Braſil, with whom he embarked at Cancale, on the coaſt of Britany, and in July following arrived at the iſland of Maragnan.

He there erected a fortreſs on the ſummit of a hill near the beſt port in the iſland, between two fine rivers that waſhed both ſides of the mountain, and ran from thence into the ſea. Upon the baſtions of this fort he mounted twenty-two pieces

of cannon; and every thing ſeemed to promiſe all the ſucceſs that could be deſired, when, about two years after their firſt arrival, a ſtrong ſquadron, ſent by Don Jerom de Albuquerque, the Portugueſe governor of Braſil, appearing before the bay, ſoon forced them to ſurrender, and, according to his orders, the place was inſtantly demoliſhed; which cured the French of all farther thoughts of ſettling in that country.

CHAPTER III.

The Dutch make themſelves maſters of Braſil; but are driven out by the united force of Spain and Portugal. The Dutch, however, being reſolved to make a freſh attempt, ſend a large fleet under the command of Admiral Lank, with a body of land forces commanded by General Wardenbourgh. The latter takes the city of Olinda, and all the coaſts to the ſouth; while Admiral Lank takes an iſland called the Sandy Receif. Admiral Pater being afterwards ſent from Holland with a large fleet, the Dutch oblige the Portugueſe to raiſe the ſiege of Olinda; and this brave admiral, with only ſix ſhips, engages the Portugueſe fleet of forty-five, and comes off with great honour.

IN the year 1581, the crown of Portugal devolving on the head of Philip the II. king of Spain, he not only became poſſeſſed of all the rich countries in America diſcovered by the Spaniards, but of Braſil, and all the Portugueſe ſettlements in the Eaſt-Indies. Theſe he left to his ſucceſſors, together with the war he had carried on againſt the Seven United Provinces, who had ſhaken off their dependence on the crown of Spain, and formed themſelves into a Republic, which, by attending to trade, made the moſt rapid peogreſs. This

new Republic, by forming an Eaſt-India company obtained ſuch prodigious advantage, that, in 1624, they were induced to ſet up alſo a Weſt-India company, which from its firſt inſtitution proved fatal to the Portugueſe.

The Dutch being now ſenſible of the ſtate of Braſil, and the ſmall reſiſtance they were like to meet with in caſe they made a deſcent on the coaſt, which was no leſs than 1200 leagues in extent, equipped a ſquadron under the command of James Wilikens, which entering the bay of All Saints, the Portugueſe were ſo frightened, that, inſtead of providing for their defence, they immediately uſed all poſſible methods to carry off and ſecure their effects.

The Dutch obſerving the conſternation into which they had thrown the enemy, inſtantly landed, and without much difficulty made themſelves maſters of St. Salvador, the capital of Braſil. Don Diego de Mendoza, the Portugueſe governor, not having the courage to defend the place, fled; but Michael Texeira, the archbiſhop, who was of one of the beſt families in Portugal, notwithſtanding his being in years, ſummoned all the clergy and monks about him, and repreſenting the neceſſity they were under of laying aſide their clerical capacities, prevailed on them to take up arms; and though deſerted by the governor, the ſoldiers and the inhabitants, they for ſome time made a very gallant defence, and at laſt retreated to a neighbouring town; where, after acting the part of ſoldiers, they turned pioneers, and, under the conduct of the archbiſhop, fortified the place, and gave the enemy as much trouble as if they had been the moſt regular troops in the world.

By the taking of this town, the Dutch not only acquired an immenſe plunder, but became maſters of the largeſt and beſt peopled diſtrict in the whole

country, and ſeemed in a fair way of making, in a ſhort time, a complete conqueſt of the whole colony; which they would probably have done, had it not been for the heroic archbiſhop, who aſſumed the title of captain general, an office which he ſaid came to him from Heaven, in the legible characters of public neceſſity.

The news of this misfortune no ſooner reached Portugal, than it threw both the city of Liſbon and the whole kingdom into confuſion, which was increaſed by the ſuſpicions of the nobility, that the Spaniſh miniſtry were not much diſpleaſed at this event, as it would leſſen the wealth and power of the grandees of Portugal, who had the greateſt part of their eſtates in Braſil. However, king Philip IV. in whoſe reign this happened, ſhewed that theſe ſuſpicions were but ill founded. He immediately ſent orders to Portugal to equip a fleet for the recovery of St. Salvador, and at the ſame time wrote a letter with his own hand to the nobility, deſiring their aſſiſtance on this occaſion.

This revived the ſpirits of the nation, and the Portugueſe lords exerted themſelves ſo effectually, that in three months time they had a fleet of twenty-ſix ſail ready to put to ſea; but though the Spaniards did not make equal diſpatch, yet, in February 1626, their fleet joined that of Portugal, and they ſet ſail, under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo Oſorio, marquis of Valdueſa, with 1500 men on board.

In the mean time, the Dutch being in poſſeſſion of St. Salvador and the adjacent country, began very raſhly to extend themſelves on every ſide, either from contempt of the Portugueſe, or an extravagant thirſt of plunder. The heroic archbiſhop, however, ſoon convinced them of their miſtake: he had now aſſembled 1500 men, and with theſe not only cut off moſt of their parties,

but at laſt forcing them to take ſhelter in the town, blocked them up, and reduced them to great diſtreſs; which he had no ſooner done, than he reſigned the command firſt to Nunez Marino, and afterwards to Don Francis de Mauro, declaring that his own commiſſion expired with that neceſſity, which had forced him to take it up.

Things were in this ſituation, when the united fleets of Spain and Portugal arrived in the bay of All Saints. Don Emanuel de Meneſſez immediately landed 4000 men, and joined the army before St. Salvador. The Dutch governor was, however, reſolved to defend it to the laſt extremity; but the garriſon mutinying, forced him to ſurrender on the 20th of April; when the Spaniſh and Portugueſe commanders, ſuppoſing that the war was at an end, and that the Dutch, like the French, would be afraid of making any new attempts upon Braſil, returned home with the fleets in triumph.

They were however greatly miſtaken, for the rich plunder of St. Salvador, which had been brought by admiral Wiliken's into Holland, made the Dutch deſirous of engaging in other expeditions of the ſame kind, and encouraged the Weſt-India company to think of making another expedition. They accordingly fitted out a ſtrong fleet of 46 men of war, commanded by admiral Lonk, with a conſiderable body of land forces on board, under gen. Wardenbourg, which ſetting ſail, arrived in ſight of Fernambuca on the 3d of February 1630, and gen. Wardenbourg landing with near 3000 men on the 15th of the ſame month, marched directly towards the city of Olinda, which he found covered by three forts, with a numerous garriſon in each; he however attacked and carried them all, but not without a vigorous reſiſtance; and this ſucceſs ſo frightened the inhabitants of the city, that they immediately ſurrendered, though the

natives, who had turned Chriſtians, ſhewed great ſpirit, and behaved on this. and on every other occaſion, with the utmoſt courage and fidelity.

While general Wardenburg was thus employed on ſhore, Admiral Lonk was no leſs active by ſea; and as the Portugueſe had no conſiderable naval force to oppoſe him, he, in a very ſhort time, reduced all the coaſt to the ſouth of Olinda, ſecuring and fortifying every place that fell into his hands; it being reſolved, to obtain ſuch a footing in the country, as would enable the Dutch to keep their ground againſt the whole force of Portugal.

With this view Admiral Lonk reſolved at all events, to make himſelf maſter of a very ſtrong poſt, that ſeemed the fitteſt for his purpoſe, and of which it is neceſſary that we ſhould give our readers ſome account.

The whole coaſt of Braſil is bordered by a thick and flat ridge of rocks, which is in ſome places twenty, and in others thirty yards broad; and were it not for ſeveral breaks and paſſages in this rocky incloſure, it would be impoſſible to approach the ſhore. In particular, there is a very large paſſage towards the north of Olinda; but the ridge of rocks appears again almoſt before the city, and the inhabitants paſs to it in boats at high water. This part of the ridge is called by the Portugueſe Reciffo, and by the Dutch the Receif. On the north point is a very narrow open paſſage for the ſhips to approach the ſhore; and between this ridge of rocks and the continent, is a ſandy iſland about a league in length called the Sandy Recief Upon this iſland, which is in 8° 26 ſouth latitude, was a good caſtle, called Fort St. George, well provided with artillery, and eſteemed impregnable, and of this the Dutch admiral made himſelf maſter, when having ſtrengthened the Stony Receif, he made this the chief ſeat

of commerce, and afterwards it became one of the moſt conſiderable places in Braſil.

The Portugueſe and Spaniards were exceſſively alarmed at the news of this ſecond attempt upon Braſil, and at the Dutch having conquered the Captainſhip of Fernambuca; they therefore reſolved to ſend thither immediately a force ſufficient to drive them out, and effectually to ſecure the country to themſelves for the future; but the diſaffection of the Portugueſe to the Spaniſh government, divided and perplexed their meaſures ſo, that they were a long time in fitting out a fleet; during which the Dutch were employed in fortifying themſelves, in extending their conqueſts, and in taking all the neceſſary precautions for their defence; wherein they proceeded with the utmoſt induſtry and vigilance.

The Dutch fleet no ſooner returned from Braſil, than admiral Pater was ſent thither with a much ſtronger force, in order to make a conqueſt of the whole country. He arrived in ſight of the coaſt of Fernambuca on the 1ſt of May 1631, where finding the city of Olinda cloſely blocked up by a numerous army, commanded by Albuquerque, the famous Portugueſe general, who had landed 400 men under the command of an experienced officer, to take a view of the enemy's works, in order to form a juſt judgment of the beſt manner of beginning the attack; but the Dutch garriſon ſeeing his fleet come to an anchor, and the troops landed, made ſo vigorous a ſally on the beſiegers, as forced them to retire from before the city with conſiderable loſs. Admiral Pater now enabled his countrymen to extend their conqueſts very conſiderably, particularly towards the ſouth, intending to attack the city of St. Salvador both by ſea and land; but was prevented by his receiving intelligence that the Spaniards and Portugueſe had ſent a ſtrong

fleet, which was actually at ſea, in order to undertake the relief of Braſil.

This fleet conſiſted of about thirty ſhips, commanded by admiral D'Oquendo, who ſailed from Spain in a very indifferent condition: but at the Canaries was joined by fifteen more, and near the Cape de Verd iſlands received ſuch an acceſſion of force, as made D'Oquendo's fleet conſiſt of fifty-four large ſhips. The Dutch admiral had but ſixteen, but being jealous of the honour of his country, boldly reſolved to fight under this amazing diſadvantage, and was even determined to meet the enemy, which he accordingly did in 6°, ſouth latitude: but as ſoon as they appeared in ſight, and the Dutch fleet ſaw how unequal the diſpute was like to prove, ten of the captains bore away, and left the admiral only ſix ſhips to fight an enemy that had almoſt ten times his number; and though he had two flags under him, theſe, to their immortal honour, were two of thoſe who had joined him, ſo that there were three admirals to ſix ſhips. The battle was long and bloody, for many of the Portugueſe ſhips were ſunk; and it is evident, that if the other ten ſhips had ſtaid, victory would have declared for the Dutch; but at laſt admiral Thys in the Prince William was ſunk, and ſoon after, a ball unhappily falling into the Dutch admiral's powder room, the ſhip was blown up, and that brave man loſt. Upon this the four Dutch ſhips that remained, retired; but did it with ſuch courage and addreſs, that they not only ſafely arrived at Olinda, but carried off a Portugueſe man of war they had taken, and indeed, it may be ſafely affirmed, there never was a more glorious action.

When admiral D'Oquendo arrived on the coaſt, he was ſatisfied with ſending refreſhments and reinforcements to the army under Albuquerque, but made no attempt againſt the city of Olinda; the

great loſs he had ſuffered in the battle, which amounted in the whole to no leſs than thirteen ſail taken and ſunk, made him leave things in a ſtate little better than that in which he found them. He therefore, after repairing his ſhips, ſet ſail for Liſbon, in the month of October, but in his paſſage had the misfortune to meet with four Dutch men of war well manned, who bravely reſolved to attack him, though he had ſtill forty ſail, and moſt of them large ſhips.

In this engagement D'Oquendo loſt the captain of his own ſhip, with twenty-two other captains; his vice-admiral, three men of war, two frigates, and about 700 private men; after which he returned home, with the wretched remains of his unfortunate fleet; but the blame fell entirely upon the miniſters, who, in ſpite of his remonſtrances, had obliged him to ſail with ſhips half equipped and half manned.

As this misfortune could not be remedied, the miniſters expreſſed their willingneſs to do all in their power in order to repair it, and therefore gave orders for providing a larger fleet, better equipped and manned, to ſail under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo, who had acquired great reputation. But notwithſtanding all their endeavours nothing could be done that ſeaſon, and therefore it was deferred to the next ſpring; when it was reſolved to ſend ſuch a force, as ſhould put an end to the war at once; but as it is much eaſier to lay fine ſchemes in the cabinet, than to carry them into execution, ſo, notwithſtanding this celebrated admiral actually proceeded on his voyage with a very large fleet, every way well provided, he returned to Portugal without doing any thing of importance.

CHAPTER IV.

The ſurpriſing ſucceſs of the Dutch againſt the united forces of Spain and Portugal, induces the directors of the Weſt-India company to ſend count Maurice of Naſſau, as governor of Braſil, who, by his wiſe conduct, and prudent adminiſtration, ſecures and ſettles the beſt part of the country.

MEAN while the Dutch taking advantage of theſe delays, made a ſurpriſing progreſs, and, in the ſpace of ſeven years, reduced under their dominions the captainſhips of Fernambuca; Tamaraca, Paraiba and Rio Grande. In ſhort, they had ſuch aſtoniſhing ſucceſs againſt the Spaniards in this and other parts of America, that from the time of their Weſt-India company's being erected, in 1624, to the year 1637, they deſtroyed and took from them in money and merchandize, to the value of forty-five millions of florins, or four millions and a half ſterling; and of 800 ſhips fitted out againſt them by the crown of Spain, they deſtroyed or took 547.

By this ſucceſs the directors of the Weſt India company were induced to put themſelves upon a level with the Eaſt India company, and were reſolved to place at the head of their affairs, a perſon whoſe credit and power would add ſtrength to their own. With this view they pitched upon count John Maurice of Naſſau, a near relation to the Prince of Orange, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the ſervice of the States with great applauſe.

This nobleman, readily accepting the propoſal, was declared governor of Braſil and South-Ame-

rica; and that he might enter upon his office in a manner ſuitable to his quality and character, the company reſolved to fit out a fleet of thirty-two large ſhips, with 2700 land forces; but the count being impatient to be gone, ſailed before they were ready, on the 25th of October 1636, with only four ſhips, and 350 ſoldiers on board. With this ſmall ſquadron he arrived on the coaſt of Braſil, on the 23d of January 1637, with Adrian Vander Duſſen, who had joined him near the iſland of Madeira, and was ſoon followed by other captains.

Count Maurice took the field with two conſiderable bodies of troops, one of which conſiſted of 300 men; with theſe he reſolved to attack the Portugueſe army; and the other of 600 was to be employed in various expeditions, in order to divide and diſtract the enemy, who had a large body of forces in the field, under the command of the count de Benjola, an officer of great bravery and experience, who aſſembled the bulk of his army at Porto Cavallo. Thither count Maurice marched, and after a very obſtinate reſiſtance, the Portugueſe were defeated, and at length forced in their camp, notwithſtanding its being ſtrongly intrenched. The count de Benjola then retired with the remains of his troops, under the cannon of the citadel of Povacaon, from whence he retreated on the approach of the Dutch, who beſieged and took that fortreſs, in which was a garriſon of 600 men.

Count Maurice next took the town of Openeda on the river St. Francis; built a citadel there, and another at the mouth of the river, by which he effectually covered his new conqueſt. Then returning to Olinda, he ſettled the civil and military government; and fitted out two fleets; one under the command of admiral Lichchart, who had orders to attack the ſouth coaſt of Braſil; and the

other commanded by commodore Hanſkins, who was deſtined to a ſervice of ſtill greater importance, which was fixing themſelves on the oppoſite ſhore of Africa. For this purpoſe it was reſolved to attack the caſtle of St. George de la Mina on the coaſt of Guinea, in the poſſeſſion of the Portugueſe; for the Dutch having a ſtrong ſettlement in that neighbourhood, the governor ſent to adviſe count Maurice, that this was the proper time for carrying this important project into execution. Commodore Hanſkins joined the Dutch governor on the 25th of July, when attacking the caſtle, which was one of the ſtrongeſt in that part of the world, they, after a regular ſiege, obliged the Portugueſe to ſurrender. After this ſucceſs, commodore Hanſkins returned to Olinda, where he was received by count Maurice with all the marks of honour and reſpect, that the performance of ſo important a ſervice deſerved.

The campaign in 1638 was equally glorious for the Dutch, for the count de Banjola having aſſembled a numerous army to defend the captainſhip of Segerippa, count Maurice attacked and defeated him, took the capital, and reduced the whole province. This great ſucceſs induced the natives of Siarra, one of the northern captainſhips, to declare for the Dutch, and to offer, upon the promiſe of being reſtored to the enjoyment of their freedom, to aſſiſt them againſt the Portugueſe, when a body of troops being ſent to join them, they reduced that whole diſtrict.

Count Maurice now reſolved to attack St. Salvador in the bay of All Saints, which was conſidered as the capital of all Braſil: for this purpoſe he embarked all the troops he could aſſemble at Olinda, and landed them in the bay of All Saints, in hopes of ſurpriſing the Portugueſe. The count de Banjola, who was in the neighbourhood with a

ſmall body of regular troops, immediately threw himſelf into the place, though the governor was his avowed enemy, and count Maurice expected that the differences which ſubſiſted between them, would facilitate his taking the city. Indeed, the Portugueſe governor at firſt diſputed the command with the count de Banjola; but that nobleman told him, that their quarrels would only ſerve to ruin them; whereas, if they agreed, each of them might become as great as he could wiſh. To which the governor anſwered, "Sir, I perceive you are "a wiſer man than I, and nobody ſhall obey your "orders more punctually."

Count Maurice without much reſiſtance made himſelf maſter of the ſtrong fort of Albert, of that of St. Bartholomew, and the famous caſtle of St. Philip. Encouraged by this ſucceſs he erected two batteries, in order to attack fort Roſes, which covered the city on one ſide, and a horn-work, that was its principal ſtrength on the other. Between theſe lay a piece of ground, covered with ſhrubs and buſhes, where count de Banjola adviſed the governor to poſt himſelf with 400 men, while he made a ſally. This ſcheme had the deſired effect, for the Dutch, after an obſtinate diſpute, endeavouring to retire through that piece of ground, were attacked in their rear, and loſt four officers of diſtinction, their principal engineer, and 300 of their beſt men; upon which count Maurice abandoned the caſtle he had taken, and raiſed the ſiege with ſome precipitation.

On count Maurice's return from this fruitleſs expedition, he with the utmoſt diligence applied himſelf to the eſtabliſhment of good order and perfect diſcipline in all parts of his government; fortifying the frontier places, reviewing his troops in perſon, appointing experienced officers to command them, and giving the utmoſt encouragement

to ſuch of the natives as ſhewed an inclination to aſſiſt him, or to live peaceably under the protection of the Dutch; by which means he prevented the enemy from taking advantage of their late ſucceſs.

Mean while the Spaniſh government having received an exact account of the ſtate of affairs of Braſil, reſolved to ſend a fleet and army ſufficient to put an end to the war at once, by obliging the Dutch to abandon all their conqueſts. This fleet conſiſted of twenty-ſix galleons double manned, twenty large men of war, and 5000 regular troops, under the command of Don Fernandez count de las Torres, who ſet ſail in the autumn of 1639, and received conſiderable reinforcements in his paſſage; but having the misfortune to be detained by calms on the coaſt of Africa, the plague broke out in his crouded ſhips, and ſwept away above 3000 men, before he reached All Saints Bay; and the remainder of his troops were in ſo bad a condition, that he was obliged to put them into quarters of refreſhment; while the Dutch were waiting with great impatience for the ſuccours which ſoon after arrived from Holland.

The count de las Torres, however, put to ſea in January 1640, with a fleet of ninety-three ſail great and ſmall, with 12,000 men on board: While count Maurice aſſembled forty-one men of war, and waited for the Portugueſe within four miles of the port of Olinda. This laſt fleet was commanded, under his excellency, by William Leos, a Dutch admiral of great bravery. On the 12th of the ſame month, the fleets met and engaged near the iſland of Tamaraca, and fought from one in the afternoon till it was night. In this engagement the Dutch loſt their brave admiral Leos, but only three other men. The next day he was replaced by James Huyghens, who engaging the Spaniſh fleet a ſecond time, obtained

great advantages. The following day he attacked them a third time with ſtill greater ſucceſs, on the coaſt of Paraib, but the greateſt victory was on the fourth day, when the Portugueſe ſuffered exceſſively, and were at laſt driven upon the ſhoals on the coaſt, where many periſhed by ſhipwreck, and more by hunger and thirſt. Thoſe who eſcaped endeavoured to return to Spain; but great diſputes ariſing among the commanders, they ſeparated; by which means only two men of war and four galleons arrived ſafe in the ports of Spain, and even theſe with much difficulty eſcaped a Dutch fleet, that was ſteering for Braſil.

Mean while the Portugueſe being informed that count Maurice had embarked his whole ſtrength on board his fleet, fell upon the Dutch ſettlements and took ſeveral places; but a check was ſoon put to them by Hanſkins at the head of a body of planters; and ſoon after admiral Lichthart and commodore Cornelius Jol, arriving with great reinforcements from Holland, the former was immediately ſent by count Maurice into the Bay of All Saints, where he deſtroyed the country with the utmoſt barbarity, while commodore Jol acted the ſame part in the country near the river St. Lawrence.

The count de Montalvan, the Portugueſe viceroy of Braſil, immediately ſent deputies to repreſent the cruelty of this behaviour, and to deſire that the proceedings of war might be regulated, in order to prevent for the future ſuch horrid ſcenes of murder and devaſtation. As count Maurice had with reluctance given theſe orders, agreeably to the company's inſtructions, he very gladly embraced this opportunity of giving way to his own inclinations, and offered to ſend commiſſaries immediately to St. Salvador, to ſettle a provincial treaty with the viceroy: but the departure of

theſe deputies was ſtopped by the arrival of two gentlemen of diſtinction, from the count de Montalvan, who informed count Maurice of the amazing revolution that had happened in Portugal, which would probably have a great effect on the ſtate of affairs, as the war in Braſil had not hitherto been carried on by the Dutch againſt the Portugueſe nation, but againſt the Portugueſe as ſubjects of Spain.

This revolution, which was one of the moſt ſudden and ſucceſsful in the world, happened in December 1640; when John duke of Braganza, ſeated himſelf on the throne of his anceſtors, and took the title of John IV. by which means he became poſſeſſed of the whole dominions of Portugal, except the little town of Ceuta in Africa. Count Maurice ſoon receiving an exact relation of the whole affair, and foreſeeing that it would be attended either with a peace or truce, between the ſtates-general and the new king, reſolved to exert himſelf with the utmoſt expedition; he therefore made himſelf entirely maſter of the captainſhip of Segerippa, which had been recovered by the Portugueſe; reduced the iſland of Laonda on the coaſt of Congo, and that of St. Thomas, which lies directly under the equinoctial; and in purſuance of his inſtructions which repreſented the captainſhip of Maragnan as a healthy country, abounding with ſugar, cotton, tobacco, ginger, and other valuable commodities, he diſpatched admiral Lichthart and commodore Hanſkins, with ſix men of war and ſix frigates, with which they ſoon reduced the iſland of Maragnan and the town of St. Lewis, whereupon the reſt of the diſtricts ſubmitted without reſiſtance; ſo that at the end of the year 1641, the Dutch were in poſſeſſion of ſeven of the fourteen captainſhips into which Braſil was divided.

King John the IV. ſoon ſent an ambaſſador to the Hague to repreſent to the ſtates general, the reaſonableneſs of owning his title, and the advantages they ſhould mutually receive from keeping up a good correſpondence. The Dutch readily owned his title; but thinking themſelves gainers by the war, and too ſtrong for Portugal unſupported by Spain, they deferred as long as poſſible the concluſion of the treaty. However, on the 13th of June, 1641, they ſigned a league offenſive and defenſive with that crown, in relation to the dominions of both ſtates in Europe, and a truce for ten years in the Eaſt and Weſt-Indies. However, on complaints being afterwards made, that ſeveral places were taken from the Portugueſe, after the publication of the truce, they refuſed to part with ſome of theſe; and though orders were given for delivering up others, theſe orders were drawn up in ſuch a manner, that moſt of the Dutch governors refuſed to comply with them.

Upon theſe unjuſtifiable proceedings, the Portugueſe viceroy, and the reſt of that nation in Braſil, attempted to counteract the Dutch, by playing upon them their own politics. They magnified the wiſdom of the Dutch government, pretended to confide in the promiſes made them, and took in good part all the excuſes brought for their non-performance; by which means, they perſuaded count Maurice and the directors of the Weſt-India company, that the Dutch territories were effectually ſettled, and that they had nothing to fear in Braſil, either from the natives or the Portugueſe; but theſe arts would probably have proved abortive, if the directors of the Weſt-India company had not in a manner entered into the conſpiracy themſelves.

Finding that they were now poſſeſſed of what they had ſo long ſought for, they ſent repeated

orders to count Maurice to take ſuch meaſures as would increaſe their revenue, and, in particular, to ſend over vaſt quantities of ſugar, and other valuable effects; with orders not to ſuffer ſuch as were indebted to the company to pay in ſmall ſums, but to diſcharge their debts at once. Count Maurice obſerved, that the execution of theſe orders would be attended with many inconveniencies; that a long war had been carried on, and the country but lately reduced; that moſt of thoſe who were in debt to the country, were Portugueſe, who had ſettled in their territories, and had hitherto behaved well, and therefore ought to be kindly treated, and not driven to extremities: but the directors would not attend to his arguments. They knew that Braſil was very rich, and could ſee no reaſon why all that it produced ſhould not be immediately ſhipped for Holland.

Other things alſo gave them great uneaſineſs. Oppoſite to the Receif was a commodious iſland, upon which the count cauſed a new town to be built and well fortified, chiefly out of the ruins of the city of Olinda. This town, to which he gave the name of Mauriceburgh, ſoon growing to a very conſiderable place, he united it to the Receif, which was become the centre of the Dutch commerce, by a ſtone bridge.

Though all this was done for the benefit of the Dutch inhabitants, and to ſecure the company's capital from danger, yet, as it coſt 40,000l. they could not help grudging the expence. They were, however, moſt out of humour at the fine palace count Maurice built for himſelf. This magnificent edifice was erected in the moſt commodious part of the town, and in the midſt of gardens elegantly laid out, and planted with cocoas of various ſorts, citrons, lemons, pomegranates, figs and other fruit trees. The palace was ſo contrived

as to command a moſt admirable proſpect, both by ſea and land: before its front was a battery of marble, riſing gradually from the river ſide, upon which were mounted ten pieces of large cannon. Count Maurice had alſo a magnificent villa at ſome diſtance in the country, ſurrounded by fine gardens, adorned with curious fiſh-ponds, and encompaſſed with ſtrong walls; the whole being ſo diſpoſed, as to anſwer at once, the views of pleaſure, and the defence of the city, which it covered on that ſide as a fort. He alſo laid out parks and meadows, within the fortifications, which, while properly managed, produced every thing neceſſary for the ſubſiſtence of the garriſon, and were in every reſpect equally commodious and beautiful.

Thus count Maurice employed thoſe treaſures which were the fruits of his many victories and extenſive conqueſts, and which a perſon of leſs generoſity would have tranſported to Holland, as his own private fortune. But theſe marks of public ſpirit, which ought to have extinguiſhed, nouriſhed that envy which had been conceived againſt him; and while he was labouring to extend and ſecure the company's power in Braſil, the directors of that company in Holland employed themſelves in cenſuring his conduct, and in magnifying his extravagance in expending ſuch vaſt ſums, while the colony produced ſo little to the company's ſtock. They therefore formed the deſign of recalling him, as the only means of making the colony produce ſuch a revenue, as would be proportionable to the expectations of the company.

CHAPTER V.

Count Maurice of Naſſau forms a ſcheme for erecting a Dutch empire in America, equal, if not ſuperior, to that of the Spaniards. General Brewer's expedition to Chili, and its miſcarriage, occaſioned by the ill conduct of the Dutch, and the count's being recalled.

MEAN while the count, who was one of the beſt patriots, and moſt able politicians Holland ever produced, formed the ſcheme of raiſing ſuch an empire at once in America, as, had it been ſteadily purſued, would have defied the rage of all their enemies. He plainly ſaw, that the Dutch eſtabliſhment in Braſil, as fair and flouriſhing as it ſeemed, under his wiſe and glorious adminiſtration, would ſink to nothing, if not ſupported by new acquiſitions.

Being therefore informed, that the inhabitants of Chili, which lies on the back of Braſil on the South Seas, had driven out the Spaniards, he conceived the deſign of fixing a Dutch colony there, which he thought might be eaſily done, under the plauſible pretence of aſſiſting the natives againſt their late imperious lords the Spaniards.

This deſign he communicated to the ſtates-general, and ſhewed them the utility of it, by obſerving, that it would give them the poſſeſſion of a large, fertile and agreeable country, abounding with all the neceſſaries of life, and with the richeſt gold mines in the world; that it would humble the Spaniards, and open a trade to the South Seas; and laſtly, that it would firmly cement the circle

of their commerce, as the ſlaves procured by their ſettlements in Africa, would be taken off by that colony, and by Braſil.

The States approving of this propoſal, appointed captain Henry Brewer, who had ſerved with reputation in the Eaſt-Indies, to ſail with a ſquadron of five ſhips, on board of which were 1800 men. This ſquadron weighed from the Texel on the 6th of November, 1642, and arrived at Fernambuca on the coaſt of Braſil on the 22d of December following; where, having conſulted with count Maurice of Naſſau, as general and commander in chief for the Dutch, in Braſil, he ſailed from Fernambuca on the 16th of January following, and on the 5th of March came in ſight of the Streights Le Maire, where he caſt anchor in the bay of Stateſland; where having remained till the 25th, they ſailed round Cape Horn, and, after ſuffering much by ſtormy weather, and loſing the company of one of their ſhips, he arrived with the other four on the coaſt of Chili; then ſteering along the coaſt, they, on the 9th of May, came to an anchor in a bay of the South Sea, in 41° 36 ſouth latitude, to which they gave the name of Brewer's Haven.

An officer with a company of ſoldiers being ſent on ſhore, they diſcovered a great number of ſheep, oxen, and horſes, and ſome houſes; but the inhabitants were fled. They, however, ſuppoſed part of the country to be in the poſſeſſion of the Spaniards, from the large wooden croſſes they ſaw fixed at the entrance of the houſes; and the next day going on ſhore they obſerved a party of Spaniſh horſe, and ſome cannon-ſhot was fired at the boat.

On the 20th of May, a company of 50 ſoldiers being again ſent on ſhore, they diſcovered the town of Carelmappa, and had a ſmart engagement with a party of Spaniards, conſiſting of 90 men horſe and foot, whom they defeated; when, the

Spaniards abandoning the town, the Dutch took poſſeſſion of it, and remained there till the 25th, and then ſetting fire to the town, and killing the horſes they had taken in the engagement, they returned to their ſhips.

They afterwards ſteered to the town of Caſtro, on the iſland of Chilo, where arriving on the 6th of June, a conſiderable body of Spaniſh horſe and foot appeared on the coaſt; but the Dutch no ſooner landed ſome ſoldiers, than the inhabitants ſet fire to the town, and abandoned it, having before carried away every thing that was valuable.

Caſtro had been adorned with many magnificent buildings, and was pleaſantly ſituated on a hill. It was ſurrounded with fruitful orchards and gardens; the fields beyond it were well cultivated, and at this time the fruit remained on many of the trees, notwithſtanding its being winter. The Dutch took 100 ſheep and ſome hogs off the iſland and re-embarking on the 17th of June, returned to Brewer's Haven, from whence they propoſed to ſail to the river Baldivia; but the north wind blowing hard, they returned to Carelmappa, where landing a company of ſoldiers, they took three Spaniards priſoners, who informed them, that there were gold mines at Orſorno, and more at Baldivia; but that they had not been wrought of late, as the Indians had not been compelled to work in the mines ſince the general revolt in 1595.

They alſo learned from an old Spaniſh woman, they had taken, that before the above revolt, the Spaniards lived in great ſplendor at Orſorno, the meaneſt of them having at leaſt 300 vaſſals, who were compelled to pay their reſpective lords a certain weekly tribute in gold; but were uſed ſo cruelly by the Spaniards, that they aroſe as one man, and drove them from Orſorno, and other Spaniſh towns; and that the Spaniards poſſeſſed

little more in that part of Chili, than Carelmappa and St. Michael de Calembuco. Since that time the Indians of Orſorno, Baldivia, and five other towns, had, till lately, kept up a pretty good correſpondence with the Spaniards, but had ſince taken up arms againſt them.

The truth of this intelligence was confirmed by five Indians Caciques, who came on board, and aſſured the Dutch, that they were extremely glad at finding they were come to aſſiſt them againſt their ancient enemies; to which, the Dutch anſwered, that they had brought arms to exchange with the natives of Orſorno, Baldivia, and other places, for ſuch merchandizes as Chili afforded, to enable them to carry on the war againſt the Spaniards; and that they were ready to aſſiſt them to the utmoſt of their power.

To this the Chileſe replied, that they lived very uneaſy under the Spaniſh government of Carelmappa, and wanted to get to their friends at Orſorno and Baldivia: but the Spaniards had poſſeſſed all the paſſes, and the country was overflowed by the winter rains; they therefore deſired Mr. Brewer to take them to Baldivia in his ſhips. To this he readily conſented, and they returned on ſhore to give their friends an account of what had paſſed, and to make preparation for the voyage.

The next day more of the natives went on board, and one of them bringing the head of a Spaniard whom he had killed, they declared their reſolution to ſhake off the Spaniſh yoke; upon which Mr. Brewer made them a preſent of ſome ſpears, ſwords and muſkets, with powder and ball; in return for which, they ſent him ſome black cattle.

Thus far this expedition ſucceeded perfectly well; but Mr. Brewer, who alone was equal to the enterprize, dying on the 7th of Auguſt, Captain

Hackerman, who ſucceeded him in the command, behaved with ſo little addreſs, that he ſoon let the natives know the motives which had induced the Dutch to viſit their coaſt, and created jealouſies, which he afterwards found impoſſible to remove.

The late general was ſo confident of the ſucceſs of the enterprize, that he had directed his countrymen to take his corpſe with them, and bury it at Baldivia, which he had intended to fortify; and appointed the Chileſe to rendezvous there and meet the fleet, not doubting of a general revolt in their favour. His great ambition was, to have a tomb erected in that place, to perpetuate the memory of his being the author of ſo great a good to his country.

But, to proceed, the Dutch, having taken 470 Chileſe on board, who had furniſhed themſelves with corn, cattle, and other proviſions for the voyage, ſet ſail for the river Baldivia on the 21ſt of Auguſt, and arrived there on the 24th.

The Dutch having ſailed half a league up the river, obſerved three channels, and taking the middle one, had the misfortune to run a-ground, ſo that it was two or three days before they could get all their ſhips afloat. On their arrival at Baldivia, they only found the ruins of the ancient gates, which were very high and ſtrong built; but the place was overrun with weeds and buſhes. Here they found 3 or 400 Chileſe horſe and foot, armed with ſpears eighteen feet long, ſome of whom came on board to welcome them on their arrival. Mr. Hackerman then harangued them by an interpreter, and informed them that the Dutch were now in the poſſeſſion of Braſil, which lay upon the ſame continent, and were in a condition to ſupply them with arms and ammunition. He promiſed to aſſiſt them in driving their enemies the Spaniards, out of the country, and de-

fired them to enter with him into a league offenfive and defenfive. He alfo prefented them with letters from the prince of Orange, to the fame purpofe, which were interpreted to the Chilefe: for as neither the people of the Eaft or Weft-Indies had any notion of a republican form of government, the Dutch conftantly in all their negotiations with thofe diftant nations, pretended to be authorized by the prince of Orange, or fome fingle perfons, whom they infinuated was their monarch.

The Caciques replied, that they would conſult their brethren of Orſorno and Coneo, and then return to Baldivia; upon which the Dutch proceeded to land their ſoldiers, and the commander took a view of the ground, in order to erect a fort. The fame evening above 1000 Chileſe arrived from Orſorno and Coneo to treat with the Dutch; and the next day Mr. Hackerman by his interpreter, made them another ſpeech, in which he told them, that the chief motive of his voyage was to aſſiſt the Chileſe, the fame of whoſe actions had reached as far as Holland; that the Dutch had been at war with the Spaniards for upwards of fourſcore years, like them, for the recovery of their liberties, which they had at laſt obtained; and that, if the Chileſe would enter into a confederacy with them, they were ready to ſupply them with cannon, ſmall arms and ammunition, which they would exchange for the produce of the country. To this, the Caciques replied, that they were happy in meeting with a ſupply of arms, from ſo diſtant a country as Holland, and that they would conſider of what was propoſed.

The Dutch then aſked, if they could ſupply them with proviſions, upon which they readily promiſed to bring them plenty of corn and cattle. After this they entered into a verbal alliance offenſive and defenſive againſt the Spaniards; but

the Chileſe abſolutely refuſed to execute ſome written articles, that were interpreted to them, alleging, that this was not cuſtomary with them, and that they always conſidered promiſes as ſacred.

The Dutch then proceeded to build a fort at Baldivia; but when they propoſed to exchange arms with the natives for their gold, the Caciques appeared alarmed, and jealous of their new allies, declaring that they had no gold mines, and that there was no ſuch thing as gold in uſe among them; that they indeed remembered, that formerly they had been obliged to pay heavy taxes to the Spaniards in gold, on pain of loſing their ears and noſes, as many of them actually did, who could not procure as much as was expected; and this had given them ſuch an abhorrence of that metal, that they could not bear to hear it named; that they were far from valuing it, as they found all ſtrangers did, to whom it was the cauſe of many miſchiefs from which they were free.

To this the Dutch commander replied, that he was not come to exact any thing of them, as the Spaniards had done, but was ready to pay for their gold with arms, or whatever merchandize they liked beſt. At this, the Caciques immediately penetrating into his views, ſtared at each other, without returning one word of anſwer. Upon this, he did not think fit to urge them any farther, though he was ſenſible that there were very rich mines in that part of the country. He perceived that they were deeply alarmed, and filled with the ſuſpicion, that the Dutch for the ſake of their gold, would treat them in the ſame manner as the Spaniards had done. And therefore Mr. Hackerman being ſenſible that he could not now expect much aſſiſtance from the natives, and that it would be impoſſible for him to maintain his ground, he diſpatched a letter to Fernambuca, by one of his

captains, whom he ſent with two of his ſhips, ſending an account of the ſtate of his affairs, and deſiring a reinforcement. In the mean time, he continued to fortify the poſt he had taken at Baldivia, where he hoped to defend himſelf, till the arrival of theſe ſupplies.

This expreſs had not been diſpatched a week, before the Dutch commander became ſenſible of his miſtake, and that whatever miſunderſtanding there might be between the Chileſe and the Spaniards, the former were as much afraid of the Dutch, as of their ancient enemies, and would probably join with the Spaniards to expel them out of the country; for at his next conference with the Caciques they let him know, that he muſt expect no proviſions from them; and even endeavoured to terrify him, by reporting that the Spaniards were aſſembling their forces by ſea and land, to drive the Dutch from Baldivia. Soon after which he demoliſhed his new erected fortification, and having re-embarked his people, ſet ſail for Braſil on the 28th of October 1643; he doubled Cape Horn, and, after being only two months in the voyage, arrived on the 28th of December, at Fernambuca in Braſil.

In the mean time, the Dutch Weſt-India company had carried their parſimonious ſcheme into execution, and the count being as weary of their management, as they were of his, he, on the 11th of May, 1644, quitted the government, which he had held eight years, and being gone when the above fleet returned to Braſil, thoſe on board were no longer at a loſs for the reaſon of their not being ſupported in time, as with great juſtice they expected, and as the importance of the enterprize deſerved.

CHAPTER VI.

The Dutch Weſt-India company being now reſolved to proceed in the moſt frugal manner, ſtrip the country of the troops employed in its defence; and ſend new governors, who leſſen the expences of the country, and encreaſe their immediate profits; but neglect the fortifications, and oppreſs the Portugueſe under their ſubjection; upon which they take up arms for the recovery of their liberties, and, after a long war, drive out the Dutch.

THE count returned to Europe with a fleet of thirteen large ſhips, and near 3000 ſoldiers on board, and, agreeable to the inſtructions he had received, and to the new ſcheme of frugal government, he left only eighteen companies for the defence of the Dutch ſettlements.

The illuſtrious perſons who were the ſucceſſors of the great count Maurice of Naſſau, one of the ableſt, braveſt, and moſt worthy men of that family, ſo famous for producing heroes, were chiefly Mr. Hamel, a merchant of Amſterdam, Mr. de Baſis, a goldſmith of Haerlem, and Mr. Bulleſtraat, a carpenter of Middleburgh; men of good ſenſe, and great fidelity to the company; but they had narrow minds, and not the leaſt idea of the art of government. They forced the Portugueſe who lived under them, to pay what they owed the company in a ſhort time, by ſuch methods as made them loſe their hearts for ever. They ſent to Holland the produce of the very lands count Maurice had aſſigned for maintaining the fortifications, which they ſuffered to run to ruin. They granted licences upon very eaſy terms to the ſoldiers to re-

turn home; which leſſened the expence of the army, and the very next year ſent a greater quantity of ſugar to Holland, than had ever been ſent in one year before; but all theſe applauded meaſures tended ſolely to the deſtruction of the ſettlement, and to deprive the Dutch of this invaluable acquiſition.

Don Antonio Tellez de Silva, who was at this time the Portugueſe viceroy, was a man of the greateſt wiſdom and abilities, and at the ſame time had every other qualification of a good governor. This gentleman was no ſooner informed that count Maurice had carried with him two thirds of the force of Braſil, than he inſinuated to the Portugueſe ſubject to the Dutch, that they were only labouring for ſtrangers, while they might be maſters of all they now farmed at an exorbitant rent, if their king was but reſtored to his juſt rights. Theſe ſuggeſtions had great weight; but the whole affair, of recovering Braſil, was undertaken by Juan Fernandez Viera, a very extraordinary perſon, who was originally a butcher's boy, and was afterwards page to one of the magiſtrates of Olinda, while it was in the poſſeſſion of the Portugueſe. He afterwards became a kind of factor to the Dutch, had four ſugar plantations of his own, beſides being intruſted with the management of many more, and, by his induſtry and art, he grew extremely rich.

This perſon having laid the ſcheme of the conſpiracy, ſent it over to Portugal by one who was ignorant of the deſign; after which, he ſent a relation of his to court, with a letter recommending him to the king, who granted him a troop of horſe: upon which he acted there as agent for the conſpirators.

As Viera foreſaw, that this would reach the ears of the Dutch, he went directly to the council,

owned what he had done, and offered to give ſecurity for his good behaviour; when two of the richeſt Portugueſe in the Dutch territories, who were as deep in the conſpiracy as himſelf, became bound for him. For as he owed the chief perſons in the adminiſtration upwards of 200,000 florins, they thought it adviſeable not to ruin him; and by this contrivance he effectually ſecured his liberty, that he might be able to carry on his great deſign, in which he was aſſiſted by Antonio Cavalcante and Amador Aragouſa, who were equally deep in the management of the Dutch affairs, and determined, like him, to contribute all in their power to the ruin of thoſe who truſted them.

This plot was propoſed to be put in execution on the 24th of June 1645, when one of Antonio Cavalcante's daughters was to be married, and a great entertainment given at Viera's houſe, to which moſt of the officers and principal perſons in the company's ſervice were invited, where they would doubtleſs have been ſeized, if not murdered, if the deſign had not been diſcovered the very evening before it was to have been executed; but, at this inſtant a ſhip arriving from Amſterdam, brought letters from the directors of the Weſt-India company, containing an account that the miniſter from the ſtates-general at the court of Portugal, had diſcovered that a great conſpiracy was carrying on in Braſil, and that they would do well to enquire what ſupplies had been lately ſent from Liſbon to the Portugueſe in that country. This enquiry produced ſuch diſcoveries, as filled the Dutch with a conſternation that gave Viera and his aſſociates time to eſcape into the neighbouring woods, where they immediately took up arms.

Viera now aſſumed the character of general and commander in chief, and being aſſiſted by colonel Diaz with a few Portugueſe troops, and colonel

Cameron at the head of a numerous body of Braſilians, he fixed his head-quarters at Pojug, a town between the Receif and Cape St. Auguſtine; ſo that, to the misfortune of the Dutch, this unexpected war broke out in the very heart of their dominions. Antonio Cavalcante at the ſame time raiſed another part of the country; and Amador Aragouſa, at the head of a flying party, was employed in burning and deſtroying all the Dutch plantations without mercy.

The council ſeeing themſelves in this dreadful ſituation, aſſembled all the troops they were able, and publiſhed a proclamation, promiſing to pardon all who would ſubmit and return to their duty, except Viera, Cavalcante, and Aragouſa. They gave the command of a few ill-provided troops they got together, to colonel Huys, to whom they gave the title of General, and, in ſhort, ſent two captains to the Viceroy at the bay of All Saints, to complain of this infraction of the truce, which had ſtill four years to come.

The Viceroy received theſe captains with great civility, and anſwered with much prudence, that he was anſwerable for the conduct of the inhabitants of the part of Braſil ſubject to the crown of Portugal; and if they had broke the truce, he would have given the Dutch what ſatisfaction they could deſire; but if the Portugueſe ſettled in the Dutch dominions, had been induced by oppreſſion to take up arms, he could not help it, and it was very unjuſt to blame him for it.

This was the anſwer he gave in public; but in a private converſation with capt. Hoogſtrate, one of the gentlemen ſent on this negociation, he not only drew him over to his intereſt, but prevailed on him to deliver up the important poſt of St. Auguſtine, of which he was governor.

In the mean time general Huys attacking colonel Cameron, had the misfortune to be defeated with the loſs of 100 men. Soon after the Portugueſe admiral Salvador Correa de Bonavides appeared with a numerous fleet on the coaſt; upon which admiral Lichthart, though he had but five men of war, offered him battle; but this the Portugueſe commander refuſed, under the pretence of his having no orders to act againſt the Dutch, and that he was only to land a body of men in his maſter's dominions; which he had no ſooner done, than thoſe men, without ceremony, entered the Dutch territories, and made themſelves maſters of all the places that fell in their way. Upon this the council ſent orders to general Huys to make a retreat; but he ſtaying for an officer whom he had ſent to bring ſeveral ladies and rich effects out of the country, had the misfortune to be ſurrounded by the Portugueſe, who, after beating him, took him and his men priſoners.

Orders were now ſent to admiral Lichthart to attack the Portugueſe ſhips whenever he had an opportunity, and upon this occaſion, he gave a freſh proof of his courage and admirable conduct; for with four ſhips, a frigate and a bark, he attacked a Portugueſe fleet of ſeventeen ſail, took three of the largeſt ſhips, together with the admiral, burnt and ſunk almoſt all the reſt, and killed 700 men.

This ſucceſs began to revive the hopes of the council, when they received the unexpected news, that Hoogſtrate had treacherouſly delivered up the poſt of St. Auguſtine. For this baſe action he received the ſum of 18,000 florins, which he employed in raiſing a regiment of 650 Braſilians, of whom he was made colonel by the Portugueſe, and appearing at the head of this body againſt his countrymen, behaved with reſolution and fidelity in the ſervice of Portugal.

J. Seymour Sc.

Admiral Lichthart, with 4 Ships, a Frigate, & a Bark attacks the Portuguez Fleet of 17 Sail.

The great ſuperiority of the Portugueſe now enabled them to make quick diſpatch in moſt of their expeditions, and in a little time they became maſters of almoſt all the ſtrong places in the captainſhip of Fernambuca. At length, they blocked up the Receif, the only ſtrong place the Dutch had left.

When the news of theſe proceedings reached Holland, the people were extremely irritated, and though the Portugueſe ambaſſador endeavoured to perſuade the ſtates-general that his moſt faithful majeſty had no concern in what had happened at Braſil, the Dutch fitted out a fleet of fifty-two men of war, under the command of M. Blankert, admiral of Zealand, who was declared admiral of Braſil, Guinea, and Angola; and with him they ſent colonel Schuppen and colonel Henderſon, who had acquired great reputation in the ſervice of count Maurice. Thus was an open war begun between Holland and Portugal.

But hardly any fleet ever met with ſo many unfortunate accidents, and ſo many delays; for within two days after they ſailed from the Texel, they were forced to anchor in the Downs, where they loſt two ſhips in a ſtorm; they ſailed again, and were forced into the Iſle of Wight, where the firſt ſight they ſaw was the wreck of a large Dutch merchantman from Braſil, with a cargo of immenſe value, which was entirely loſt, and out of 300 perſons, only thirty ſaved: in the port of St. Helen's they remained wind-bound ſeven weeks, and at laſt met with a ſtorm, on their putting again to ſea, by which they ſuffered extremely. By theſe and many other accidents, they were ſo long delayed, that they did not arrive at the Receif till the garriſon was reduced to the utmoſt extremity, and was on the point of ſurrendering. However, by the help of theſe reinforcements, the war was ſtill continued, and ſome ſmall advantages obtained.

But in the beginning of the year 1647, the Portugueſe again blocked up the Receif, where the whole force of the Dutch conſiſted of only 1800 men, who, however, made a gallant defence; but at length ſallying out with all their ſtrength to attack the enemy in the field, they were overpowered by numbers, and entirely defeated with the loſs of 1100 ſoldiers, moſt of their officers, and all the artillery and ammunition they had carried with them. This hindered them from making any more ſallies; but at the ſame time enabled them to make a longer defence, as they had now proviſions for ſeven months, which would otherwiſe have laſted but three.

The progreſs of the Portugueſe became now ſo great, that nothing ſeemed capable of preventing the entire ruin of the Dutch affairs in that part of the world. This produced a kind of national deſpair, which haſtened the ruin that was but too plainly foreſeen. The province of Zealand recalled admiral Blankert, with whom came moſt of the officers they had ſent with him. The difficulties they had met with in their paſſage thither, were repeated on their return: ſo that the admiral died before the fleet arrived in Holland, as did ſeveral of his officers almoſt as ſoon as they came on ſhore: but the Sieur Shuk, who had been ſent by the governors of Braſil, ſurviving, gave the States ſuch an affecting account of the poſture of affairs in that country, that they reſolved to make a great effort for the preſervation of ſo valuable an acquiſition, and gave orders for fitting out a fleet of fifty large men of war, and for embarking 6000 regular troops, the command of which was given to admiral Witte-Wittezen, who was then eſteemed the ableſt officer in the Dutch ſervice, and it was alſo reſolved to ſend after him an additional ſupply of between 5 or 6000 men more. The admiral ſailed

towards the end of the year 1650, and after ſuffering much by ſtorms and tempeſts in the paſſage, at length arrived on the coaſt of Fernambuca; but inſtead of a colony, the admiral found a mere hoſpital of ſick, maimed, and infirm people: and inſtead of thoſe fortreſſes which he was to have relieved, church-yards, filled with the bodies of thoſe who had before been ſent on the ſame errand. For the Portugueſe, Braſilians, and Negroes living on the natural produce of the country, where healthy and ſtrong; while the Dutch pent up in their forts, were obliged to ſubſiſt entirely on the proviſions ſent them from Europe; by which means they grew pale, wan and feeble, and died in great numbers. The affecting ſights the admiral ſaw there, made him reſolve, notwithſtanding the orders he had received, to return home without delay; this he accordingly did, leaving things in a much worſe condition than he found them; for which he was afterwards called to an account by the States, though he ſoon juſtified himſelf to their ſatisfaction.

In ſhort, the Dutch ſtill continued to meet with ill ſucceſs, and towards the concluſion of the year 1653, the Portugueſe, who now publicly aſſiſted Viera, ſent a fleet of ſixteen large men of war to attack the Receif by ſea, and to blow up part of its fortifications: which terrified the garriſon that they abſolutely refuſed to fight. The next year, the Dutch ſurrendered every thing they poſſeſſed in Braſil, and in 1655 they returned to Holland.

It is impoſſible to conceive the uproar that this raiſed in the country, or the heat and fury with which the people demanded juſtice againſt general Sigiſmund Schuppen, who had commanded in chief for many years, and was governor of the Receif when it ſurrendered. The ſtates, to ſecure him and his officers from their reſentment, ſent

them to priſon, and granted the only favour he aſked, which was his being allowed to make a public defence. In this, he ſo clearly laid open his own long and faithful ſervices, recapitulated all the ſucceſſes they had under the adminiſtration of count Maurice, and gave ſo true and affecting a picture of the miſeries, and misfortunes he himſelf and his men had ſuffered ſince he went laſt thither, that the people wept and his judges acquitted him.

To conclude this ſubject: when count Maurice, after reſiding eight years in Braſil, quitted the government, he left them ſeven captainſhips, one city, thirty great towns, forty-five regular fortreſſes, ninety ſail of good ſhips, 3000 regular troops, 20,000 Dutch of all ages and ſexes, 60,000 negroes, and above twice as many Braſilians. At that time the colony annually yielded 25,000 cheſts of ſugar; and a carpenter, cooper, or ſmith could earn five or ſix guilders a day, and live very comfortably upon one. But the above avaricious and parſimonious management, occaſioned not only the loſs of this invaluable colony; but the expending of millions upon it, for ten years together: and after the deſtruction of ſeveral thouſands from time to time ſent thither, there returned to Holland in 1655, no more than between ſix and ſeven hundred perſons, none of whom were worth a groat.

CHAPTER VII.

A deſcription of the preſent ſtate of the ſeveral captainſhips or provinces of Braſil, and their produce; the manner of making clayed ſugar, and an account of the Braſil tree; the principal cities and towns of each province, and the diſcovery of gold and diamonds in that country.

SINCE this time the Portugueſe have remained in the quiet poſſeſſion of all this vaſt country; but ſuffer no ſhips to trade thither beſides their own. The whole trade of the five northern captainſhips, Paria, Maragnan, Siara, Rio Grande, and Paraiba, are carried on at the laſt mentioned port, which is ſituated on a river of the ſame name, at about five leagues diſtance from the ſea. Paraiba is a fine populous town, and ſeven or eight ſhips of 250 tons burden each, are annually ſent thither from Liſbon and Oporto. Their lading chiefly conſiſts of ſugar, more of which has been cultivated in the northern captainſhips than in the ſouth, eſpecially ſince the diſcovery of the gold mines, which have rendered the ſouthern inhabitants more negligent about the improvement of their lands.

The ſugar of Braſil was the firſt ſent to Europe, the Portugueſe having ſet up their works in this country about the year 1580. Their trade in this commodity ſoon became extremely great, and their being ſo long in poſſeſſion of it, has made them more careful in the management of ſugar, than any other nation; and even at this time the clayed ſugars of Braſil, are finer and whiter than ours; though the manner of preparing it is extremely eaſy.

When their ſugar is put into pots, and is ſunk two or three inches below the brim by draining out the molaſſes, they ſcrape off a thin hard cruſt that is found on the top of the ſugar, and then pour in their mixture for refining it, which is nothing more than a fine ſoft white clay, beat and mixed with water, till it is of the conſiſtence of cream; with this they fill up the pot or pan, and in ten or twelve days, the white water paſſes quite through, whitening all the ſugar, while the thick body of the clay lodges at top, and is eaſily taken off with a knife.

They alſo bring from Paraiba, notwithſtanding its being the leaſt frequented port in Braſil, dying woods, ſeveral ſorts of drugs, and other valuable commodities, and it is generally allowed that theſe northern captainſhips are the beſt peopled, and the inhabitants in very eaſy circumſtances, though no mines have yet been wrought in theſe parts.

Next to Paraiba is Tamaraca, the trade whereof is carried on at the city of Olinda, which was rebuilt by the Portugueſe, after its being demoliſhed by count Maurice. It is ſeated on the ſide of a hill near the ſea, but this ſituation renders the ſtreets very uneven and incommodious. The port is alſo narrow, and the entrance into it extremely difficult, yet ſhips continually reſort thither from the other parts of Braſil and the Canaries, as well as the annual fleet from Liſbon, which generally conſiſts of about thirty ſail, eſcorted by a man of war. Theſe ſhips are chiefly loaded here with ſugar and Braſil wood, which laſt is ſuppoſed to be the beſt of its kind in the world.

Of this wood there are different ſorts; as the Braſil of Japan, that of Lamon, that of St. Martha, and Braziletto from Jamaica and the Leeward Iſlands; but the very beſt is produced in this country, and the beſt there is at Fernambuca.

The Brafil tree generally grows in dry barren places, and among rocks; it is thick and large, and the timber is uſually crooked and knotty. It bears flowers of a moſt beautiful bright red, that have a very fragrant ſmell, which, inſtead of hurting, ſtrengthens and cheriſhes the brain. Though the tree is very large, it is covered with ſo thick a bark, that when the Braſilians have taken it off, a tree as bulky as a man's body is left no thicker than the calf of his leg. The wood is very hard, dry, and heavy; it crackles much in the fire, and ſcarce raiſes any ſmoak. That is eſteemed the beſt which is the ſoundeſt, thickeſt, and hardeſt. It ought alſo upon ſplitting to turn from a pale to a deep red, and upon chewing the chips, the beſt ſort yields a ſweet taſte, ſomewhat like ſugar. This wood is put to various uſes, by the turners, and takes a very good poliſh; but it is principally uſed in dying, in which it yields a very fine bright red.

The next captainſhip, is that called by the Portugueſe the Bay of Bahia, or the Bay of All Saints: it is about twelve leagues over, but in ſeveral places is ſcarce navigable on account of the ſand banks and ſhoals. In this bay there are ſeveral ſmall iſlands, on which the Portugueſe have a tobacco and ſugar plantations, and they have alſo very good fiſheries on the coaſt of theſe iſlands, and on the banks. At the entrance of the bay is the city of St. Salvador, which lies in 14° ſouth latitude, and is at preſent the centre of the Portugueſe trade in this part of the world. It has a very fine port, which might be rendered ſtill more commodious if art and induſtry gave a little aſſiſtance to nature.

The city of St. Salvador, which is at preſent the ſeat of an archbiſhop, is divided into the upper and lower. The upper town is ſeated on the

ſummit of a mountain. The houſes are large and pretty convenient, but the inequality of the ground on which they ſtand, renders the ſtreets very diſagreeable. In the middle of the town is the great ſquare, the four ſides of which are taken up with the viceroy's palace, the town-houſe, the mint, and other public buildings, built of ſtone brought from Portugal. The Jeſuits college is by far the largeſt and fineſt edifice in the city, particularly the Sacriſty, which is lined throughout with the moſt beautiful tortoiſe-ſhell, wrought and fixed together in the moſt elegant manner, ſo that nothing can be conceived more agreeable to the eye. There are ſeveral very fine churches, as that of the Benedictine-Abbey, which rivals that lately poſſeſſed by the Jeſuits; but the cathedral, which, at a diſtance, ſeems the nobleſt ſtructure, upon being nearly examined, appears neither neat nor regular. However, in richneſs of gilding, it ſurpaſſes all the other churches. Among the convents in this capital, is a remarkable one of the order of St. Clare, and another for ſuch young girls as are expoſed and abandoned by their parents. It is ſurprizing to ſee how theſe foundlings are conſidered in this country; the king adopts them all, and the ladies of the firſt quality frequently take them home, when at a proper age, and breed them up as their own.

The lower town, wherein all the merchants and people of buſineſs reſide, is ſituated at the foot of the hill, which is exceſſively ſteep, though not very high, and is a place of the greateſt hurry and trade. There are here a royal arſenal, the king's warehouſes and magazines, which are large, well filled, and kept in excellent order. There is alſo a fine yard for building of ſhips, which is of conſiderable advantage. Theſe ſhips are not only built at an eaſier rate, but are more ſerviceable

than others, the timber being excellent in its kind, from its having the peculiar advantage of the worms being unable to penetrate it.

With reſpect to the fortifications of the city, there is a large ſquare fort, and below it a ſmaller, with ten large pieces of cannon. Theſe two fortreſſes command the mouth of the bay. They have a new fort called St. Peter's Caſtle, which is alſo very ſtrong; and in the middle of the harbour is a large fortreſs. At the point of Montſerat they have a ſmall but ſtrong fort, with twelve pieces of heavy cannon. Between Montſerat and the city is a fine citadel, which is a regular ſquare admirably fortified, and well furniſhed with braſs cannon, and the arſenal is flanked by two ſtrong baſtions that command the whole fort. There are yet two other fortreſſes to be mentioned; one between St. Antonio and the city, where they make their gun-powder; and the other the powder-houſe, which lies on the other ſide of the city, and commands a large artificial lake, made by the Dutch, by which the city of St. Salvador is covered on one ſide, as it is by the ſea on the other.

The fleet ſent annually hither from Liſbon, conſiſts of about thirty ſhips, eſcorted by two men of war, which uſually ſail about March, and in this bay the whole Braſil fleet generally aſſemble, in order to return together to Europe. From this port they bring home gold, amethyſts, diamonds, and the beſt tobacco in Braſil, which is much eſteemed; indigo, ſugar, balſam of capivi, ipecacuanha, pereira brava, cinnamon, long pepper, ginger, woods for dying, and ſome for inlaying, ambergris, and other rich drugs and perfumes. They alſo export raw hides, train oil, and whale-fins.

All the reſt of the captainſhips lie farther to the ſouth, and carry on their trade by the Rio Janeiro,

ſo called from its being diſcovered in January 1550, and is at preſent one of the moſt conſiderable rivers in the world. Its banks are as beautiful as can be imagined, the climate is fine, and the ſoil is extremely fertile, producing ſugar, indigo, tobacco and cotton, in very great perfection, and European corn has been found to grow there with very little trouble. But this, and all other improvements have been diſcouraged on account of the gold mines that have been diſcovered in this and the neighbouring captainſhips of St. Vincent; though independently of theſe mines, this may be conſidered as the richeſt part of Braſil. The Portugueſe ſettled here are very different in their manners from thoſe in the bay of All Saints, for they are active and induſtrious, and ſuffer the Indians who live among them to enjoy as much freedom as themſelves.

The city of St. Sebaſtian, the capital of this country, is very commodiouſly ſituated on the weſt ſide of the river about two leagues from the ſea, and in the 23° ſouth latitude. This city, which is very well fortified, is the ſeat of a Portugueſe governor, and is a biſhop's ſee, ſuffragan to the archbiſhop of St. Salvador.

There are alſo ſeveral other conſiderable towns on the Rio Janeiro, all of which carry on a conſiderable trade, as appears from the number of ſhips annually ſent thither from Portugal. Theſe conſiſt of between twenty and thirty veſſels of 500 tons each, uſually eſcorted by two men of war. The commodities brought from thence are generally the ſame as thoſe exported from St. Salvador; beſides theſe, gold and diamonds are found in this province.

With reſpect to the gold and diamonds of Braſil, minerals, which mankind hold in the greateſt eſteem, and exert their utmoſt art and induſtry in

acquiring; the former was firſt found in the mountains near the city of Rio Janeiro. The manner, however, in which this diſcovery was made, is differently related; but the moſt common account is, that the Indians on the back of the Portugueſe ſettlements were obſerved to make uſe of this metal for their fiſh-hooks; and enquiry being made of their manner of procuring it, it appeared that conſiderable quantities of it were annually waſhed from the mountains, and left among the gravel and ſand that remained in the valleys, after the running off, or evaporation of the water.

This diſcovery being made, conſiderable quantities of gold were imported from Braſil to Europe, and the annual imports have been continually augmented by the diſcovery of places in other provinces, where it is to be found in as great plenty as at firſt about Rio Janeiro; and it is even ſaid, that a ſlender vein of this metal runs through the whole country at about twenty-four feet from the ſurface, but is too thin and poor to anſwer the expence of digging. However, gold is always to be collected when the rivers or rains have had any courſe for a conſiderable time, and therefore the being able to divert a ſtream from its channel, is eſteemed an infallible ſource of gain.

The employment of ſearching the bottoms of rivers and torrents, and waſhing the gold from the dirt and ſand, is principally performed by ſlaves, who are chiefly negroes, of whom the Portugueſe have great numbers kept for that purpoſe. By a very ſingular regulation, each of theſe ſlaves are obliged to furniſh their maſter every day with the eighth part of an ounce of gold; and if by their induſtry or good fortune, they collect a larger quantity, the ſurplus is conſidered as their own property, and they are allowed to diſpoſe of it as they think fit; by which means ſome negroes, who

have fallen upon rich waſhing places, have, it is ſaid, purchaſed ſlaves of their own, and lived in great ſplendor. Their original maſter having no other demand upon them than the daily ſupply of an eighth of an ounce, which amounts to about nine ſhillings ſterling; the Portugueſe ounce being ſomewhat lighter than our troy ounce.

The annual return of gold to Liſbon may be computed from the amount of the king's fifth, which, one year with another, is eſtimated at 150 arroves of thirty-two pounds Portugueſe weight each, which at 4l. the troy ounce, is near 300,000l. ſterling; and therefore the capital, whereof this is the fifth, is about a million and a half ſterling. To which if we add the gold exchanged with the Spaniards for ſilver, and what is privately brought to Europe, without paying the duty, which may amount to half a million more, the annual produce of the Braſilian gold muſt be about two millions ſterling. An immenſe ſum to be found in a country that a few years ago was not known to produce a ſingle grain.

It is but about thirty years ſince the firſt diamonds were brought from this country into Europe. Theſe valuable ſtones are, like the gold, found in the beds of rivers and torrents; but not ſo univerſally. They were frequently perceived in waſhing the gold, before they were known to be of any value, and were conſequently thrown away with the ſand and gravel; and numbers of large ſtones, that would have enriched the poſſeſſors, have paſſed unregarded through the hands of ſeveral perſons now living. However, at length a perſon acquainted with the appearance of rough diamonds, imagined that theſe pebbles were of the ſame kind; but it was difficult to perſuade the inhabitants that what they had been ſo long accuſtomed to deſpiſe could be of ſuch immenſe value

and in this interval, it is ſaid that a governor procured a conſiderable number of theſe ſtones, under the pretence of uſing them as counters to play at cards. But the moſt ſkilful jewellers in Europe being conſulted, they declared that theſe ſtones were true diamonds, and that many of them were not inferior, either in luſtre or any other quality, to thoſe of the Eaſt-Indies. Upon this, many of the Portugueſe in the neighbourhood of the places where they had been firſt obſerved, began to ſearch for them with great aſſiduity, and as large rocks of chryſtal were found in ſeveral of the mountains, where the ſtream flowed which waſhed down the diamonds, they flattered themſelves with the hopes of diſcovering diamonds of a prodigious bulk But the king of Portugal being told that this would debaſe their value, ruin the Europeans who had in their poſſeſſion a great quantity of Indian diamonds, and render the diſcovery of no importance, his majeſty thought proper to reſtrain the ſearch after them; for which purpoſe he erected a diamond company with an excluſive charter, which, in conſideration of a ſum annually paid to the king, has the property of all the diamonds found in Braſil; but to prevent their reducing their value by collecting too large quantities of them, they are not allowed to employ above 800 ſlaves in ſearching for theſe jewels. To prevent interlopers in this trade, a large town in the neighbourhood of the place where the diamonds are found, and a conſiderable diſtrict round it, have been depopulated, and the inhabitants removed to another part of the country.

Southward from the captainſhip of Rio Janeiro lies the captainſhip of St. Vincent, which is ſuppoſed to be the richeſt country in Braſil, and perhaps in all South-America. It is bounded on the north by the captainſhip of Rio Janeiro; on the

eaſt by the ocean; on the ſouth by the new captainſhip, or that ſtyled Del Rey; and on the weſt by the mountain of La Plata, and the countries inhabited by various ſavage nations, extending from 22° to 27° ſouth latitude. It is in length from north to ſouth, about 300 miles, and in breadth from eaſt to weſt, in ſome places, near 180; though, for the greateſt part, it is not above half that breadth.

The town of St. Vincent is ſituated in a very fine bay of the Atlantic ocean, and is well fortified. A little to the north-weſt lies the town of Santos, which ſome conſider as the capital of the province, and it has as fine a port as any in the Weſt Indies, it being capable of holding the largeſt ſhips, and of being fortified in ſuch a manner as to reſiſt any force that could be brought againſt it.

The only captainſhip to the ſouthward of St. Vincent, is Del Rey, which extends from 28 to 34° 30 ſouth latitude, and is about 400 miles in length, but not above 100 broad in any part of it. Though this country is pleaſant and fertile, it was entirely neglected by the Portugueſe, till the diſcovery of the mines of St. Vincent put them upon planting it, and erecting ſeveral forts on the north ſide of the river La Plata. But though this country is as capable of improvement as any in Braſil, yet, as it has not been inhabited ſo long as the other captainſhips, it is far from being thoroughly peopled, and there are only a few villages upon the ſea-coaſt, and ſome fortreſſes on the river La Plata.

The chief advantage drawn from this province by the Portugueſe, is a kind of ſmuggling trade carried on with the Spaniards, whom they furniſh with rum and tobacco of their own growth, and with cloths, ſilks, linen, and brandy from Europe.

CHAPTER VIII.

An account of a people in Brafil called Paulifts, with a defcription of the manners of the inhabitants in general.

THE important difcoveries mentioned in the laft chapter, occafioned new laws, new governments, and new regulations to be eftablifhed in many parts of the country; which renders it neceffary for us here to go back a little, in order to take notice of a fet of people named Paulifts, who had erected themfelves into an independent ftate, and whom it foon became proper to reduce.

It being fuggefted to the Portugueſe miniftry, about the year 1685, that the climate at the bay of All Saints would fruftrate whatever endeavours might be ufed to render the people active and induftrious, and that a fettlement at the northern and fouthern extremities of Brafil would render the country of much greater advantage to the crown of Portugal, than it had hitherto been; this occafioned, on the one hand, the eftablifhment of forts and fettlements towards the river of the Amazons, and on the other, the improvement of a new colony at Santos, which was then but fmall.

Moft of the perfons made choice of for this purpofe, were Meftizes, the offspring of fuch of the Portugueſe as had married Brafilian women; and the perfons entrufted with the government of thefe new planters, were prieſts and monks; but they were fent expreſsly from Portugal, and care was taken that they fhould be fit for the purpofe. The

captain-general of Brafil, and all the officers in the ſouthern captainſhips, had orders to treat theſe people kindly, and to give them no diſturbance.

It ſoon appeared that this plan was wiſely concerted; for the people multiplied prodigiouſly, and ſoon became in very eaſy circumſtances. This drew a number of adventurers thither, among whom were Spaniards as well as Portugueſe, free negroes, mulattoes, and all the different mixtures that are to be met with in Brafil down to the Carabocas, who are the offspring of Brafilian ſavages by negro women; there were alſo monks as well as laymen, ſoldiers, mechanics, broken planters, and, in ſhort, all thoſe ſort of men who are ready to go any where, or to do any thing to get a living.

As theſe were a very different ſort of men from thoſe of the new colony, it was impoſſible for them to dwell together; for the former were the quieteſt and moſt ſimple, and the latter the moſt turbulent people in the world. Theſe adventurers therefore looked out for a new ſettlement, and at a ſmall diſtance found one of the propereſt places upon earth for their reception. This was the thick and vaſt foreſt of Parnabaccaba, which overſpread all the mountains at the back of this captainſhip, and in this foreſt none but wild beaſts had hitherto taken up their dwelling They ſoon cleared a part of this wilderneſs for their habitation, wherein they eſtabliſhed not only a new town, which they named San Paulo, but a new republic, in which they lived after the manner they liked beſt.

This was at firſt overlooked; for the country was judged of no great value, and the adjacent captainſhips were pleaſed at getting rid of thoſe who reſorted thither. However, in the ſpace of a very few years they were too ſtrong to be dealt with; for receiving all ſorts of people, they quickly increaſed from two or three hundred to as many

thouſaud men, and being a bold, hardy, enterpriſing and daring people, the governors knew not how to deal with them. In the firſt place, they took care to fortify the avenues to their territory, which were naturally ſtrong; and they ſeldom ventured abroad, but in bodies of fourſcore or a hundred men; and in ſuch parties they frequently traverſed the whole extent of Braſil.

This new and extraordinary commonwealth, were denominated Pauliſts, from the city where they lived; they barely acknowledged the ſovereignty of the crown of Portugal, without ſubmitting to its juriſdiction; and as the tyranny of the governors of Braſil, and the oppreſſion of the Spaniſh governors in the adjacent provinces furniſhed this new ſtate with abundance of members, it at laſt became very difficult to gain admittance among them.

They obliged ſuch as preſented themſelves upon their frontiers, which they were not allowed to enter, to ſubmit to a very ſtrict examination, that they might know whether they were fit for their community, and not ſpies, or perſons who intended to betray them; upon the bare ſuſpicion of which they made no ſcruple of beating out their brains; but if upon this examination, they judged they might prove uſeful members, they obliged them to bring in two ſlaves for their ſupport; aſſigning them a dwelling and plantation, by which they commenced Pauliſts, and were to continue ſo to the end of their lives, for any attempt to deſert was puniſhed with death without mercy. They made no exception of country or complexion; a ſavage was as welcome to them as an European, and every man after his admiſſion, was at liberty to lead what kind of life he liked beſt, provided he did not diſturb the peace of ſociety.

Theſe people rejecting and deſpiſing the mandates of the court of Portugal, were often engaged in a ſtate of hoſtility with the Portugueſe; but, the mountains ſurrounding their country, and the difficulty of clearing the few paſſages, that opened into it, generally put it in their power to make their own terms; but as gold was found to abound in this province, the laſt king of Portugal, (during whoſe reign the diſcoveries of Braſilian gold and diamonds were begun and completed) thought it incumbent on him to reduce this province, which now became of great conſequence, to the ſame ſubjection and obedience with the reſt of the country; which he was at laſt ſo happy as to effect, and the city of St. Paul is now conſidered as the centre of the Portugueſe mines.

Having thus run through the ſeveral captainſhips, and mentioned the produce and commodities of each, it will not be improper to take ſome notice of the government and the people in general.

The viceroy has two councils in which he preſides, one of criminal and the other of civil affairs; but juſtice goes on very ſlowly, and there is not perhaps a country upon earth where ſo much paper is blotted by the lawyers, before any final judgment is obtained.

There is perhaps no part of the world, China and Japan excepted, where there is ſo much trouble in getting on ſhore, or ſo much difficulty in knowing how to act when a perſon is landed. The difficulties commodore Anſon met with in this reſpect, will be mentioned in the account we ſhall hereafter lay before our readers of his voyage round the world. To give a juſt idea of the manner of their proceeding, it will not be unentertaining if we here preſent a ſhort abſtract from an account of a voyage to Braſil, by a French gentleman, publiſhed in the year 1717.

When they came within a league of the city of St. Salvador, they were reſtrained from proceeding any farther by a gun fired from a little fort: upon which they came to an anchor, and ſent their ſupercargo aſhore in the boat. He was a very ſenſible man, and had withal a great deal of gravity, a quality of all others the moſt neceſſary, for one who has any buſineſs to tranſact with the Portugueſe.

As ſoon as he landed, he was conducted to an audience of the Viceroy, who received him with great ſtate, and yet ſhewed him as much civility as he could expect. He told his Excellency, that he came on behalf of three French ſhips homeward bound from the Eaſt-Indies, that were greatly diſtreſſed, and had no hopes of performing their voyage without his protection and relief. The Viceroy, after continuing for ſome moments ſilent, replied, he was very ſorry for their misfortune, becauſe his maſter's orders were very preciſe againſt admitting any foreign veſſels into the port, and that the King had given him directions to ſeize and confiſcate without diſtinction, whatever foreign ſhips entered their harbour, unleſs it plainly appeared, that they were unable to keep the ſea; but that he would allow them twenty-four hours to conſider, whether they would come and anchor under the guns of the fort, in order to be examined, or put to ſea without receiving any relief at all; adding, that if the caſe was as he repreſented it, care ſhould be taken to aſſiſt and ſupply him: but that the French would do well to remember that the Portugueſe were not to be impoſed upon.

As the ſhips were really in a very bad condition; they had no reaſon to fear any examinations, they therefore on the return of the ſupercargo came to an anchor under the fort, and the next day the

Judge came on board, attended by ſeveral ſecretaries and other officers, all of them people of great gravity, who examined every thing with all the nicety and ſtrictneſs of an inquiſition. They called for their journals, queſtioned their pilots, mariners, and even cabbinboys, whether they had not formed the deſign of touching at Braſil before they were in ſuch diſtreſs. They all anſwered in the negative; but ſtill they had ſo little hopes, that every one in the ſhip who had it in his power, made them ſome preſent or other, which they received indeed, but ſcarce gave them thanks. At laſt, however, they took their leave, and ſent ſome carpenters on board, to whom the Captains made ſuch application, that they reported that the leaks were ſo dangerous, that the crews were afraid of ſinking before they could get out of the ſhips.

This report was no ſooner made, than they had leave to go on ſhore, and take lodgings where they thought fit in the city; but with ſtrict caution not to attempt any kind of trade on pain of forfeiting both the ſhips and cargoes. The officers put on board, at firſt talking the ſame language, but ſeeing the impreſſion it made, and that the French continued very exact in that particular, they on the third day told them, that this was all a farce; that the Judges themſelves conſidered it in that light, and that as they underſtood by their preſents that they were a good ſort of people, every night boats would come off with all ſorts of merchandize, and that they would take care the French ſhould run no riſk either in buying or ſelling. The boats came accordingly, and though the French were at firſt a little ſuſpicious, yet in a week's time, they and the Portugueſe perfectly underſtood each other, and trade went on briſkly every night, as ſoon as it was dark.

The French now imagined, that they ſhould find no difficulty in procuring carpenters, and other workmen, if they paid them good wages; but they were miſtaken; for none of the people durſt take their mony till they had leave; which was not to be obtained, but by dint of preſents; theſe however being properly beſtowed, the carpenters came on board and began to work: for it is literally true, that in Braſil, money will do every thing, and that nothing is to be done there without it. They ſtaid there four months, and found few honeſt men except the Viceroy.

But to proceed: the inhabitants may be divided into three ſorts; planters, factors, and mariners. The former purchaſe as many ſlaves as they can employ in their ſugar and tobacco works, &c. and when the Liſbon fleet comes, ſend away their commodities, and receive an equivalent in European goods and manufactures, by the next year's fleet. The factors keep magazines of all ſorts of goods that come from Portugal, with which they purchaſe ſugar, tobacco, and gold, of ſuch planters as want an immediate ſupply of European goods, and cannot wait for the next year's fleet. As for the mariners, their chief buſineſs conſiſts in their making frequent trips to Guinea to purchaſe ſlaves. This trade is very conſiderable. Thoſe from the Bay of All Saints uſually bring over about 20,000 Negroes every year, and there is ſcarce a Portugueſe here, who has not at leaſt a dozen black ſlaves in his ſervice. The people are fond of ſhew and magnificence, of rich clothes, jewels, and a large train of ſervants, and to enjoy theſe, are very ſparing in the expences of their tables. They have however ſome feaſts; but theſe bring after them a long train of faſts: for every man has his guardian ſaint, upon whoſe anniverſary, he ſpends beſt part of his annual revenue; and ſeldom has

a good dinner afterwards, except at his neighbour's upon the like occaſion.

The inland Braſilians of both ſexes ſtill go entirely naked; but near the ſhore they put on different ſorts of coverings, ſome wearing only ſhirts of linen or calico, and others dreſs after the European manner. The wives always follow their huſbands to war; but while the man carries nothing but his arms, the woman ſupplies the place of ſumpter horſe, and is loaded with ſuch proviſions as are thought neceſſary, with a child or children, and a hammock, which at night they hang on trees, or faſten to poles, making a defence from the rain with palm-tree leaves. Theſe hammocks are the chief part of their furniture, and are made of cotton, and formed like net-work, ſix or ſeven feet long and four broad: but the Tapoyers make theirs twelve or fourteen feet long, ſo as to contain four and ſometimes ſix perſons; their cans, cups or mugs, are made of callabaſhes, ſome of which hold thirty quarts. The poorer ſort uſe knives of ſtone, while the others purchaſe theirs of the Europeans.

When at home, the huſband generally goes abroad in the morning with his bow and arrows, to kill birds or beaſts, or goes to fiſh, while the wife either employs her time in working at a plantation, or attends the huſband to bring home his game.

The Braſilian women are extremely fruitful, and have ſuch eaſy labours, that a woman immediately after her delivery, goes to the next river, where ſhe purifies herſelf by bathing; and there are ſome writers who ridiculouſly pretend, that the huſband goes to bed, and for the firſt twenty-four hours is nurſed with all the care and ceremony uſed with reſpect to a lying-in woman among Europeans. When a woman has conceived, ſhe

abſtains from her huſband till after her delivery; nor is it uſual for her to cohabit with him while ſhe gives ſuck. The mothers lament the death of their children with loud lamentations for three or four days; and when friends have been long parted, they meet with open arms, tears, and all poſſible marks of affection.

They reckon up their age by laying by a cheſnut for every year, beginning the computation of their years with the riſing of a ſtar called Taku, or the rain ſtar. Royalty is diſtinguiſhed by the hair being cut in a particular form, and by the length of the thumb nails, which latter is an ornament entirely appropriated to the kings; but Nieuhoff obſerves, that the princes of the blood are allowed long nails on their fingers; but not on their thumbs.

The inland Braſilians have ſome knowledge of a Supreme Being, whom they call Tuba, which ſignifies ſomewhat moſt excellent; and the thunder they ſtyle Tubakununga, which may be interpreted, a noiſe made by the Supreme Excellency. They have a confuſed knowledge of the general deluge, and believe that the whole race of mankind were extirpated by it, except one man and his ſiſter; which latter was pregnant before it happened, and that theſe by degrees repeopled the world. With reſpect to a ſtate of future exiſtence, they believe that the ſoul does not die with the body, but is tranſlated to ſome pleaſant vales beyond the mountains, where they are to enjoy great pleaſures, and ſpend their time in dancing and ſinging. Theſe are thoſe who have diſtinguiſhed themſelves by performing great actions in defence of their country, &c. but ſuch as have been idle, are ſuppoſed to be tortured by evil ſpirits, whom they call by different names, and of whom they are exceſſively afraid; and though they pay them no religious worſhip, yet they ſometimes endea-

vour to appeaſe their wrath, by certain preſents faſtened to ſtakes, which they ſet in the ground. They have prieſts among them, who are uſed as prophetic inſtructors, and are carefully conſulted in all material tranſactions, eſpecially thoſe of war: and there are people among the Braſilians called Potiguaras, accounted ſo well ſkilled in ſorcery, as to be able to kill their enemies by their enchantments.

CHAPTER IX.

An account of the vegetables, beaſts, birds, and reptiles, found in Braſil.

IN deſcribing the produce of this country, we ſhall begin with the vegetables, and firſt mention the mandioca root, to which the Braſilians are indebted for a great part of their ſubſiſtence; for being dried, powdered, and afterwards baked in the manner of bread, it ſerves for the common food of the inhabitants of a great part of America. This root ſomewhat reſembles a parſnip, and is about two or three feet in length, and of the thickneſs of a man's arm.—It has one peculiar quality, which is, that eaten freſh, it proves a mortal poiſon to the human ſpecies; but roaſted it is not attended with the leaſt ill conſequence; and though all kinds of beaſts will eat and grow fat upon it, yet its juice proves pernicious to them as well as to man.

The nara is alſo very remarkable; it reſembles the ſempervivum; but its leaves are not ſo thick,

and are full of prickles. In the middle grows a fruit like a pine-apple, which in taſte reſembles a melon, but is much more delicious, and has a very fragrant ſmell. The juice is eſteemed good for the ſtone. This fruit is ſo very plentiful, that the Indians fatten their hogs with it; and, except ſome ſmall quantities that are uſed for ſweetmeats, they have no other way for the common ſpending of them, but carrying them to ſea, where thoſe who are ſea-ſick receive great benefit from them.

The pacoba, alſo called Adam's fig-tree, is very large; the ſtalks are ſoft and ſpungy, and the leaves very long, ſmooth, and ſoft like velvet; theſe are ſo cool and refreſhing, that people ſick of fevers have them applied to their bodies to abate the violent heat of the diſtemper, and give them eaſe. The fruit grows in cluſters like figs at every foot diſtance upon the main ſtalk, and one cluſter frequently contains two hundred. The fruit being gathered, and laid to ripen, becomes yellow; it then acquires a pleaſant taſte, and is not only grateful to the palate, but eſteemed medicinal, particularly in fevers and ſpitting of blood.

The pocaire is a ſhrub ten or twelve feet high, and has a ſtem much thicker than a man's thigh, and yet ſo tender, that it may be cut aſunder with a ſword at one ſtroke. The leaves reſemble thoſe of water-ſorrel; they are generally ſix feet long, and very broad, but are extremely thin, and have only one ſtrong middle rib to hold them together; on which account they are ſo torn by the winds blowing them about, that they hang in rags, and theſe ſhrubs at a diſtance appear as if ſtuck with feathers. The fruit, which has the name of Poco, is as long as a man's hands, and both in colour and ſhape, are like a cucumber. In taſte they reſemble a fig, though they are much more delicate.

There are here alſo great plenty of ananas, or pine-apples, which when ripe, are here of a gold colour, and diſcover themſelves to thoſe that walk in the woods, or the places where they grow, by their fine ſcent. In taſte they excel our richeſt preſerved fruits; and the liquor drawn from them, is not inferior to Malmſey wine.

Some authors mention a tree, which, if their accounts be true, is one of the moſt extraordinary in the world; it has very broad ſpreading branches, and grows wild in the woods. The thick branches of theſe trees have large holes, ſometimes as long as a man's arm, full of a clear well-taſted water, which when emptied fill again, and in this ſtate continue winter and ſummer; ſo that a whole troop of weary travellers may refreſh themſelves under one of theſe trees; repoſe in the cool ſhade, and at the ſame time quench their thirſt. The want of water being commonly one of the greateſt inconveniencies that can be ſuffered by thoſe who travel the inland parts of the country, it ſeems as if Providence had kindly provided this remedy, by diſpoſing it up and down in ſuch quantities, and in a manner not expoſed to the uncertainties that attend ſprings and rivulets.

The country produces various ſorts of palm-trees, and other fruits, and alſo mulberries and dewberries; woods of various colours, and ſome which produce very fragrant ſcents; in particular the maſtic, which, with the reſt of the odoriferous plants and ſhrubs, perfume the woods in the moſt agreeable manner.

The timbo, is a plant that ſprings up like a ſtring, and riſes up to the top of the higheſt mulberry-trees, to which it ſometimes grows cloſe like ivy. They are exceeding ſtrong and tough, and even thoſe as big as a man's leg, may be wound and twiſted about without breaking. But the bark

is an infallible poiſon to the fiſh, and being thrown into the water, leaves hardly any of them alive.

The bombaſine cotton ſhrubs, are found in great numbers in this country: they grow to an indifferent height, and the fruit when ripe, divides itſelf into four parts, each of which yields the cotton in flocks of the bigneſs of a little ball; and in the midſt of theſe flocks are black ſeeds, cloſely preſſed together.

The mangaba-tree is an evergreen, and bears fruit twice a year: its flowers are like thoſe of the jeſſamine, and ſmells as well: the fruit, which is as big as an apricot, is yellow, ſpotted with black, and has ſeveral kernels within; theſe are eaten as well as the fruit itſelf, and are wholeſome, well-taſted, and lie exceeding light on the ſtomach.

The araça is a ſort of ſmall pear, or at leaſt it more nearly reſembles that than any other fruit: it is of a red, yellow, or green colour; for there are of all theſe kinds in Braſil, and they are extremely beautiful. This fruit is very pleaſant, and is admired by thoſe who love but a ſmall taſte of the ſour.

The tree jabaticaba, is remarkable for its being entirely beſet with fruit, from the very root to the topmoſt bough. This fruit is of the ſize of a large lemon, it has a ſour taſte, and the Indians make a good wine of it.

The cabueriba is a very large tree, and affords excellent timber for ſtrength and ſervice; but what renders it moſt valuable is the balm it affords, which, like that of Gilead, heals all green wounds. This is obtained by making an inciſion in the bark, through which the balm diſtils into a veſſel ſet to receive it. Both the balm and the tree itſelf have a very fragrant ſmell.

The cupayba is a ſtraight and tall tree, remarkable for its yielding when cut, a great deal of oil,

which ſerves both for lamps and the curing of wounds.

This country alſo produces many other trees and ſhrubs different from thoſe of Europe, and among the reſt, of the Brafil-tree, of which we have given a deſcription in a former chapter.

As to the beaſts, the tapirouſſon ſomewhat reſembles a cow in its ſhape and ſize, though in other reſpects it differs very much from it; it has long ſhaggy hair of a reddiſh colour, no horns, a very ſhort neck and tail, long hanging ears, ſlender legs, and a whole hoof: but though it has very ſharp teeth, it never makes uſe of them againſt man or beaſt. The natives ſometimes catch them in traps, and at others pierce them with arrows, not ſo much for the ſake of the fleſh, (though that is good, and not much unlike beef) as for the hide, which when dry, is in a manner impenetrable.

The cuati is as grey as a badger, to which it has ſome reſemblance. Its claws and ſnout are very long, and by the help of the former it climbs the trees like a monkey. Theſe animals are ſo ravenous that there is no creature which is not an overmatch for them, that eſcapes being devoured by them; though they chiefly live upon ſnakes, birds, and their eggs.

The biarataca is like a ferret, but conſiderably larger, and has a remarkable croſs of white and grey along the back; this creature alſo makes great havock among the birds and their eggs; but though it has neither ſharp teeth nor long claws, yet it is as able to preſerve itſelf from its purſuer, as any other beaſt of prey; for nature has given it the power of making ſuch an intolerable ſtink upon theſe occaſions, that both the men and dogs are almoſt poiſoned with it, and obliged to put an end to the chaſe.

The apes and monkeys are very numerous in this country, and are of ſeveral colours. Theſe are eſteemed pretty good food.

The wild boars are of ſeveral ſorts, as are alſo the leopards, tygers, and ounces: ſome of theſe laſt are black, others grey, and others ſpotted. No beaſt can be more furious. The boars will purſue a man to a tree, and ſtay for him there; but the ounces will mount the trees and get up after him. There is nothing they meet can be ſecure from their rage. They will aſſault whole troops of other animals at once, and break into the herds of ſwine, deſtroy the hen-houſes, and leave waſte and deſolation wherever they come. The killing one of them is reckoned a very glorious action among the Indians, and he that is ſo happy, has the honour of being eſteemed and reſpected ever after as a hero.

One of the moſt extraordinary animals found in Braſil is the porcupine, called by the Braſilians Kuandu. It is about the ſize of an ape; but inſtead of hair is covered with ſpikes of three or four fingers length, which this animal, when exaſperated, darts forth, as the common porcupine does its quills, and that with ſuch violence as to wound, and frequently to kill a man. Its eyes are round, ſtaring, and as red as carbuncles; it has long whiſkers like a cat, and its feet reſemble thoſe of an ape, only it has but four fingers, the place for the thumb being vacant. This creature uſually ſleeps by day, and goes in ſearch of prey by night. It is extremely fond of fowl, and climbs up trees, though ſlowly, in order to devour them. The fleſh of this animal has no diſagreeable taſte, and is eaten roaſted by the inhabitants.

The armadilla, or ſhield-hog, reſembles our hogs in ſize and ſhape, but is covered with ſcales like a ſhield, which on the back has ſeven parti-

tions, and between each of theſe appears a dark brown ſkin. The head is very like that of other hogs, and has a ſharp noſe with which it grubs up the earth: its eyes are ſmall, and lie deep in the head: it has a ſmall ſharp tongue, and ſhort ears coloured of a dark brown, without hair or ſcales. This animal lives upon roots and all kinds of carrion, drinks a great deal, and is very fat. It is fond of marſhy places, but makes holes in which it ſhelters itſelf under ground. Its fleſh is much admired.

The Braſilian ſluggard, ſo called from the ſlowneſs of his motion, it not being able to proceed a ſtone's throw in many days, is about the ſize of a fox. Its head is round, and its mouth, which bears a conſtant foam, is little and round: its teeth are ſmall and blunt: its noſe is black, high and ſmooth; its eyes are ſmall, black and heavy, and its body is covered with aſh-coloured hair. It dwells upon trees, and lives upon their leaves, without ever taſting any drink; and is ſo much afraid of rain, that upon its approach, it hides itſelf. Though the limbs of this animal are extremely weak, and ſeem in a manner disjointed, yet it will take ſuch hold as is not eaſily unlooſed.

The tamandua, or ant-bear, thus named from its food, is of two ſorts, the great and the ſmall. The former, which is about the bigneſs of a middle ſized hog, has a round head, a long ſnout and no teeth. This animal catches ants by laying out its tongue, which Nieuhoff ſays, is twenty-five and ſometimes thirty inches long, upon a dunghill, till his prey ſettle upon it, which they have no ſooner done, than he draws them into his mouth, and ſwallows them.

The ſmall one is about the ſize of a fox; on the four feet it has four crooked claws; and two broad black liſts run along its back. It is a very fierce

creature: it graſps at every thing with its paw, and upon being ſtruck with a ſtick, it will ſit upright, and take hold of it with its mouth. It ſleeps all day, and at night goes in ſearch of its prey: but when it drinks ſome of the water ſpouts through its noſtrils.

The Senembi, or land crocodile, is very common in Braſil; but it ſeldom exceeds five feet in length. There are ſaid to be certain ſtones in its head, which being given by two drams at a time, prove an infallible remedy for the gravel. It can live two or three months without food and afford fleſh as white and as good as a rabbit.

Parrots are ſome of the moſt common birds of the country, for they fly together in large flocks and are killed by thouſands; notwithſtanding which, they are ſo numerous that thoſe killed are not to be miſſed: there are various ſorts of them, and all of them will talk with very little teaching except one ſpecies. Their colours are very beautiful and ſhining, and in many of them are moſt admirably mixed. The breaſt of ſome is as red as ſcarlet, and their bodies either yellow, green, or blue, but not without a little mixture of all theſe colours. Theſe never lay above two eggs at a time, and breed in the trunks of old trees, and about the rocks. Others, with all the former colours, have alſo a mixture of black and grey, and theſe breed in the houſes. Another ſpecies is black, ſprinkled with a little green, the eyes and beak are red, and the feet yellow. There is another ſort whoſe body is all green; it has a yellow cap and collar, the head is adorned with a fine tuft of blue feathers, and the tail red, yellow, and green. But the parrot called the Tuin, is ſomething more ſingular, if not for its colours, yet for its ſize; for it is no bigger than a ſparrow, and yet is always talking and ſinging after its manner;

and will ſkip into the boſom of the perſon who breeds it, and eat out of his mouth.

The Guiranheugeta is of the ſize of a goldfinch. Its back and wings are blue: its breaſt and belly yellow, and it has a diadem of the ſame coloured feathers upon its head. This is an admirable bird for the cage, for it has the notes of many other ſorts of birds, and makes ſuch a variety of changes and turnings in its ſinging, that it is a concert of itſelf.

In Braſil there is a kind of bats of the ſize of a crow: theſe have very ſharp teeth and bite violenty. They build their neſts in hollow trees and old walls.

There are here a kind of wild-geeſe, much like thoſe in Europe, only ſomewhat larger, and their feathers vary more in colour; but though they are water-fowls they generally prove both fleſhy and well-taſted.

The Barn-bird has a very odd appearance, it having a bill of an aſtoniſhing length, and a crown of green and white feathers upon its head; one half of which, as well as half the neck, has no feathers at all. It is about the ſize of a ſtork, and, when ſkinned and boiled, proves tolerable food.

The Bill-bird is about the ſize of a wood-pigeon, and has a ſaffron coloured crop about the neck, of three or four fingers in compaſs. Its bill, which is altogether as large as the whole body, is yellow without, and red within; and its feathers, which are yellow on the breaſt, and black on all the other parts, are tipped with red.

Braſil alſo produces many ſorts of wild-fowl, that differ but very little from thoſe of Europe. Among the ſmall birds, the Braſilian humming-bird is the moſt ſingular; for though very ſmall, it makes a loud noiſe, and is of ſo variable a hue, that turn it which way you pleaſe, it changes its

colour. Some of the Braſilian women hang one of theſe at each ear, in the manner of a pendant.

Among the various ſorts of ſerpents found here, is the rattle-ſnake, alſo common in the Engliſh ſettlements; but the moſt ſingular is the Guaku or Liboya, a ſerpent of a monſtrous ſize; ſome of them being, according to Nieuhoff, twenty, and others even thirty feet long. It is extremely voracious, and will leap out of the hedges upon men or beaſts. It is not, however, ſo venomous as other ſerpents, and the fleſh is deemed tolerable food.

The Gekko is indeed of a moſt venomous nature, and its bite proves mortal, unleſs the part wounded be immediately cut off, or burnt with a hot iron. The poiſonous quality of this creature is particularly evinced, by the dreadful effects which proceed from an outward application of its urine, which, upon touching the ſkin, cauſes a blackneſs and gangrene. The Curcuma root, which we call Turmeric, is deemed by the Braſilians, the moſt powerful remedy for this poiſon.

There are lizards in Braſil four feet in length, which the negroes eat with ſafety.

Scorpions here alſo grow to a very large ſize, and their ſting is venomous.

Among the ſpiders, there is one ſort of a remarkable large ſize, generally found in dunghills, or the cavities of hollow trees, which weave webs like other ſpiders; if provoked, they wound with a ſting ſo ſmall, as to be ſcarcely viſible, and yet ſo venomous, that it raiſes a bluiſh ſwelling, that is very painful, and even mortal, if not prevented by a timely antidote.

THE

Diſcoveries of the Engliſh in America.

CHAPTER I.

The diſcoveries made by the Engliſh during the reigns of king Henry VII. and VIII. containing the voyages of John Cabot, who firſt viſited Newfoundland, and the iſland of St. John, and of Sebaſtian Cabot for the finding out a north-weſt paſſage, who firſt diſcovered the continent of America, and ſailed along the coaſt as far as Florida, &c.

JOHN CABOT a citizen of Venice, who had been long ſettled at Briſtol, ſailed in an Engliſh ſhip, with a view of making diſcoveries, in 1494, while Chriſtopher Columbus was performing his ſecond voyage, and actually ſaw the coaſt of Newfoundland, to which he gave the name of Prima Viſta or Firſt Seen; and on the 24th of June landed in an iſland, which he called St John's, from his diſcovering it on the day of that ſaint. This iſland, which is in the bay now called St. Lawrence, appeared to be extremely barren; but the ſea around it abounded in fiſh, and the natives, who wore the ſkins of bears for cloaths, were armed with bows and arrows, pikes and wooden clubs, darts and ſlings.

Upon this diſcovery, king Henry VII. granted a patent to John Cabot and his three ſons, Lewis, Sebaſtian, and Sanchius, dated the 5th of March, 1495, with authority to ſail with five ſhips upon diſcoveries to the eaſt, weſt and north, allowing them the full properties of the countries they

ſhould diſcover, with this only reſervation, that they ſhould return to Briſtol, and pay him the fifth part of the neat profits of the voyage, in conſideration of which they were to have the excluſive right to the countries ſo diſcovered, and no other Engliſh ſubjects were to trade thither, without their licence. He had afterwards a new grant, by which he had leave to take ſhips out of any of the ports of England of the burden of 200 tons. John, however, dying before the ſquadron ſet ſail, his ſon, Sebaſtian, made a propoſal to the king, to diſcover a north-weſt paſſage to the Indies, and for that purpoſe had a ſhip manned and victualled at Briſtol at the king's expence, and three or four other ſhips were fitted out by ſome of the merchants of that city.

With this ſquadron Sebaſtian ſet ſail in May 1497, and on the eleventh of June got into the latitude of 67°. 30, where finding the ſea ſtill open, he imagined that he might have paſſed through into the Indian ſea; but his crew mutinying, he was obliged to return into the latitude of 56°. and from thence he ſteered along the continent of America till he came into 38°. on the coaſt, which he expreſsly ſays, was afterwards called Florida, where proviſions growing ſhort, he ſteered back, and having touched at Newfoundland, returned to England.

This Sebaſtian Cabot was the firſt diſcoverer of the continent of America, which Columbus did not ſee till a year after, and the firſt who took a view of Florida, which was viſited by Juan Ponce de Leon, in 1512, who gave it the name of Florida; took poſſeſſion of it for the king of Spain, and uſually paſſes for the firſt diſcoverer. This voyage gave great light to Ferdinand Magellan, and induced him confidently to affirm, that ſuch a paſſage might be found by the ſouth, which he happily effected twenty-two years after.

Sebaſtian Cabot after this entered into the Spaniſh ſervice, when he diſcovered the river Plata, and ſailed up it 360 miles. This occaſioned his being made grand pilot of Spain; but after reſiding for ſome time at Seville in that character, he returned to England, and was employed by king Henry VIII. in conjunction with Sir Thomas Pert, vice-admiral of England. Theſe gentlemen ſailed in 1516, with two ſhips of 250 tons, to the coaſt of Braſil, and afterwards viſited the Spaniſh iſlands of St. Domingo, and St. John Porto de Rico. In the laſt of theſe iſlands they traded, and paid for what they had, by giving in exchange veſſels made of pewter.

A war with Scotland put an end to any further diſcoveries during this reign. But at length Mr. Hore, a merchant of London, reſolved to attempt a ſettlement in Newfoundland, and to go thither himſelf. This gentleman receiving all the encouragement he could expect from king Henry VIII. many young gentleman of fortune and diſtinguiſhed rank, offered to ſhare both the expence and danger of the undertaking; Mr. Hore therefore fitted out two ſhips, which ſet ſail about the end of April 1536, with 120 men on board, including thirty perſons of character.

Within the ſpace of two months they arrived at Cape Breton, from whence they ſailed round a great part of Newfoundland to Penguin iſland, in the latitude of 50°. 40', where they found great plenty of the fowl from whence the iſland takes its name. They afterwards went on ſhore upon the eaſt ſide of Newfoundland, and had an accidental view of a boat-full of the natives of the iſland, whom they purſued both by ſea and land, but were not able to overtake them. They ſtaid here till their proviſions began to grow very ſhort, and being then afraid to truſt themſelves at ſea in ſuch

a condition, delayed going on board, till they were in ſuch diſtreſs that they actually eat one another; for ſome of them killed their companions privately in the woods, hid them, and then ſecretly roaſted and eat their fleſh, till this horrid practice coming to the knowledge of their commander, by a judicious and pathetic ſpeech, brought them to reſolve rather to live upon graſs and weeds, than to ſubſiſt any longer by this deteſtable method.

Soon after a French ſhip well manned and victualled, put into the ſame harbour; of this the Engliſh, prompted by the irreſiſtible calls of hunger, reſolved to take advantage, and being weary of a country in which they had endured ſuch miſeries, waited for a fair opportunity, and then ſeizing the French ſhip, left their own, and ſailed directly for the coaſt of England. They had a proſperous voyage, and arrived at St. Ives in Cornwall, about the end of October, ſo much altered, that their neareſt relations did not know them.

Some months after the Frenchmen came to England to complain, that the Engliſh had run away with their ſhip, and that they ſhould have periſhed with hunger, if they had not ſupported themſelves by fiſhing. King Henry examined cloſely into the affair, and finding that extreme want was the ſole cauſe of an action that could be no otherwiſe juſtified, he ſatisfied the French to the full extent of their demands, and pardoned his own ſubjects a crime which neceſſity had forced them to commit.

To theſe beginnings we owe the Newfoundland trade. That iſland is of a triangular figure, 350 miles in length from north to ſouth, and 200 miles in breadth at the baſe from eaſt to weſt, where broadeſt. On the north it is ſeparated from the continent, by the narrow ſtreights of Belleiſle; on the weſt it ha the bay of St. Lawrence; on the

ſouth Cape Breton; and on the eaſt the ocean. There is no country in the world better furniſhed with harbours, and it is abundantly ſupplied with freſh water. The climate in ſummer is very hot, and in winter ſo cold, that the ſnow lies upon the ground at leaſt five months, notwithſtanding its being ſituated in between 47 and 52 of north latitude, and conſequently more to the ſouth than England. It however produces filberts, ſtrawberries, ſome kinds of cherries, and other hardy fruits. Corn and hay ſucceed but indifferently, yet it affords great plenty of veniſon, wild-fowl, and fiſh, ſo that with dry food in plenty from Europe, people may live there very comfortably even in winter, ſince the country produces fuel of ſeveral kinds in abundance. In ſhort, notwithſtanding the dreadful diſtreſſes of the above gentlemen who firſt attempted a ſettlement in this iſland, and notwithſtanding the bleakneſs and barrenneſs of this inhoſpitable country, it ſoon became of the utmoſt conſequence; for towards the cloſe of queen Elizabeth's reign, there was annually employed upon its coaſt upwards of 200 fiſhing veſſels, on board of which were above 8000 ſeamen.

Some time after Mr. William Hawkins, an officer in king Henry VIIIth's navy, made three proſperous voyages to Guinea, and from thence acroſs the Atlantic ocean to Braſil, where having ſome dealings with the prince or chief of the Braſilians, he expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing England; but at the ſame time ſhewed a ſuſpicion of his not obtaining leave to return home. To remove this diſtruſt, capt. Hawkins very readily offered to leave Mr. Martin Cockram, whom the Indians eſteemed next to himſelf, as an hoſtage, and this offer was readily accepted.

This Braſilian chief he brought over, and preſented to king Henry, who received and enter-

tained him very kindly, and after a year's ſtay in England, generouſly diſmiſſed him. But in his paſſage home, the Indian chief unhappily died, which gave all on board great concern, from an apprehenſion that Mr. Cockram would be either puniſhed with death, or detained during life. Their fears were however ill founded; for the Braſilians hearing what they had to allege, readily concluded that it was far from being likely they would dare to return to their country if they had ill uſed their king, and that it was out of their power to preſerve his life, if he was attacked by ſickneſs. They therefore freely ſet Mr. Cockram at liberty, kindly entertained the men, and furniſhed the ſhip with a ſufficient cargo for England. This encouraged other merchants to trade to thoſe parts of Braſil that were not yet in the poſſeſſion of the Portugueſe.

CHAPTER II.

Capt. Drake's voyage to the iſthmus of Darien, giving an account of what happened till his return to Plymouth.

IN the following reign, the people were unſucceſsfully employed in diſcovering either a north-eaſt or a north-weſt paſſage, in hopes of graſping the whole trade of the Indies, and by bending all their ſtrength that way, neglected making thoſe diſcoveries that might have been attended with ſucceſs. But in the reign of queen Elizabeth, who made the naval power of this nation her peculiar care, diſcoveries were carried on with freſh vigour, and between the years 1562 and 1568, captain John Hawkins made three voyages to the Weſt-

Indies, and in all but the laſt, had very great ſucceſs. In the year 1572, capt. Francis Drake alſo made his famous expedition into the Weſt-Indies.

This gentleman who had accompanied his kinſman Sir John Hawkins, in his laſt expedition, ſet ſail from Plymouth on the 24th of May 1572, in the Paſca of 70 tons burden, with the Swan of 250 tons, commanded by his brother John Drake. He had on board 73 men and boys, and had not only a good ſtock of ammunition and a year's proviſions, but had three pinnaces ſtowed on board, in pieces, that might, upon occaſion, be ſpeedily joined together. He made the Canary iſlands on the 2d of June and on the 29th paſſed between Guadaloupe and Dominica, on the ſouth ſide of which they came to an anchor, and finding ſeveral cottages formed of the boughs of palm-trees, but no ſign of inhabitants, he inferred that theſe were the occaſional reſidence of fiſhermen.

Having ſtaid here three days, he weighed anchor, and ſteering towards the main land of America, made Port Pheaſant, where he erected his pinnaces, and was ſoon after joined by James Rawſe, in a bark belonging to the Iſle of Wight, with 30 men, they being informed that he deſigned to ſurprize Nombre de Dios.

They left this place in company on the 22d of July, and three days after took two ſmall veſſels, from Nombre de Dios, laden with planks, by which they learned, that ſome ſoldiers were daily expected at that town from the governor of Panama, to protect the inhabitants from the Symerons, a people inhabiting the country between that place and Panama. Theſe were deſcended from thoſe, who flying from the cruelty of the Spaniards, about eighty years before, had by degrees formed themſelves into a nation.

Mr. Drake having treated theſe people civilly, ſet them on ſhore, judging it impoſſible for them to convey any intelligence about him to the town, before his arrival, it being at a conſiderable diſtance by land; then taking 53 men with drums, trumpets, and warlike ſtores, he left the reſt of his company with their ſhips, under the care of capt. Rawſe, in a ſecure and ſecret ſituation, and proceeded in the pinnaces, keeping all day cloſe under the ſhore, and rowing hard at night, till he entered the harbour. He there got between the town and a ſmall ſhip juſt arrived from Old Spain, which he forced to the other ſide of the bay, to prevent her giving the alarm, and then landing without reſiſtance, marched up to the fort, where there was but one man, who fled to alarm the place. On the captain's entering it he found no more than ſix braſs guns and a few culverins, which he diſmounted.

Mr. Drake, then leaving a few of his men to keep poſſeſſion of the fort, and ſome others to guard the pinnaces, marched to an high ground, where he divided the ſailors who accompanied him into two parties of ſixteen men each. One under the command of John Oxenham, he ordered to enter the eaſt end of the town, near the market-place, while he himſelf, with drums beating and colours flying, led the reſt up the principal ſtreets.

The inhabitants had drawn themſelves up near the governor's houſe, to cover the gate leading to Panama, in order to ſecure a retreat; but were ſo terrified at the ſight of the Engliſh, that after firing two or three times, they threw down their arms and fled with the utmoſt precipitation. The alarm bell ſtill continued ringing, but Mr. Drake, having ordered it to be ſilenced, marched towards the royal treaſury, which was then immenſely rich; and the door of the ſtore-houſe being in the

confuſion left open, ſaw a prodigious number of large ſilver bars, none of which the men were allowed to meddle with; but unhappily at this inſtant, a violent ſtorm of thunder, lightning and rain, damaged their arms, and filled the men with apprehenſions that their pinnaces were in danger. This threw them into confuſion; however Mr. Drake boldly inſiſted upon their proceeding, and would doubtleſs have executed his deſign of plundering the treaſury; but becoming faint through loſs of blood, occaſioned by a wound in his leg, which he had hitherto concealed, he was with much difficulty perſuaded to have it dreſſed, and to be carried on board one of the pinnaces This obliged the reſt to retire to their veſſels, with the loſs of one man.

They now proceeded to a ſmall but plentiful iſland, about two leagues from the town, greatly mortified at leaving ſuch immenſe wealth behind them. They there ſtaid to refreſh themſelves, and then proceeded to their ſhips, which they reached on the firſt of Auguſt, when captain Rawſe, having no hopes of their meeting with ſucceſs, ſince they were now certainly diſcovered all along the coaſt, reſolved to leave them.

Mr. Drake, having ſtaid here ſix days, ſailed for Carthagena, when he ſoon found, by the firing of the ordnance, and ringing of the bells, that he was diſcovered; he however ſeized an outward bound ſhip of 240 tons burden that lay in the road, and two ſmaller veſſels, diſpatched thither from Nombre de Dios, to give notice of his being on the coaſt: he however treated thoſe on board with great civility, and ſet them on ſhore.

He now reſolved to ſink the Swan, and knowing that the ſailors would oppoſe it, prevailed on the carpenter to bore three holes in her bottom, when the water pouring in, they removed her

cargo, and then ſet fire to her to prevent her falling into the enemy's hands.

This being done he appointed his brother to command his own ſhip, and went himſelf on board one of the pinnaces. He ſoon found a convenient fertile ſpot on the coaſt of Darien, proper for erecting tents for his men, and preparing ſuch warlike ſtores as he moſt wanted. They were here perfectly covered from view, and the veſſel lay entirely concealed in a neighbouring creek, by which means he hoped to raiſe a belief, that he had entirely left the coaſt.

Having ſtaid here till the eighth of September, he told his brother to take care of the ſhip, and, taking part of the men, proceeded with two pinnaces for the Rio Grande, keeping as much as poſſible out of ſight. He landed his men about two leagues to the weſtward of Carthagena, where treating the Indians with great civility, they ſupplied him with cattle and other freſh proviſions; for which he gave them ſome trifles in exchange. The next day he made the mouth of the river, where they had a terrible ſtorm, and after that was over, the men were much peſtered with muſketo's; but defended themſelves againſt their attacks by rubbing their bodies with lemon-juice.

They found the channel of the Rio Grande twenty-three fathoms deep, and ſo broad, that it required a very good eye to ſee from ſhore to ſhore. They here ſaw ſeveral houſes, and a Spaniard beckoning to them, they made towards the land, when he finding that they were not his countrymen, as he had at firſt imagined, betook himſelf to flight. They however landed, and found ſome cheeſe, white ruſk, bacon, ſeveral ſorts of ſweetmeats, and a conſiderable quantity of ſugar, out of which they ſupplied their veſſels, with as much as they wanted.

Mr. Drake now ſailed back to his brother, and by the way boarded ſeveral veſſels in hopes of finding gold, but they happened to be laden only with proviſions and other neceſſaries. Of theſe he took a great quantity, and diſpoſed of it in an iſland in ſuch a manner, that if any part of it ſhould be ſurprized by the Spaniards, there would ſtill be a ſufficient ſupply left, in caſe he ſhould ſtand in need of it. During his abſence, his brother John had concluded a league of friendſhip with the Symerons, whom he promiſed to aſſiſt againſt the Spaniards, from whom they had taken a large quantity of gold and ſilver, and thrown it into the river; for as they ſet no value on that metal, they had no other motive for ſeizing it than that of exaſperating their enemies.

As it was unuſual for the Spaniards to bring down their treaſures during the rainy ſeaſon, which now approached, captain Drake reſolved to cruize in thoſe ſeas till the time of their ſetting out, during which he plundered a great number of ſhips, but unhappily his brother John was ſlain in gallantly boarding a frigate. Upon this he moored his ſhip, and reſolved to appear no more till the Spaniſh treaſurer was ſet out for Nombre de Dios. However while he thus lay by, ſeveral of his men died of calentures, among whom was his brother Joſeph Drake.

The captain being at length informed by the Symerons that the treaſurer was ſet out, he reſolved, by their aſſiſtance, to march over land to Panama; theſe people not only conſenting to ſerve him for guides, but to carry a large quantity of proviſions; and when thoſe failed, they agreed to ſupply him with more, by the help of their bows and arrows.

They ſet out on the 3d of February, 1573, being forty-eight in company, eighteen of whom

were Engliſh, who had nothing to incommode them but their arms. On the third day of their march they arrived at a town belonging to the Symerons, ſituated on the ſide of a hill, near a river, and encompaſſed with an high mud wall. The inhabitants made a very neat appearance; their dreſs differed but little from that of the Spaniards, and they received theſe ſtrangers with great civility, and ſeemed to be in want of nothing, having all kinds of proviſions in plenty. This town was thirty-five leagues from Nombre de Dios, and fifty-five from Panama. It was conſtantly guarded againſt the Spaniards, and the natives having the moſt implacable hatred againſt that nation, they often ſurprized and cut them off in the woods.

The captain left this place after ſtaying there only one night, and then marching ten days aſcended a very high hill, where, from a tree pointed out to him by the Symerons, he beheld the north ſea, which he had left on the one hand, and the ſouth-ſea on the other, and from that moment reſolved, if poſſible, to ſail thither in an Engliſh ſhip.

Panama being now frequently in ſight, he thought it prudent to keep his men as cloſe together as poſſible, and their ſucceſs depending on their being concealed, they ſtruck out of the common road and reached a grove in the road to Nombre de Dios, at a ſmall diſtance from Panama. Here capt. Drake ſent a Symeron in diſguiſe to act as ſpy, who ſoon returned with intelligence that the treaſurer of Lima was to ſet out that very night with his family for Nombre de Dios, in order to embark for Spain, attended by fourteen mules, ſome of which were laden with gold, others with ſilver, and one with valuable jewels; and that the ſame night two caravans would paſs the ſame way, with fifty mules in each, laden with proviſions and a ſmall quantity of ſilver. This intelligence was

ſoon after confirmed by a centinel, whom they were ſo fortunate as to ſeize.

Upon receiving this intelligence, capt. Drake concealed himſelf with half his men fifty paces from the highway, while Mr. John Oxenham, and one of the Symeron chiefs, poſted themſelves with the other half on the oppoſite ſide. In this manner things were diſpoſed, when one of the men who had drank too much, got up to ſee what approached, at the inſtant when the mules laden with proviſions were paſſing by, though the captain had given ſtrict orders that not the leaſt notice ſhould be taken of them, and this man being dreſſed in a white ſhirt, which was the mark of diſtinction worn by the Engliſh, was perceived by a Spaniard, who ſpread the alarm, ſo that the treaſurer turned his baggage out of the road, and only the mules with proviſions came forward, ſome of which they ſeized; but to their great mortification, got only about the quantity of two horſe loads of ſilver.

Having ſtaid to refreſh themſelves, they mounted the mules, and proceeded towards Santa Cruz, but ſet thoſe beaſts at liberty on their approaching the town. They were now met by a party of ſoldiers, who ſummoned them to ſurrender, and promiſed to give them very kind treatment. The Engliſh laughed at this propoſal, and received the enemy's fire, which they ſo effectually returned, that they put them to flight, when briſkly following the purſuit, they entered the town with them, the Symerons ſupporting them through the whole action with the greateſt bravery.

Santa Cruz then conſiſted of about fifty neat houſes, with a governor and other officers, with warehouſes for receiving the Spaniſh goods which were brought thither from Nombre de Dios up the river Chagre, and from thence carried by mules to Panama. The captain here made an

equal diviſion of the plunder he found in the town, among his own men and the Symerons.

There were at that time at Santa Cruz three ladies, who came thither to lie in, the air being much better than at Nombre de Dios, to which city they belonged, and as it was Mr. Drake's conſtant practice to behave upon all occaſions with as much humanity and decorum as poſſible, he was no ſooner informed of their ſituation, than he gave orders for their being particularly protected, and ſoon after viſited them himſelf, to prevent their entertaining any unjuſt apprehenſions of his conduct

Though captain Drake was reſolved to ſtay ſome time longer on the coaſt, he now began to be uneaſy for his ſhip, from which he had been abſent above a fortnight. He therefore returned to it with all the expedition poſſible, and to his great joy found every thing in as good order as he could deſire.

The Symerons now propoſed making an attack on the houſe of Pezoro an avaricious Spaniard deeply concerned in the mines, whoſe income amounted to above 200l. a day, which he conſtantly locked up in cheſts. He lived near Veragua, a town to the weſt of Nombre de Dios, and one of the Symerons, who had been his ſlave and had fled from his tyranny, promiſed to guide them to his treaſures: but having only a ſmall ſtock of proviſions remaining, the captain thought it more neceſſary to obtain a freſh ſupply, in order to preſerve the health and vigour of his men; Mr. Oxenham was therefore ordered to proceed with one of the frigates towards Toulon, and to bring off all the proviſions he could meet with, Mr. Drake reſolved to ply off the Cabezas in hopes of becoming maſter of ſome of the treaſure barks that paſs and repaſs, between Nicaragua and Veragua. Thus he wiſely avoided the expedition againſt Pezoro, which would have been extremely laborious, as his

men muſt have marched through a conſiderable tract of country.

Capt. Drake during this cruize ſeized only a ſmall veſſel, in which was ſome gold, and a Genoeſe pilot, who informed him, that the Engliſh had every where ſpread an univerſal terror; while Oxenham took but one frigate, wherein was about 200 cocks and hens, twenty-eight hogs, and a conſiderable quantity of maize. But what was of more conſequence, he learnt from the priſoners, that two galleys had been built at Nombre de Dios in order to ſerve as a convoy to the Chagre fleet, the treaſures of which now principally engroſſed Mr. Drake's attention.

While things were in this ſituation, they were alarmed by obſerving a ſail bearing down upon them, which however proved to be only a French ſhip of about eighty tons burden, the crew whereof were in great want of water, with which the captain ordered them to be ſupplied; and they being informed of his deſigns, offered to join him, which after ſome deliberation was permitted.

The captain now leaving the two ſhips in a ſafe harbour, manned the frigate and two pinnaces, with fifteen Engliſh and Symerons, and twenty French, and with this force ſteered to the Rio Franciſco, where the water being ſhallow, he left the frigate, with orders to lie cloſe till the return of the pinnaces. In theſe he proceeded with his forces as far up the river Franciſco as was thought convenient; and then landing, marched forward with great regularity and ſilence, guided by the Symerons, till they came within a mile of the high road, when they refreſhed themſelves, and took up their quarters.

The next day they were agreeably ſurpriſed by the noiſe of the bells hung about the mules, they therefore ſet out to attack them, and found three caravans near together, two of which conſiſted of

ſeventy mules each, and one of fifty, all of them richly laden with gold and ſilver. They had a guard of forty-five ſoldiers, who fired on the approach of the Engliſh and French, and then retreated in order to call more aſſiſtance. By the above fire the French captain was wounded and one Symeron killed. The Engliſh and French now made the beſt uſe poſſible of their time, loaded themſelves with as many wedges of gold and ſilver as they could carry, and having buried the reſt in the ſand, retreated towards the river, leaving behind them the French captain, who had fainted in the woods with the loſs of blood, and a French ſailor, who had overloaded himſelf with gold.

The next day they reached the Rio Franciſco, where not finding the pinnaces, they began to fear they were loſt; which appeared the more probable as ſeven Spaniſh pinnaces appeared hovering at a diſtance; but a ſudden guſt of wind attended with rain, obliged the Spaniards to ſheer off.

Capt. Drake was much concerned at the apprehenſions that if his pinnaces were taken, the poor men would be put to the torture to make them diſcover where his frigate and ſhips were; but being ſenſible that though this ſhould really be the caſe, it would be ſome time before they could reach the ſhips, he aſſiſted his men in making a raft, in order to attempt to get on board before the enemy. In this attempt he was accompanied only by one Engliſhman, two hardy Frenchmen, and a Symeron, who generouſly endeavoured to perſuade him, in caſe his ſhips were deſtroyed, to live among thoſe of his nation, who would do every thing in their power to ſerve him.

Theſe having laſhed the raft pretty ſecurely, fixed a kind of rudder, and erected a ſail made of a biſcuit bag, they committed themſelves to the mercy of the ſea, ſitting up to the waiſt, and ſometimes up to the arm-pits in water, and after a fa-

tiguing voyage of about ſix hours, obſerved the pinnaces lying behind a point where they had caſt anchor.

Upon this joyful ſight he ran the raft on the neareſt ſhore, and went to them by land, where after keeping them for ſome time in ſuſpenſe, he informed them of his vaſt ſucceſs, and the loſs of their captain and a ſailor. He was now told, that the pinnaces were prevented from ſteering up to Rio Franciſco at the time appointed, by a hard gale of wind. They however made a ſhift to reach that river at night, where they took in their comrades with the treaſure, and then ſteered directly for the frigate, and the ſhips, which having come up with, the captain divided the gold and ſilver, to their mutual ſatisfaction, equally between the Engliſh and French.

A few days after, capt. Drake ſent a detachment of twelve Engliſh and ſixteen Symerons, to bring away the reſt of the treaſure; but they could find only thirteen bars of ſilver and ſome wedges of gold; for the reſt had been diſcovered and carried away, even the ground dug up for a mile round. They however brought this off, together with one of the Frenchmen, who, though he had been left behind, had the happineſs to eſcape from the Spaniards.

The captain's thoughts were now bent on returning home, having therefore diſmiſſed the French ſhip, he ſteered to cape Cabezas, taking ſeveral Spaniſh veſſels laden with proviſions by the way. At this laſt place they ſtaid ſeven days, and gave the Symerons all the iron work, of which they were extremely fond, and whatever elſe they choſe. Mr. Drake alſo made them ſeveral preſents of linen, and ſilks for their wives and female relations; and giving to one of them a very handſome cutlaſs, was in return preſented with four wedges of gold; but he no ſooner received them, than he

threw them into the common ſtock, declaring that he thought it would be unjuſt not to ſhare with thoſe who had aſſiſted in fitting him out, and had bought the cutlaſs, the price for which it was ſold: A noble inſtance of diſintereſted integrity!

On their leaving theſe friendly people, they made ſome ſmall prizes, and arriving at cape St. Anthony, took in a ſupply of turtle and their eggs, which were of great ſervice during the reſt of the voyage. Being ſoon after in want of water, there happily fell ſuch a prodigious ſhower of rain as afforded them a ſufficient quantity without their touching, as they intended, at Newfoundland: they therefore ſtretched over from Florida to the iſlands of Scilly, and came to an anchor in Plymouth harbour on the 9th of Auguſt, 1573, when the people being at church, and hearing the news of their arrival, inſtantly hurried out, and ran to the ſhore, to welcome him and his men on their happy return from this ſucceſsful expedition.

CHAPTER III.

Sir Humphry Gilbert obtains a patent for ſettling the continent of North-America, diſcovered by John and Sebaſtian Cabot: Takes a formal poſſeſſion of Newfoundland, but meets with many diſaſters, and is loſt in his return.

CAPTAIN Drake's great ſucceſs encouraged others to follow his example, and in a very ſhort time the Engliſh privateers made various voyages into all parts of America, and ſoon pilots capable of navigating ſhips to any part of the known world became ſo numerous, that ſuch projects were daily ſet on foot, as in the former age would have been thought impracticable; but in

this were carried into execution at the expence of private perſons, without any aſſiſtance from the crown, though they had all the countenance and encouragement they could deſire: Among theſe, none was ſo great a proof of maritime ſkill, and ſo honourable in every reſpect to the nation, as the next expedition of capt. Francis Drake, in 1577, in which he ſailed round the globe, which voyage will be inſerted among the moſt remarkable of thoſe excellent mariners who have alſo encompaſſed the earth.

Some years after this voyage, Sir Humphry Gilbert, a gentleman of Devonſhire, repreſented to queen Elizabeth the expediency of ſettling all thoſe countries upon the continent of America, which had been formerly diſcovered by Sebaſtian Cabot, in order to prevent their falling into the hands of the French: Upon which her majeſty granted him letters patent, to diſcover, plant, ſettle, and even to fortify and build caſtles, in any of the northern countries, not then in the poſſeſſion of any chriſtian prince.

Upon this encouragement this gentleman applied himſelf to his friends and relations, in order to form a ſociety capable of carrying this deſign into execution. In this he however met with many difficulties; notwithſtanding which he put to ſea, but his voyage proved very unfortunate, and was attended with the loſs of one of his beſt ſhips. After this ſevere blow he ſold his eſtate, in order to furniſh the neceſſary expences of another ſquadron, in which ſeveral gentlemen of rank and fortune agreed to go with him in perſon.

This ſquadron conſiſted of the following veſſels; the Delight of 120 tons, in which went Sir Humphry himſelf; the bark Raleigh, fitted out by Mr. Walter Raleigh, of 200 tons; the Golden Hind, of forty tons; the Swallow, of forty tons; and the Squirrel, of ten tons; having on board in all 260

men, among whom were many ſhipwrights, maſons, carpenters, ſmiths, miners and refiners.

It was reſolved by the proprietors, that the fleet ſhould ſail to Newfoundland, and having taken in proviſions there, proceed to the ſouth, and not to paſs by any river or bay worthy of notice, without examining it. On the 11th of June, 1583, this fleet ſet ſail from Plymouth, but on the 13th the Raleigh, commanded by capt. Butler, left the fleet, under the pretence that the captain and his men were ſuddenly taken ill of a contagious diſeaſe. On the 30th of July they ſaw land in about the latitude of 51°, and from thence coaſted along it to the ſouth, and on the 3d of Auguſt entered St. John's harbour in Newfoundland, where they found the Squirrel, which had been ſeparated from them, riding at anchor in the mouth of the harbour, having been refuſed entrance by the veſſels that were fiſhing within it to the number of thirty-ſix ſail, of all nations.

Sir Humphry now ſending his boat to inform the maſters of the fiſhing barks that he had a commiſſion from the queen to take poſſeſſion of thoſe lands for the crown of England, they ſubmitted to the levying a tax of proviſions upon each ſhip, for ſupplying the wants of his ſquadron, and he entered the harbour.

The next day, Sir Humphry and his company were conducted on ſhore by the maſters of the Engliſh fiſhing-veſſels, and on the 5th, having cauſed a tent to be ſet up in the view of the ſhips in the harbour, and being attended by all under his command, he ſummoned the merchants and maſters, both Engliſh and foreigners to be preſent at his taking a formal and ſolemn poſſeſſion of thoſe territories. Theſe being aſſembled he cauſed his commiſſion under the great ſeal of England, to be openly read before them, and to be interpreted to thoſe who were ſtrangers to the Engliſh tongue,

which being done, he declared that he took poſſeſſion of the harbour of St. John, and 200 leagues every way, inveſting her majeſty with the title and dignity thereof, and then had a turf of ſoil delivered to him in token of taking poſſeſſion alſo for himſelf, his heirs and aſſigns for ever.

Sir Humphry, after this formal manner of taking poſſeſſion, had the country examined, and ſome pieces of ore brought to him, ſome of which were ſaid to be that of ſilver, and of this he had the moſt poſitive aſſurances from a Saxon miner in his company. Having at length taken in a ſupply of proviſions, he found himſelf obliged to proceed on his diſcoveries to the ſouthward; for ſome of his men falling ſick and dying, and others deſerting him, the number of his people was ſo leſſened, as to oblige him to leave the Swallow behind.

Sir Humphry now went on board the Squirrel, that ſmall veſſel being moſt proper for diſcovering the coaſt, on account of her being able to run into every check, and on the 20th of Auguſt, ſailed from the harbour of St. John with three ſhips, the Delight, the Golden Hind and the Squirrel. The next night they reached Cape Race, which is twenty-five leagues diſtant, and from thence ſailed about eighty-ſeven leagues towards Cape Breton.

On the 29th they had a violent ſtorm, with rain, and ſo thick a miſt that they could not ſee a cable's length before them; and early the next morning they found themſelves in the midſt of ſhoals and ſands, upon which a ſignal was given to the Delight to ſteer to ſeaward; but it was too late, for ſhe immediately ſtruck; and her ſtern and hind-quarter ſoon beat to pieces; however the Golden Hind and the frigate bore away to the ſouth, and with much difficulty got clear of the ſhoals.

In the Delight there unhappily periſhed Capt. Maurice Brown with near 100 perſons: The Cap-

tain might indeed have probably ſaved his life, if he would have left the ſhip immediately on her ſtriking; but he would not be the firſt in ſetting an ill example. In the mean time fourteen perſons leaped into a ſmall pinnace of a ton and a half burden, no bigger than a Thames boat. They for ſome time looked out for the Captain, but not ſeeing him took in Mr. Clarke the maſter of the Delight, and one more. Being now ſixteen in number, they cut the rope, and committed themſelves to the mercy of the waves, without any proviſions, or a drop of freſh water, and nothing to work with but one oar. The boat ſeeming to be overloaded, one Edward Headly, thinking it was better for ſome to periſh than all, propoſed that four of the number might be thrown overboard to lighten the boat, and to caſt lots in order to determine who ſhould periſh; but he was over-ruled by Mr. Clarke, who, though it was propoſed that he ſhould be excepted from the number, perſuaded his comrades to ſubmit their ſafety to providence. The boat was driven ſix days and nights before the wind; during which theſe poor wretches had no other ſuſtenance than their own urine, and ſome weeds that ſwam on the ſurface of the water. In this extremity of cold, wet, hunger and thirſt, Headly, and one more periſhed on the fifth day; but the other fourteen lived till they were driven the ſeventh day on ſhore on the coaſt of Newfoundland; whence they ſailed in a French ſhip to France, and before the end of the year returned to England.

Sir Humphry, diſcouraged by theſe diſaſters, and his men being in want of neceſſaries, propoſed to return to England, having, in his opinion, made diſcoveries ſufficient to procure the aſſiſtance neceſſary for a new voyage in the ſpring. His people when he made this propoſal were at firſt a little backward, but upon hearing his reaſons,

ſubmitted; and according to his advice altered their courſe. On the 2d of September they paſſed in ſight of Cape Race, and had afterwards ſuch bad weather with ſuch high ſeas, that the people in the Hind frequently expected to ſee thoſe in the Squirrel ſwallowed up, notwithſtanding which, Sir Humphry could not be perſuaded to leave her. On the 9th, the ſtorms and ſwellings of the ſea increaſed, and he was again preſſed to leave the frigate; but his anſwer was, We are as near to heaven at ſea as by land. About midnight, the Squirrel being a head of the Golden Hind, her lights were at once extinguiſhed, and it was ſuppoſed ſhe ſunk that very inſtant, for ſhe was never heard of more.

The Golden Hind however arrived ſafely at Falmouth on the 22d of September, after having loſt only one man in this unfortunate expedition.

CHAPTER IV.

Sir Walter Raleigh gets the patent renewed for himſelf, and ſends two barks, to make diſcoveries to the ſouth. The Engliſh land in the iſland Wokoken, which is deſcribed; and after a ſucceſsful voyage return to England. Sir Richard Greenville forms two ſettlements in Roenocke iſland, and Mr. White one; but owing to the want of ſupplies and the annoyance from the Indians, are all obliged to remove.

AFTER Sir Humphry Gilbert's miſcarriage and loſs, the brave Sir Walter Raleigh, that unfortunate gentleman's half brother by the mother's ſide, procured his patent to be renewed to himſelf, and making choice of two very able ſea-officers, Captain Philip Amadas and Capt. Arthur Barlow, fitted out two ſmall barks. Sir Walter had obſerved, that all the attempts hitherto made

had ſailed, by the adventurers purſuing their diſcoveries from the north; he choſe therefore to proceed in another method, and conſidering all the lands on the continent of America, from the laſt ſettlement of the Spaniards to 60 north, as lying within his grant, he reſolved to ſettle thoſe firſt, which lay neareſt their ſettlements.

The above two barks ſailed from the weſt of England on the 27th of April, 1584, and, paſſing the Canaries, fell in with the coaſt of Florida, on the 2d of July and having ſailed 40 leagues along the ſhore, came on the 13th to a river, where they caſt anchor, landed, and took poſſeſſion of the country in right of the queen, and for the uſe of the proprietors.

This place they afterwards found to be the iſland of Wokoken, on the coaſt of the country ſince called Virginia, in 34° latitude. In this iſland they found deer, rabbits, hares, fowls, vines, cedars, pines, cypreſs, ſaſſafras, and maſtic-trees. They went to the tops of the hills that were neareſt the ſhore, from whence, though they were not high, they diſcovered the ſea on all ſides, and found it to be an iſland of about 20 miles in length and ſix in breadth.

It was the third day before they ſaw any of the natives, but then a little boat with three of them appeared; and one of them going on ſhore, the Engliſh rowed up to him, when he not only waited their coming, without any ſigns of fear, but readily went on board, where they gave him a ſhirt and hat, with ſome meat and wine, which he ſeemed to like. After he had with apparent ſatisfaction narrowly viewed the barks with all that were in them, he went in his own boat to above a quarter of a mile's diſtance, where he employed himſelf in fiſhing, and in half an hour loaded his boat, as deep as it could ſwim, and then returned to the point of land; where, to ſhew his gratitude, he di-

vided it into two parts, and making ſigns that he deſigned it for the two barks, departed. After this, the natives from the continent, frequently repaired to their ſhips, and exchanged ſeveral ſorts of ſkins, white coral, and ſome pearls, for toys made of tin, and other baubles of inconſiderable value.

The very next day after that in which they had ſeen the three Indians, ſeveral boats appeared in view, and in one of theſe was the king of the country's brother, attended by forty or fifty men, whoſe features were tolerably agreeable. The prince made up to the Engliſh, who gave him and four of his chiefs preſents of ſeveral toys, which he accepted very kindly; but took all himſelf, and let them know, that none there had a right to any thing but him. Two days after they let him ſee their merchandize, of which nothing ſeemed to pleaſe him more than a pewter diſh, for which he gave twenty deer-ſkins; and, making a hole in the rim, hung it over his neck for a breaſt-plate, making ſigns that it would defend him againſt the enemy's arrows. The next thing he bought was a copper kettle, for which he gave fifty ſkins.

While he thought fit to traffic with them, none but ſuch as like him wore plates of gold or copper on their heads, were allowed either to buy or ſell; but as ſoon as they had done, every other Indian was allowed the ſame liberty. They offered very good exchange for hatchets, axes, and knives, and would have given any thing for ſwords; but the Engliſh would not part with one.

The king's brother afterwards came frequently on board, and would eat, drink, and be merry with them; and once he brought his wife and children with him, who afterwards came frequently with only their followers. The Engliſh often truſted him with goods upon his word, to bring the value at a certain time, which he never failed

of doing. He had a ſtrong inclination to have a ſuit of armour, and a ſword which he ſaw in one of the ſhips; and would have left a large box of pearls in pawn for them, but they refuſed it, that he might not know they ſet a value upon them, till they could diſcover whence he got them.

The Engliſh learned from the natives, that their country which appeared extremely fertile, was called Wingandacoa, and their king named Wingina. When they went on ſhore they were entertained with extraordinary civility, and once in particular by the king's brother's wife, at a little village in Roenocke. She appeared to be a very modeſt woman, and wore a mantle of deer-ſkin lined with fur, with an apron of the ſame kind. She had a band of white coral on her forehead, and from her ears hung long bracelets of pearls, ſome of which were as large as peas. They were told of a great city, where the king reſided, at the diſtance of ſix days journey on the continent, which however they did not ſee; for they made no long ſtay, nor proceeded any farther on diſcovery, going only to the neighbouring parts in their boats, and being ſatisfied with what they had ſeen, returned to England about the middle of September, pleaſed with their ſucceſs in this ſhort and proſperous voyage, and with the agreeable hopes of the future advantages that might be derived from it.

On their return, they repreſented the country ſo delightful, and ſo richly abounding with all the neceſſaries of life; the climate and air ſo temperate, and healthy; the woods and ſoil ſo charming and fertile, and every thing elſe ſo agreeable, that paradiſe itſelf ſeemed to be there in its utmoſt beauty. They gave particular accounts of the variety of excellent fruits they had found, ſome of which they had never ſeen before; and that there were grapes in great abundance; ſtately oaks, and other timber; red cedar, cypreſs, pines, and other ever-

greens, and ſweet woods, for tallneſs and largeneſs exceeding all they had ever heard deſcribed; wild-fowl, deer, fiſh and other game, in ſuch plenty and variety, that no epicure could deſire more, than this new world ſeemed naturally to afford. To make it yet more deſirable they reported, that the native Indians, who were then the only inhabitants, were ſo affable, kind, and good-natured; ſo innocent and unacquainted with all the arts of deceit, and ſo fond of the Engliſh, that they rather ſeemed ready to take any impreſſion, than any ways to oppoſe their ſettling on the coaſt.

Queen Elizabeth, highly pleaſed with the repreſentation given of this diſcovery, not only promiſed to grant all the aſſiſtance neceſſary for promoting and perfecting a ſettlement, but beſtowed upon this delightful country the name of Virginia*; and it was not long before Sir Walter Raleigh reſolved to fit out a more conſiderable fleet than had hitherto been employed in ſuch undertakings. He was deſirous of commanding in this expedition, but being jealous that his abſence might be prejudicial to his intereſt at court, he committed the conduct of this ſecond enterprize to his lieutenant Sir Richard Greenville, who, on the 8th of April, 1585, ſet ſail from Plymouth, with ſeven ſhips fitted out by a company, of which himſelf and ſeveral gentlemen were members.

On the 26th of June he anchored at Wokoken, and in Auguſt following, began to plant on the iſland of Roenocke, five miles diſtant from the continent, where 180 men were landed under the command of Ralph Lane, who was made their

* This Virginia ought not to be confounded with the State now called by that name, for in thoſe days it comprehended not only that State, but the whole country claimed by the crown of England, from the ſouthern limits of Georgia, agreeable to the patents granted to Sir Humphry Gilbert, and his brother Sir Walter Raleigh.

governor, and capt. Philip Amadas, who was conſtituted admiral of the new colony, though it does not appear that he had ſo much as a bark left with him.

Sir Richard did not remain above three weeks longer in thoſe ſeas; for having made ſome diſcoveries to the ſouthward, and having traded with the Indians for pearls, ſkins, furs, and other commodities, he ſailed on the 25th of Auguſt, on his return to England, in which he took a very rich prize; ſo that this voyage appeared to the nation, as no leſs proſperous than the former, and the new Virginia company began to entertain very ſanguine hopes of their undertaking.

Let us now return to the firſt planters in Virginia, and give an account of what happened to the firſt colony the Engliſh eſtabliſhed there, or in any part of America. Sir Richard Greenville was no ſooner ſailed, than the people whom he left behind, applied themſelves with diligence to what had been recommended to them by Sir Walter Raleigh, which was diſcovering the continent, and with this view they travelled eighty miles ſouth, and 150 north from that part of the main, which was oppoſite to their iſland; but in theſe expeditions venturing indiſcreetly too high up the river, and too far into the country, the Indian governors grew jealous of them; began firſt to be weary of their company, and then to cut off ſuch of their ſtragglers as fell into their hands, and they even formed a plan for deſtroying all the reſt, but were happily prevented.

Mean while the company in England, were not ſo careful as they ought to have been in ſending them ſupplies of proviſions, and the Engliſh not underſtanding the nature of the climate, neglected to gather food in the proper ſeaſon, by which means they were reduced to great ſtraits. The natives never after kept faith with them, but

watching all opportunities to cut them off, obliged them to be very cautious in landing on the continent, and prevented their having any ſupply from thence; they however endured every thing with incredible reſolution, and extended their diſcoveries near 100 miles along the coaſt. The Indians they kept in awe, by threatening them with the return of their companions with a reinforcement of men; but no ſhips coming from England all that winter, nor in the ſpring following, nor even in the ſummer, they deſpaired of being able to ſupport themſelves any longer. While the natives ſeeing them in a manner abandoned by their countrymen, began to look upon them with contempt, and the Engliſh expected every day to be ſacrificed to their cruelty.

In this diſtreſs, their chief employment was looking out to ſea, in hopes of finding ſome means of eſcape, or of obtaining a recruit; but in Auguſt, when they were almoſt ſpent with watching and hunger, they, to their great joy, diſcovered ſir Francis Drake's fleet returning from an expedition againſt the Spaniards, in North-America, and this great man, having been commanded by the queen to viſit this plantation, and to ſee what encouragement or aſſiſtance they wanted, ſailed up directly to the iſland. Their firſt petition was to grant them a ſupply of men and proviſions, with a ſmall ſhip or bark, that in caſe they ſhould not be able to maintain themſelves where they were, they might embark in it for England.

Sir Francis having granted their requeſt, they ſet all hands to work, to fit the ſhip he had given them, and to furniſh her with ſtores ſufficient for a long ſtay; but a ſtorm ariſing, drove the veſſel from her anchor to ſea, by which ſhe ſuffered ſo much, as rendered her unfit for their uſe. At this they were ſo diſcouraged, that though ſir Francis offered them another ſhip, they were afraid to ſtay,

and earneſtly intreated him to take them with him, which he did: and this put an end to the firſt ſettlement.

This misfortune was ſo far from being owing to ſir Walter Raleigh's negligence, that he had continually preſſed the company to reflect on the neceſſity of ſupporting the colony in time, and ſo ſolicitous was he to carry this point, that finding the fleet, which was preparing under the command of ſir Richard Greenville, went on but ſlowly, he propoſed, that the firſt ſhip that was completely manned and equipped, ſhould be ſent without ſtaying for the reſt; this was done: but when the veſſel, which was well ſtocked with proviſions, ammunition, and all manner of neceſſaries, arrived at the iſland of Roenocke, it was found deſerted, and therefore, after a ſhort ſtay, the people returned home.

In about a fortnight after, came ſir Richard Greenville with his ſquadron of three ſmall veſſels, and to his great diſappointment, found not a man in the iſland. He, however, reſolved to make another ſettlement, and therefore left behind him fifty men, with directions to build a fort for their own defence, and then furniſhing them with all neceſſaries for two years, returned to England, after giving them the ſtrongeſt aſſurance, that they ſhould be conſtantly and regularly ſupplied.

This colony was, however, more unfortunate than the firſt, for the Indians taking advantage of the ſmallneſs of their number, and the difficulties they had to ſtruggle with, attacked and cut them off, ſo that when Mr. White came thither, with three ſhips and conſiderable ſupplies, on the 22d of June, 1587, he found their fort demoliſhed, ſome huts they had erected near it deſtroyed, and not far from it the bones of a dead man. In all theſe revolutions, Manteo an Indian, who had been formerly carried over to England, from whence he

ſafely returned, remained firm to the Engliſh intereſt, and from him Mr. White learned what was become of this colony.

The misfortunes which had attended theſe two ſettlements, would certainly have diſcouraged a man of leſs conſtancy and fortitude than Mr. White; but he had a commiſſion to be governor, and Sir Walter had ſtrongly recommended his keeping poſſeſſion of the place. He therefore erected a new fort, and chooſing eleven of the moſt ſenſible perſons he had brought along with him, conſtituted a regular corporation, to which he gave the title of the Governor and Court of Aſſiſtants of the city of Raleigh, in Virginia. On the 13th of Auguſt, Manteo, the faithful Indian, was chriſtened, and created by the Governor, Lord of Daſſumonpeak, an Indian nation ſo called, as a reward for his fidelity and ſervice to the Engliſh, and on the 18th of the ſame month, was born the firſt child that was the iſſue of chriſtian parents in that place. She was the daughter of Mr. Annias Dare, and after the name of the country, was named Virginia.

Good government and induſtry ſoon rendered Mr. White and his men formidable to the Indians, who courted their friendſhip, and made leagues with the corporation, which they kept or broke, as they thought themſelves too weak or too ſtrong for the Engliſh, who, notwithſtanding their ſeeming proſperity, underwent the utmoſt hardſhips, for want of receiving proper ſupplies from Europe. Yet ſo far were they from repenting of their undertaking, or deſiring to return, that they diſputed for the liberty of remaining at Roenocke, and obliged Mr. White their governor, to return to England, and ſolicit the company to ſend them recruits of men and proviſions.

Mr. White conſented to negociate this affair, and leaving 150 men in the place, ſet ſail for Eng-

land, where he arrived in ſafety; but it was two years before he could obtain a grant of the neceſſary ſupplies. At laſt, however, he had three ſhips fitted out for him, with proviſions and more men for the colony. On the 13th of Auguſt he arrived at Cape Hattaras, and landing on the iſland Roenocke, found by letters cut on trees in large Roman characters, that the Engliſh were removed. On ſeveral of theſe trees they found the letters C. R. O. and ſearching farther on one of the paliſadoes of the fort, found cut in large capital letters, the word Croatan, which is an iſland about twenty leagues to the ſouth of Roenocke. On this advice, they embarked in order to ſearch for the garriſon in that iſland, but they were ſcarce all on board before a dreadful ſtorm aroſe which ſeparated the ſhips, and loſing their anchors and cabals, they durſt not venture in with the ſhore. Upon which all of them ſhifting for themſelves, ſailed back to England and Ireland.

This dreadful blow proved the ruin of the third ſettlement, of which it does not appear that the company took any farther care, or made any new attempt for preſerving the poſſeſſion of a country, the advantages whereof had been painted in ſuch ſtrong colours, to the crown of England: though a long time after they ſent ſeveral ſhips to viſit the coaſt, and trade with the natives.*

* See Chap. VIII. and IX.

CHAPTER V.

Capt. Davis's voyages in ſearch of a north-weſt paſſage, and the great diſcoveries made by him in North-America.

WHILE theſe proceedings were carrying on in the ſouth, a deſign of attempting to diſcover a north-weſt paſſage was formed by ſome traders in the weſt of England, and the ſame project being ſet on foot at London, they both united, when capt. John Davis was appointed to conduct the enterprize, and to have under his command the Sunſhine of London, a bark of fifty tons, with twenty-three perſons on board; and the Moonſhine of Dartmouth, a veſſel of thirty-five tons, carrying nineteen perſons. With this ſmall force he ſailed from the laſt mentioned port on the 7th of June, 1585, and on the 14th of the ſame month was forced into one of the Scilly iſlands, where being detained a fortnight, capt. Davis gave a proof of his activity and induſtry, by drawing a chart of thoſe iſlands, which was at that time much wanted.

Capt. Davis with his two veſſels, ſailed from thence on the 28th, and continued his courſe to the north-weſt, till on the 19th of July, they came into a whirling tide, which ſet northwards, and ſailing about half a league, into a very calm ſea, they heard a prodigious roaring, as if it had been the beach of ſome ſhore, which was the more terrible, as the weather was ſo foggy that they could not ſee from one ſhip to the other, though they were at a ſmall diſtance. Upon this, the Moonſhine was ordered to ſound, but not being able to find ground with a line of upwards of 300 fathoms, the captain, the maſter, and Mr. Jane, who wrote

the account, went towards the beach to ſee what it was, when they found it to be ſeveral iſlands of ice broke loſe and floating in the ſea; they got out upon theſe, and when they returned to their boat, carried ſeveral large pieces of ice with them, which melted into very good freſh water.

On the 20th the fog diſperſing, they diſcovered the land, which reſembled a ſugar-loaf, and made ſo uncomfortable, or rather ſo horrid an appearance, that capt. Davis called it the Land of Deſolation. On the 21ſt they were forced to bend their courſe to the ſouth to clear themſelves of the ice, after which they ran along the ſhore.

On the 24th the captain, to encourage the men, cauſed their allowance to be increaſed; but the weather was far from being very cold, for though it was pretty ſharp when the wind blew from the ſhore, it was very hot when it blew from the ſea. On the 25th they bore away north-weſt, and continued their courſe for four days; and on the 29th diſcovered land in the latitude of 64°. 15'. with the ſea quite free from ice, and the weather very temperate.

Upon viewing the coaſt, they found many pleaſant bays and commodious ports: they however, judged it not a continued land, but rather an Archipelago, and therefore reſolved to go on ſhore on one of the ſmall iſlands, in order to ſearch for wood and water, and to gain a better knowledge of the country. But they had no ſooner landed, than they found evident marks of the country's being inhabited, for there lay upon the ground a ſmall ſhoe, ſeveral pieces of leather ſewed with ſinews, and a piece of fur like beaver.

They went next upon another iſland, where getting upon an high rock, they were ſeen by the people of the country, who inſtantly ſet up a moſt hideous howling, which the Engliſh perceiving, hallowed out to their companions to let them know

what had happened. Upon this, Capt. Bruton of the Moonſhine came to their aſſiſtance with a good number of his ſeamen. Soon after their arrival, ten canoes full of the natives came from a neighbouring iſland, two of which advanced ſo near the ſhore, that the Engliſh on land could eaſily talk with them. The language of theſe people was much in the throat, and their pronunciation harſh and unpleaſant. One of them, however, ſeemed inclined to come on ſhore, but firſt pointed to the ſun, and then ſtruck his breaſt ſo hard that they could hear the blow, upon which Mr. John Elias, maſter of the Moonſhine, was appointed to treat with him, and therefore going to the ſea ſide, pointed to the ſun and ſtruck his breaſt, as the ſavage had done, who at length ventured on ſhore, and they threw him caps, ſtockings, gloves, and ſuch other things as they thought would pleaſe him; but the night drawing on they took their leave on both ſides.

The next morning thirty-ſeven canoes rowing by the ſhips, called to the Engliſh to go on ſhore, but the latter being in no great haſte, one of the Indians leaped upon land, and ran to the top of a rock, where to ſhew his joy, he danced and beat a drum. The Engliſh then manned their boats, and went to them to the water ſide, where they waited in their canoes; and after the formal ceremony of ſwearing by the ſun, the natives made no ſcruple of truſting them, but on the contrary, ſhewed all poſſible ſigns of kindneſs, and even of politeneſs; for when the author offered to ſhake hands with one of them, the Indian firſt took his hand and kiſſed it. They readily parted with any thing they were aſked for, and were content with whatever was given them, ſhewing no ſigns of greedineſs, and not the leaſt appearance of treachery. The Engliſh bought five of their canoes. and ſeveral of their ſtockings and gowns, ſome of

Shallus fc.

Ten Canoes of Natives of an Island near the land of Desolation come & traffick with Captn. Davis.

which were made of ſeal, and others of birds ſkins, all of them well dreſſed and neatly made, ſo that it plainly appeared, they had ſome trades among them. They had plenty of furs, and on their ſeeing that they pleaſed the Engliſh, informed them by ſigns, that they would go up into the country and bring them more; but the wind proving fair in the night, Capt. Davis ſteered ſtill farther to the north-weſt; and on the 6th of Auguſt entered a very fine road free from ice, in the latitude of 66°. 46. where they landed under a high mountain, the clefts of which ſhone like gold.

Mr. Davis having here taken a view of every thing round him, began to think of beſtowing names on the places he had diſcovered: he therefore gave to the mountain the name of Mount Raleigh, the road where the ſhip lay he called Totneſs road; the ſound at the foot of the mountain, Exeter ſound; the north foreland, Dyer's Cape; and the ſouth foreland, Walſingham. They here diſcovered four white bears of a prodigious ſize, two of which they killed and brought on board, the fore paw of one of them meaſuring fourteen inches. They ſaw a raven upon mount Raleigh, and at the bottom of the hill found ſome ſhrubs and flowers like primroſes: the coaſt however was very mountainous, and entirely barren, affording neither wood nor graſs, nor ſo much as earth; for the mountains were all ſtone, and that the fineſt our author had ever ſeen. The inland part of the country was probably fertile, ſince the bears were very fat, and yet it appeared upon opening their ſtomach, and upon viewing their dung, that they were not ravenous, but fed upon graſs.

On the 8th they weighed from mount Raleigh, and three days after came to the moſt ſoutherly point of the land, which they called the Cape of God's Mercy, and here they were ſurpriſed with

a very thick fog, upon the breaking up of which they found themſelves in a ſtreight, that was in ſome places ſixty miles broad, and in others ninety; the weather was very fine and temperate, and the water of the ſame colour with that of the ocean, which filled them with hopes of finding a paſſage. They ſailed ſixty leagues through this ſtreight, and then diſcovered ſeveral iſlands in the midſt of it, by which they ſailed, one bark taking the north and the other the ſouth ſide, but the wind changing, and the weather growing foggy and foul, they were forced to lie by for five days in the paſſage, ſince called Davis's Streights.

On the 14th they went on ſhore, and ſaw evident marks of the country's being inhabited, for they found part of a ſtone wall, and an human ſkull. The next day they heard a great howling on the ſhore, which they ſuppoſed to be made by the wolves, and therefore landed in order to kill them; but inſtead of wolves they found only dogs, that came running to the boats, wagging their tails, and ſhewing other ſigns of joy, as it is uſual with thoſe animals at the ſight of men: there were twenty of them in all, and being of the ſize of maſtiffs, with ſhort ears and long buſhy tails, the ſeamen were afraid of them, and firing killed two, one of which had a leather collar: they alſo found two ſledges, one made of ſeveral boards, and the other of whale-bone. They likewiſe ſaw larks, ravens and partridges.

On the 17th they went on ſhore again, and in a place reſembling an oven, which was built with ſtones, they found a ſmall canoe, an image, a bird made of bone, beads for necklaces and other trifles. The coaſt made no very promiſing appearance, as having neither wood nor graſs, but the rocks were of a fine bright ſtone like marble, beautified with veins of different colours.

Captain Davis was extremely pleaſed with the appearance of this ſtreight, which they took to be the very channel into the South Seas, in ſearch whereof they came. It was therefore reſolved to continue the proſecution of their diſcoveries; but the wind changing, they were obliged to remain at anchor; and the weather growing very foul, they on the 24th hoiſted ſail for England. On the 10th of September, they fell in with the land of Deſolation; on the 27th they had ſight of the Engliſh coaſt, and in a ſtorm at night, were parted from the Moonſhine. However, on the 30th Captain Davis returned to Dartmouth, where he found the Moonſhine, which had arrived in that harbour two hours before.

Mr. Davis's owners were ſo well ſatisfied with his conduct in this voyage, that they procured him an audience of Secretary Walſingham, who not only greatly approved of the enterprize, and of the manner in which it was conducted, but recommended his completing the diſcovery; to this he was alſo preſſed by thoſe concerned in the above undertaking, and by ſome merchants of Exeter, who deſired to join in the expences neceſſary for a ſecond expedition: and he having willingly conſented, the following ſquadron was fitted out: the Mermaid of 120 tons; the Sunſhine of 60 tons; the Moonſhine of 55 tons; and the North Star, a pinnace of 13 tons.

Captain Davis ſet ſail with the above ſquadron from Dartmouth, on the 7th of May, 1586, and having coaſted the ſouth ſide of Ireland, ſteered to the north-weſt, till he came into the latitude of 60°. when he divided the ſquadron, and ordered the Sunſhine and the North Star, to ſeek a paſſage northward, between Greenland and Ireland to the latitude of 80°. if not hindered by land. He left them on the 7th of June, and on the 15th diſcovered land in 60°. latitude, and in 47°. weſt lon-

gitude from the meridian of London. The ice lying ſome places ten, in others twenty, and in ſome fifty leagues off the ſhore, which obliged him to bear into the 57°. in order to get a free ſea.

On the 29th, after many ſtorms, he again diſcovered land in latitude 64°. and in longitude 58°. 30. when bearing in with it, he ſet up a pinnace, he had provided in the Mermaid, to ſerve as a ſcout in the diſcovery. The ſhips being within the ſound, he ſent his boats to ſearch for ſhoal water, where he might come to an anchor, which in this place is very hard to find. The people of the country ſeeing the Engliſh, came in their canoes, with ſhouts and cries; when obſerving in the boat ſome of thoſe who were there laſt year, they rowed up to them, and taking hold of the oars, and hanging about the boat, expreſſed great joy, making ſigns that they knew them again. Captain Davis then went on ſhore with others of the company, taking twenty knives with him, and they had no ſooner landed than the friendly natives leaping out of their canoes, ran to them, and embraced them with many ſigns of a hearty welcome. There were eighteen of them, and Mr. Davis giving each of them a knife, they offered him ſkins in return; but making ſigns that they were not ſold, but freely given, he diſmiſſed them for that time.

The next day the pinnace was landed upon an iſland in order to be finiſhed; and while it was ſetting up, the people came continually to them, there being ſometimes 100 canoes at a time, bringing ſeal-ſkin, ſtag-ſkins, white hares, ſalmon-peal, ſmall cod, dry copelin, with other fiſh, and ſome birds. Capt. Davis then ſent one of the boats to ſearch one part of the land, while he went to another, but firſt gave ſtrict orders that no injury ſhould be offered to any of the natives, nor any gun fired.

The men whom the Captain diſpatched in the boat, paſſed ten miles within the ſnowy mountains, and came to a plain champaign country covered with earth and graſs, and went about ten leagues up a river, which in the narroweſt place was two leagues over, but knew not how far it extended.

Mean while the Captain took what he ſuppoſed, another river, which though at it firſt afforded a large inlet, yet proved only a deep bay, the end of which he reached in four hours, when leaving the boat well manned, he went with the reſt of the company three or four miles into the country, but found nothing, nor ſaw any thing but ſnipes, ravens, and ſmall birds, ſuch as larks and linnets.

On the 3d of July, Capt. Davis manned his boat, and attended by 50 canoes, entered another ſound, to which the people invited him by ſigns, and he conſented, in hopes of finding their place of reſidence. At laſt they made ſigns that he ſhould go into a warm place to ſleep, upon this he went on ſhore.

Theſe people are of good ſtature, and are well proportioned. They have broad faces, ſmall eyes, wide mouths, and large lips; but their hands and feet are ſmall and ſlender. They are very ſubject to bleed at the noſe, and therefore ſtop their noſes with deers hair. One of them kindled a fire after the following manner; he took a piece of board in which was a hole half through, and having ſmeared the end of a round ſtick, like a bed-ſtaff, with train-oil, put it into the hole, and then turning it round with a piece of leather, ſomething in the manner of our turners, by the violence of the motion, ſoon produced fire, upon which he laid an heap of turfs, and then with many words and ſtrange geſtures, put ſeveral things into the flames, which the Engliſh ſuppoſed to be intended as a ſacrifice. They then deſired the Captain to go

into the ſmoke, which he deſiring them to do, and they refuſing, he thruſt one of them into it, and then commanded his men to tread out the fire, and ſpurn it into the ſea, to ſhew their contempt for this ſorcery.

They eat their meat raw; and live moſtly upon fiſh, which they catch with nets made of whale fins. They probably make war on their neighbours on the continent: for many of them were much wounded, and let the Engliſh know by their ſigns, that they received them upon the main land.

But though theſe people behaved with great ſimplicity, they appeared extremely addicted to theiving, particularly of iron, for which they had a very great eſteem, for they cut away the Moonſhine's boat from her ſtern, and alſo the cables and cloth which lay to air, ſtole the oars, a caliver, a ſpear, a ſword, and ſeveral other things, which ſo exaſperated the ſailors, that they deſired the captain to diſſolve this new friendſhip, upon which he ordered a caliver to be ſhot among them, and immediately after a falcon, when they were ſo frightened with the noiſe, that they inſtantly fled. However, about ten hours after, they returned, making ſigns of peace, and this being granted, they brought ſeal-ſkins and ſalmon-peal; but on their ſeeing iron could not forbear ſtealing again; which the captain perceiving, commanded that they ſhould not be treated with ſeverity, and that his own people ſhould be more careful in keeping what was under their charge.

On the 17th of July the captain went on ſhore in his new pinnace, and with moſt part of the company walked to the top of a high mountain, with the hopes of taking a view from thence of the country; but the number and heights of the mountains bounded their proſpect in ſuch a manner, that they could ſee but a ſmall diſtance; they

therefore returned to their pinnace, where they obſerved a water-ſpout, which at that time was conſidered as a very ſtrange and aſtoniſhing ſight.

On the 19th they returned to their ſhips, where the ſailors complained heavily of the people, who had not only ſtolen an anchor, and cut one of the cables, but had thrown ſtones at them. However, the next day the captain went on ſhore, and treated the natives with much civility, which removing their apprehenſions, they at his return followed him in their canoes. He then gave them ſome bracelets, and ſeven or eight of them going on board, were uſed kindly, and afterwards ſuffered to depart; and yet the ſun had no ſooner ſet, than taking their ſlings, they threw ſtones into the Sunſhine, and knocked down the boatſwain. Upon this the Engliſh purſued them in their boats, and even fired upon them; but they rowed ſo ſwiftly, that it was impoſſible to overtake them. However, a few days after five of them came to make a new truce, among whom was the ringleader of theſe diſturbances, who came crying Iliaout, and ſtriking his breaſt, offered a pair of gloves to ſell, upon which a knife was offered for them, when two of them coming up, the Engliſh diſmiſſed one of them, and kept the other priſoner. They then pointed to him and his fellows for their anchor, which having got, they made ſigns to him that he ſhould be ſet at liberty, but about an hour after the wind coming fair, they ſet ſail, and took him away with them. One of his companions followed the ſhip in his canoe, talked with him, and ſeemed to lament his condition; but the Engliſh uſing him well, and ſaying Iliaout, that is, We mean no harm, he in a ſhort time became a pleaſant companion. Capt. Davis then gave him a new ſuit of frize of the Engliſh faſhion, with which he ſeemed highly pleaſed. He ſoon trimmed up his darts, and all his fiſhing tools, was very ready at making oakum, and willingly ſet his hand to the rope.

On the 17th, being in the latitude of 63° 8, they imagined they ſaw a very high land, which had ſeveral bays and capes, and therefore ſent out their pinnace to diſcover it; but on her return, they were aſſured that it was no more than a prodigious maſs of ice. This they coaſted till the 30th, when the air grew ſo foggy, and the ſea ſo peſtered with ice, that all hopes of proceeding were baniſhed.

In this extremity the men beginning to grow ſick and feeble, and to loſe all hopes of ſucceſs, earneſtly entreated the captain to preſerve his own and their lives, by returning to England: but though he commiſerated their condition, he reſolved to proſecute the diſcovery; yet he altered his courſe, and on the firſt of Auguſt diſcovered land, without either ſnow or ice, in the latitude of 66°. 33. and in 76. longitude from London.

On the 2d of Auguſt, they anchored in a very good road, where they graved and re-victualled the Moonſhine. They here found it very hot, and were much troubled with muſketoes. The people of the country having caught a ſeal, tied bladders to him, and ſent him to the Engliſh with the flood, ſo that he came right up with the ſhip, and this the captain took as a friendly preſent. On the 5th Capt. Davis walked up to the top of a hill, and obſerving three canoes under a rock, went to them, and found in them ſkins, darts, &c. but without taking any thing, he left in every boat a ſilk point, a leaden bullet, and a pin.

The next day the natives came to them without fear, and bartered with them for ſkins. Mean while the Indian kept cloſe, and by ſigns let them know, that he was very deſirous of having another companion.

On the 11th Capt. Davis departed, leaving the Mermaid at anchor, whoſe crew finding many occaſions of diſcontent, were unwilling to proceed. Two days after, ſailing weſt fifty leagues, they

diſcovered land in 66°. 19. and the next day ſtood to the ſouth. On the 18th, they diſcovered a promontory to the north-weſt, and having no land on the ſouth were in great hopes of a paſſage. They then coaſted an iſland towards the ſouth from 67 to 57°. and on the 28th diſtruſting the weather, ſailed ten leagues into a fine harbour, two leagues broad, with woods on both ſides. Here they continued till the 1ſt of September, in which time they had two very great ſtorms. The captain and ſome perſons with him went ſix miles into the country, and found the woods conſiſted of firs, pines, elders, yews, and birch-trees. In this excurſion they ſaw a black bear, and plenty of birds, as pheaſants and partridges, wild-geeſe, blackbirds, jays, thruſhes, and other ſmall birds.

They now coaſted the ſhore with fair weather, and on the ſouth anchored in a good road among many iſlands. Eight leagues to the north of this place, they had hopes of a paſſage from obſerving a prodigious ſea, rolling between the two lands from the weſt, and they had a great deſire to enter this ſea; but the wind was directly againſt them.

On the 6th they ſent five young men on ſhore to another iſland to fetch ſome fiſh, which they had left there covered all night. But the natives who had concealed themſelves in the woods, ſuddenly aſſaulted the men, which being perceived from the ſhip, thoſe on board let ſlip their cable, bore in to the ſhore, and twice diſcharged a double muſket upon them, at the noiſe whereof they fled, after their having killed two of the men with their arrows, and wounded two more; the other narrowly eſcaped by ſwimming with an arrow ſhot through his arm.

Having that night a moſt dreadful ſtorm, that laſted till the 10th, they unrigged their ſhip, and intended to cut down their maſts; and as the cable of their ſheet anchor broke, they expected to have

been driven on ſhore, and murdered by the natives; but having afterwards a fair ſea, they recovered their anchor, and new moored their ſhip, when they were fully ſenſible of their great deliverance, two ſtrands of their cable being broken.

On the 11th, the wind coming fair at weſt-north-weſt, they ſteered directly for England, where they arrived in the beginning of October. The Sunſhine had returned a few days before them. She had been at Iceland, and from thence to Greenland, afterwards to Eſtoitland, and thence to the Land of Deſolation, where ſhe traded with the people, and ſtaid in the country twenty days. But they had loſt the pinnace called the North Star, in a ſtorm, and never heard of her more.

Capt. Davis was afterwards ſent on another voyage to make diſcoveries, with three ſhips, two of which were to be employed in fiſhing, while the other endeavoured to find out a paſſage to the South Seas, and in this voyage he reached the latitude of 73°. north, where he found the ſea all open, and the ſtreight forty leagues broad, whence he concluded, that the paſſage was moſt certain, and the execution eaſy, in which he was miſtaken.

We ſhall now mention an attempt made for fixing a ſettlement farther to the ſouth than any we have yet obtained.

CHAPTER VI.

Sir Walter Raleigh ſails with a ſmall ſquadron in order to diſcover Guiana: Arrives at the iſland of Trinidad, where he burns the town of St. Joſeph, and ſets five Indian kings at liberty. Proceeding towards Guiana, he enters the mouth of the river with a detachment of 100 men in boats: rejoins his ſhips, and after burning ſeveral Spaniſh towns, returns to England. A conciſe account of his ſending ſeveral other ſhips to Guiana.

SIR Walter Raleigh had ſeen with regret the plantation of Virginia abandoned, and well knew that the want of immediate profit was the cauſe, he reſolved therefore to ſtrike out the means of ſettling a new colony in another part of America, that ſhould be free from this inconvenience, and transfer the richeſt products of that country to the Engliſh, if they had but courage and conduct enough to fetch them. In order to this, he enquired with the greateſt diligence into the ſtate of Guiana. He ſought from books and papers all the aſſiſtance that could be had of that kind; and drew from perſonal informations, which were more in his power, than perhaps they ever were in any other man's, all the notices they were capable of giving. But he drew the greateſt lights from his own profound knowledge and extenſive experience.

In order to proceed cautiouſly in an affair of ſuch importance, he ſent before him one Capt. Whiddon, to take a view of the coaſt, that he might be perfectly informed of the ſtate things were then in, and become more able to take the proper meaſures for overcoming thoſe difficulties, which a man of leſs ſagacity would have deemed inſuperable. This gentleman performed his bu-

ſineſs effectually, though he met with ſome obſtructions from the force, and much greater inconveniencies from the frauds of the Spaniards, who were at that time endeavouring to ſecure to themſelves this valuable country, particularly Don Antonio de Berreo, with whom Capt. Whiddon had ſome dealings, got eight of his men into his hands, whom he uſed with great barbarity.

When Sir Walter's project was ripe for execution, he was aſſiſted by the Lord Admiral Howard, and Sir Robert Cecil; and five ſhips were fitted out for this expedition. Sir Walter, however, left Plymouth on the 6th of February, 1595, with only one bark beſides the veſſel in which he himſelf ſailed, and on the 22d of March arrived at the iſland of Trinidad, where he ſpent a conſiderable time in viewing that iſland, in examining all its ports and havens, and even every little creek, with the greateſt care and exactneſs.

Here was a Spaniſh ſettlement, and a new city called St. Joſeph, governed by the above Don Antonio de Berreo, a man of courage and reſolution, but very unfit to proſecute diſcoveries. On this governor Sir Walter reſolved to be revenged, for his treatment of Capt. Whiddon's people, by making himſelf maſter of the place, which he knew would gain him the friendſhip, and ſecure the obedience of the Indians, who were moſt cruelly oppreſſed by the Spaniards.

He accordingly ſent Capt. Calfield to attack the main guard with ſixty men, and following with forty more, reduced the town of St. Joſeph without much trouble. He then ſet the inhabitants at liberty, and in particular many Indian captives, among whom were five caciques, who were linked together in one chain, and confined in a place where they were almoſt ſtarved with hunger. Theſe unhappy princes had ſuffered the ſevereſt torments, for they had been baſted with the ſcalding fat of ba-

con, and endured a variety of other cruelties. He kept the governor and his Spaniards priſoners, and afterwards, at the requeſt of the Indians, burnt the place: but in other reſpects behaved towards his priſoners, and particularly towards the governor, with ſuch civility, that he drew from him a faithful account of all his adventures in attempting the conqueſt of Guiana.

The ſame day arrived to Sir Walter's aſſiſtance, Capt. Giffard, in the Lion's-Whelp, and Capt. Keymis, in a galego, with ſeveral gentlemen and ſoldiers, and ſome uſeful ſupplies. But before Sir Walter would proceed on his diſcoveries, he ſummoned an aſſembly of the Indian chiefs of the iſland, who were enemies to the Spaniards, and told them by an Indian interpreter, whom he had brought out of England, that he was the ſervant of a virgin queen, who was the moſt powerful cacique in the north, and had more caciques under her command than there were trees in that iſland. That ſhe was an enemy to the Caſtilians, on account of their tyranny and oppreſſion, and having freed all the coaſts of the northern world from their ſervitude, had ſent him to free them alſo: and to defend the country of Guiana from their future invaſions. He then ſhewed them the queen's picture, which they greatly admired. By theſe and other ſpeeches of the ſame kind, both here and on the borders of Guiana, he made the people familiarly acquainted with the name and virtues of the queen, and at the ſame time ſtrongly engaged them in his intereſt.

Sir Walter now prepared to proceed towards Guiana, though Berreo uſed many arguments to diſſuade him from engaging in that enterprize. He told him, that he muſt venture to paſs many dangerous ſhallows in ſmall boats, without being able to carry proviſions ſufficient to laſt him half the way; that he muſt not expect the leaſt ſuccour

from the natives of the countries through which he paſſed, who would not admit of a parley; but would burn their towns, and retire to their fortreſſes: that they had been enjoined by their chiefs not to barter gold, nor to hold any communication with chriſtians, as the only means to preſerve them from deſtruction: beſides, that the way was long, winter was approaching, and the rivers beginning to ſwell.

Notwithſtanding theſe remonſtrances, Sir Walter directed his Vice-Admiral Captain Giffard, and Captain Calfield, to ſteer into the mouth of the river Capuri, and at the higheſt flood to paſs over the ſhoal; but this they found impracticable, the water falling before they could accompliſh it. He then ſent the maſter of the Lion's Whelp to try another branch called Amana, in order to know if either of the ſmall veſſels could enter; but he met with no better ſucceſs. Sir Walter now cauſed his carpenter to cut down an old galego boat, and to fit her with banks for oars, in ſuch a manner as to draw but five feet water.

In this veſſel he embarked with ſixty of his people, and was followed by the ſhallop and boat of the Lion's Whelp, carrying twenty; Captain Calfield's ſhallop carrying ten, and a barge of his own, ten more; having in all 100 men well armed, with proviſions for a month. Their accommodations were extremely bad, being expoſed to the weather, and obliged to endure the burning heat of the ſun and ſtorms of rain, to lie upon the hard boards, to bear the diſagreeable ſmell of the wet cloaths of many people crouded together, and the dreſſing of their food, which moſtly conſiſted of ſtale fiſh, ſo that no priſon could be more loathſome and unhealthy.

At firſt ſetting out they had twenty miles of an high ſea to croſs in their crazy boats, and were driven by the wind into the bottom of the bay of

Gauanipa, inhabited by a barbarous nation who uſed poiſoned arrows. From thence they entered one of the rivers, and after four days, got above the force of the tide; but they were there bewildered by ſuch a confluence of ſtreams, that they were whirled about by different currents and eddies, ſo that after toiling a long time, they were brought back to the place they had been ſtriving to avoid, or from which they ſet out, paſſing between iſlands and ſtreights, ſo overſhadowed with trees, that their ſight was bounded by the breadth of the river, and the length of the avenue, while the gloomineſs of the proſpect added horror to the loathſomeneſs of the places in which they were confined.

At length on the 22d of May, they entered a river, and not knowing any other name for it, called it the Red Croſs River: here they put into a creek which led to a town at a ſmall diſtance, where their Indian pilot going on ſhore, was ſet upon by his countrymen, who hunted him with dogs. In return, Sir Walter ſeized an old man who was paſſing that way, and threatened to cut off his head if he did not procure his pilot's liberty; but the pilot by his agility ſoon eſcaped them, and ſwam to Sir Walter's barge; they, however, kept the old man, whom they uſed with the utmoſt kindneſs, in hopes of obtaining many uſeful informations from a native who had been long acquainted with thoſe parts; and indeed he was of great uſe in guiding through the intricacies of the rivers, though he himſelf was often in the utmoſt perplexity which river to take.

The people who inhabit the country at the mouth of this great river, were called Tivetivas, and were a bold and hardy race of people, who knew the value of liberty, and had the courage to defend it. During the ſummer they live in houſes, built on the ground: but in the wet or winter

months, dwell in huts built upon trees, as is very common both on this coaſt, and even in the Eaſt-Indies, where the countries are ſubject to be overflowed.

Some time after, Sir Walter's barge ran a ground with ſuch force, that they deſpaired of getting her off, ſo that the diſcovery ſeemed at a ſtand; however, four days after, they again ſet her on float, and ſtriking into the Amana, one of the nobleſt branches of the Oronoko, the men with incredible fatigue continued their voyage, and being now within 5° of the line, Sir Walter endeavoured to keep up their ſpirits by directing his pilots to give them hopes, that their labours would ſoon have an end.

At length the old Indian perceiving that their proviſions were exhauſted, and that they muſt periſh without an immediate ſupply, told them, that if they would venture up a river on the right hand, he would bring them to a town where they might be ſure of refreſhments, and be able to return before night. Sir Walter took him at his word; but he amuſed them all day and the greateſt part of the night, without their ſeeing any town, ſo that a leſs prudent commander might have puniſhed him for impoſing upon them. However, about one of the next morning they reached this long expected town, and obtained the ſupplies of which they ſtood in ſuch need. In this hungry and hazardous voyage, which was fourſcore miles up the river, they obſerved many fiſhes of a ſurprizing ſize, and abundance of alligators, one of which devoured a young negro who attended Sir Walter, and who leaped into the water to refreſh himſelf by ſwimming.

Soon after, being again in want of proviſions, they took two canoes laden with excellent bread, belonging to the Indians called Arwaycas, who run them on ſhore, and took refuge in the woods:

when Sir Walter purſuing them, in hopes of obtaining ſome intelligence, found, as his men were creeping through the buſhes, a refiner's baſket, in which were quick-ſilver, ſaltpetre, and other things, uſed in refining of metals, together with ſome gold duſt, that had been refined from the ore.

Sir Walter then landed more of his men, and offered 500l. to any of his ſoldiers who ſhould take one of the Spaniards: but this they were unable to perform, they, however, diſcovered the Arwaycas concealed in the woods, who had ſerved as pilots to the Spaniſh adventurers, and who informed him, that they had been accompanied by two other canoes, laden with gold ore, which had eſcaped. One of theſe people he kept for his own pilot, and from him learned, where, when, and how the Spaniards worked for gold. Having here ſufficiently refreſhed his companions; they appeared as well ſatisfied as their commander, and promiſed to follow him to the end of the world.

On the 15th day from their leaving their ſhips, Sir Walter and his men entered the great river Oronoko, and obtained a true account of the nations inhabiting its banks; they then ſteered by the mountain Aio and a large iſland, and on the 5th day after their entering the above river, came to an anchor at Morequito, in the province of Aromaia, 300 miles within land.

He here ſent a meſſenger to the king of Aromaia, who, the next morning, came on foot from his houſe, and returned the ſame evening, though he was 110 years of age, and his journey was twenty-eight miles. This old monarch had a large train of attendants of both ſexes, who brought great plenty of fleſh, fiſh, and ſeveral ſorts of fruits. The old king having refreſhed himſelf a-while in a tent, which Sir Walter had cauſed to be pitched for him, they entered by

means of the interpreter, into a diſcourſe on the murder of Morequito, his predeceſſor, and the other barbarities of the Spaniards. Sir Walter then told him the deſign of his coming thither, and expatiated on the virtues of his queen, whoſe greateſt ambition, he obſerved, was to relieve diſtreſſed nations, and humble the pride of the Spaniards, which were her only motives for ſending him to Guiana.

The old man liſtened to him with great attention, and on his aſking him many queſtions relating to the ſtrength, polity, alliances, and government of Guiana, with the readieſt way of entering into the heart of the country, the king replied in ſo clear and ſenſible a manner, that Sir Walter could not help being ſurprized at finding a perſon of ſuch judgment and good ſenſe, who had received none of the advantages of education. Some of the king's attendants made Sir Walter a preſent of a ſmall but curious kind of parroquito, and of an animal then ſcarcely known, called the armadilla, whoſe head, body, and tail are covered with hard and beautiful ſcales. The form of the head is like that of a hog, the feet reſemble hands, and the tail is near four inches thick at the root, tapering to the end.

After the king's departure, Sir Walter ſailed weſtward to the river Caroli, becauſe it led to the ſtrongeſt nations of all the frontiers, who were enemies to the Epuremei, the ſubjects of the Inca or Emperor of Guiana and Manoa. Long before he came to it, he heard the roaring occaſioned by the falls of this river; but on his entering it, in order to proceed forty miles up to the Caſiagotos, he found the ſtream ſo rapid, that he could not advance with his eight oared barge above a ſtone's throw in an hour. He therefore encamped on the banks, and ſent an Indian to acquaint the Lords of Canuri, who dwelt in that province, of his arrival.

Upon this meſſage, one of the princes named Wanuretona, attended by a numerous train of followers, came to viſit him, bringing great plenty of refreſhments: from him he learned that a nation called the Carolians, were enemies both to the Spaniards and Epuremei, and that there were mighty nations at the head of that river, and were of the ſame diſpoſition.

Upon this intelligence, he diſpatched a party of between thirty and forty men up the ſide of the river, while he himſelf, with a few officers, and half a dozen men armed with muſquets, marched to take a view of the cataracts of the river Caroli.

From the top of the firſt hills that commanded a view of the river, they beheld a prodigious cataract, beneath which, the water divided into three ſtreams, and ran with amazing rapidity upwards of twenty miles; for ſo far they imagined they were able to take in the proſpect. In this courſe no leſs than ten or a dozen more appeared in view, each as high above the other as a church ſteeple, whence the water ruſhed down with ſuch violence, that the vapours ariſing from the rebound, were like the thick ſmoke hanging over well-inhabited cities; but on their nearer approach, where they could better diſcern and diſtinguiſh, the effects reſembled heavy ſhowers of rain; while the prodigious roaring of theſe torrents, at leaſt equalled the noiſe of thunder.

Sir Walter Raleigh obſerves, that he never ſaw a more beautiful country, nor more delightful proſpects: The valleys were interſperſed with hills, and the waters winding through them in various branches; the plains free from brambles, were covered with fine graſs; the ſoil was an hard ſand, fit for either walking or carriage; the deer croſſing every path; and towards evening the birds ſinging on every tree a thouſand different notes; while on the banks of the rivers, were cranes,

herons, white crimſon, and carnation; the air was refreſhed with gentle eaſtern breezes, and every ſtone they ſtooped to take up, ſeemed to be intermixed with gold or ſilver. Sir Walter afterwards ſhewing ſome of theſe ſtones to a Spaniard of the Caraccas, was told they were the mother of gold, and though of ſmall value themſelves, were a proof of there being mines at no great diſtance.

There were now many reaſons which rendered their ſtay improper. The rains were ſo heavy, and the floods poured ſo ſuddenly from the hills, that they were ſometimes before night up to the neck in water, upon the very ſpots of ground over which in the morning they had marched dry-ſhod. The men had worn their clothes above a month without a change, or being in any other manner refreſhed, but by the rains which frequently waſhed them ten times a day on the owners backs. They had beſides no inſtruments with them to open mines, and if they advanced farther, were to act againſt a numerous civilized, and warlike people. Theſe and many other inconveniences, made them reſolve to make the beſt of their way back to the ſhips, from which they had now been abſent above a month, and had in that ſpace proceeded about 400 miles from the ſea coaſt.

They therefore embarked in their boats, and though the wind was againſt them, arrived in a day's time at the port of Morequito; for gliding down the ſtream, they went without labour little leſs than 100 miles a day. Sir Walter on his coming to an anchor, was very deſirous of having another conference with the old king, who ſoon arrived with a numerous train, loaded with preſents, when Sir Walter having taken him into his tent, enquired the beſt way to the richeſt parts of Guiana. The old cacique intimated to him, that he ought not to think of penetrating to Manoa, the capital; for neither the ſeaſon of the year, nor

the ſmall number of his men, were proper for the enterprize: That in the plains of Magureguarai, the firſt civilized town of Guiana, 300 Spaniards had been lately ſlain; as they had invaded it, without having made any friends among thoſe nations, who were ready to join in any attempts againſt the kingdom of Guiana, and therefore adviſed Sir Walter not to invade the ſtrong parts of Guiana, without obtaining the aſſiſtance of thoſe nations, who were their enemies. The king alſo informed him, that he believed he might, with his preſent force, ſeize on the town of Magureguarai, where all the gold plates were made that were diſperſed through the neighbouring nations, and which was but four days journey from thence, and offered to aſſiſt him with his ſubjects, provided fifty Engliſhmen were left behind for his guard; but Sir Walter declining the expedition, the king begged him to leave his territories as ſoon as poſſible, leſt the Epuremei ſhould learn that he had given him any aſſiſtance, or the Spaniards ſhould return and inſult him; they having once before taken him priſoner, and led him ſeventeen days in chains, till he had paid 100 plates of gold for his ranſom. But if Sir Walter would promiſe to return early the next year, he would engage all the neighbouring nations to aſſiſt him againſt the Epuremei, who had plundered them of their wives, and aſſured him, they would gladly renew the war to recover them; for the old king complained grievouſly, that the Epuremei poſſeſſed from 50 to 100 women each, while he and his principal ſubjects had but three or four wives a-piece.

Sir Walter, while he ſtayed here, obtained many images and plates of gold, not ſo much for the value, as to ſhew them as ſamples; and to prevent theſe people from entertaining a notion, that he came for gold, he gave among them more twenty ſhilling pieces of the queen's coin, than they were

worth. He alſo took with him ſome of the ſpar and ore, to juſtify his report of the riches of the country; and as the higheſt teſtimony of his having obtained the confidence of the natives, the old king ſent over his own ſon Cayworaco into England, where he was afterwards baptized, with much ceremony, by the name of Gualtero.

On the other hand, Sir Walter at their own requeſt left behind him two of his company, an excellent draughtſman who undertook to deſcribe, as he did, all the country very exactly, and a boy who waited upon Sir Walter, and who was to learn the languages of the Indian nations, which he did to great perfection; but was unfortunately devoured by a wild beaſt.

After this a cacique whoſe name was Putoma, and another called Warapana, offered to conduct him to a gold mine, which they accordingly performed, but the weather being extremely bad, Sir Walter reſolved to return as expeditiouſly as poſſible to his ſhips; but in his paſſage was overtaken by a violent ſtorm, and had like to have been loſt among the ſhoals, being obliged to quit his galley, and take to his boat, with which he ventured out upon a very boiſterous ſea; however, he was the next day ſo happy as to reach Curiapa in the iſland of Trinidad, where his ſhips lay at anchor, and where he was ſoon joined by his galley.

In all this tedious and ſurpriſing expedition, in which they were alike expoſed to the ſeverity of the weather, and to the attempts of their enemies, abſolutely wanting moſt of the conveniences, and frequently the neceſſaries of life, he loſt not a ſingle man, except the negro devoured by the alligator. And yet took a conſiderable quantity of gold ore, which he brought to England, and proving extremely rich, turned to a very good account.

In his return home he burnt the town of Cumana, becauſe the Spaniards refuſed to ſupply him

with proviſions, and two other Spaniſh towns underwent the ſame fate, after which he returned ſafe to England, where he was received with great acclamations of joy.

Capt. Keymis who was one of the adventurers, wrote a latin poem on this expedition, and Mr. George Chapman compoſed an heroic poem of 200 lines on the ſame ſubject, in which he beſtows the greateſt encomiums on the prudence and integrity of Sir Walter, who alſo publiſhed an account of this expedition, written by himſelf.

Notwithſtanding the great ſucceſs of this voyage, and the high probability of eaſily forming a ſettlement in this rich country, Sir Walter's enemies, jealous of his great abilities, endeavoured by the moſt invidious inſinuations to diſcourage all attempts againſt Guiana, by throwing the moſt groundleſs aſperſions on his veracity. Theſe he eaſily anſwered, and immediately fitted out two veſſels under the command of Capt. Keymis, who left England in the latter end of January following, in order to cheriſh the friendſhip he had contracted with the Indians, rather than to purſue any acts of hoſtility. This gentleman, on his arrival at the port of Morequito, received intelligence of the death of the old king, and that the draughtſman who had been left behind had been carried into captivity by the Spaniards, who had made a ſettlement at the mouth of the river Caroli, in the paſſage to the mines, whence Sir Walter had taken ore the preceding year.

Capt. Keymis, therefore, after having had conferences with ſeveral of the natives, who were loud in the praiſes of Sir Walter Raleigh, and expreſſed their inclination to ſupport any meaſures ſet on foot by his countrymen, returned to England, and arrived at Portland in the latter end of June, having been only five months upon the voyage.

Sir Walter ſoon after fitted out an handſome pinnace, and having provided her with all neceſſaries for trade and diſcovery, ſhe ſet ſail from Weymouth the following December, under the command of Capt. Leonard Berry, who about the beginning of March fell in with the river Wiapoco on the coaſt of Guiana, where beginning to be in want of proviſions, and finding no inhabitants, he ſteered to a town called Armatto, at which place he was plentifully ſupplied, and treated with great hoſpitality by the natives, who freely traded with the Engliſh; Capt. Berry then invited a neighbouring cacique named Ritimo, on board his ſhip, who accepted the invitation, and was entertained in a very magnificent manner.

The inhabitants of the neighbouring towns being now convinced that this was an Engliſh veſſel, flocked to the ſea-ſhore from all quarters, bringing plenty of proviſions and tobacco, and appearing perfectly ſatisfied with what was given them in exchange. Theſe eagerly ſolicited the Engliſh to come and drive the Spaniards out of their territories.

This gentleman afterwards ſailed up ſeveral rivers, and having procured all the intelligence poſſible, quitted the coaſt of Guiana, and arrived at Plymouth on the 28th of June, 1597.

CHAPTER VII.

Capt. Leigh forms a ſettlement at Guiana, but ſoon after dying, and his people falling ſick, they return to England, &c. Capt. Harcourt's voyage to Guiana, where he leaves a ſettlement, and returns to England.

THOUGH Sir Walter was at that time prevented from making any farther diſcoveries of this rich country, by the death of the queen, and his

own long impriſonment, yet other attempts were made. In the year 1604, Capt. Charles Leigh being aſſiſted by his brother Sir Olive, made a voyage to Guiana, at their mutual expence, in a bark of about fifty tons, with forty-ſix men and boys on board, and on the 22d of May entered the river Wiapoco, in 8°. 30'. north latitude, intending to fix at the town of the ſame name on the coaſt of Guiana.

The captain was received very kindly by the inhabitants, who conſented to allow him, for the preſent, a ſpace of ground and ſome houſes, in conſideration of which, he was to aſſiſt them againſt their inveterate enemies the Caribbees. This agreement was made by means of two of the natives of Guiana, who had been in England, and could ſpeak ſome Engliſh, and for the better ſecurity of the Indians performing their promiſes, five of them, among whom were two conſiderable perſons, were to be ſent to England.

The firſt ſettlement made by the Engliſh, was on a part of the mountain that lies on the weſt ſide of the entrance of a river, to which they gave the name of mount Howard. Captain Leigh might here have lived a quiet life, and been of great uſe to his country, had not his men been diſcontented and mutinous. However, the next year he ſent his ſhip to England for a freſh ſupply of ſuch things as he wanted, keeping with him 35 of his men and boys, to ſettle his ſmall village, and by this means ſet his colony upon a better footing than it had hitherto been. They had ſome trade with the natives, as well round their ſettlement, as farther up the river, by which they obtained wax, fine white feathers, tobacco, parrots, monkeys, green and black, cotton-yarn, and wool; ſweet gums, red pepper, with ſeveral ſorts of wood, roots, and berries, partly for medicine, and partly for dying: but the flux and other diſtempers, carried off a con-

ſiderable number of the company, and at length the captain himſelf being ſeized with it, alſo died. By this unhappy ſtroke the whole undertaking was ruined, and every one ſhifting for himſelf returned to England, very much to the regret of the Indians; ſome of them in a French ſhip, and others in two Dutch veſſels.

In the mean time, Sir Olive Leigh, reſolving to ſupport his brother in the eſtabliſhment of his government at Guiana, before he had an account of his ſucceſs, fitted out another ſhip under Captain Catalin, and Captain St. John, to carry him a freſh ſupply of men and neceſſaries. This ſhip ſet ſail in April, 1605; but by contrary winds and currents, and the unſkilfulneſs of the maſter, was carried ſo far to the leeward, that the men deſpaired of ever recovering their intended port, and therefore put in firſt at Barbadoes, and afterwards at the iſland of St. Lucia, deſigning to return from thence to England: but examining their ſtores of proviſions, and finding that they were far from being ſufficient to ſupply ſo large a company for ſo long a voyage, Capt. St. John, with ſixty-ſeven of the paſſengers, reſolved rather to ſtay and take their lot upon that iſland, than to run the hazard of being ſtarved at ſea.

The Engliſh ſoon made an acquaintance with the Indians, who in exchange for trifles furniſhed them with roots, fruit, and ſome fowls: and they had every night an opportunity of taking, with very little trouble, the moſt delicate turtle upon the ſands, ſo that they were in no want of food. Five or ſix days they lived in huts of their own building, without making any excurſions into the country; but the captain one day ſeeing ſome pieces of metal upon the arms of ſome of the Indians, and being informed by a refiner in his company, that they were at leaſt three parts gold, he enquired of the Indians from whence they had

them; upon which they pointed to a very high mountain in the north-weſt part of the iſland.

Upon this Capt. St. John, with ſome of the chief of his men, went in queſt of this golden mountain, the reſt being appointed to keep guard at home, with the aſſurance of their returning in a week's time. When they were gone the others expected that the Indians would bring them proviſions as uſual, but they heard nothing of them for three days together.

It ſeems the Indians had obſerved the captain's departure, and following him, cut him off with his whole company: which they had no ſooner done, than they reſolved to ſerve thoſe who ſtaid behind in the ſame manner. For this purpoſe they got one Augramart, a man of reſolution, and captain of the iſland of St. Vincent, to head them in this enterprize. However, to cover their deſign they carried it fair, and frequently viſited the Engliſh, till one day Augramart having dined with them, perſuaded the Engliſh to go with him to his quarters, where he promiſed to furniſh them with whatever proviſions they wanted.

Upon this invitation, a gentleman ſet out with ſeventeen of his men; but the Indians, inſtead of conducting them to their quarters, led them into an ambuſcade, where they were ſurrounded by about 500 of the natives, who diſcharged their arrows at them on all ſides, till the Engliſh, after exerting themſelves as much as was in their power, were all of them ſlain but one, who made his eſcape from this bloody ſlaughter, and was forced to hide himſelf in a wood, whence ſwimming over a lake, with much difficulty he returned home, juſt time enough to alarm his companions; for it was not long before the Indians appeared before their houſes; but the Engliſh diſcharging ſome ſmall pieces of ordnance, they quickly marched off: however, in two or three days they returned, to

the number of 13 or 1400, and after having attacked a little fort and houſes for ſeven days together with ſmall ſucceſs, reſolved to burn them by throwing in fire with their arrows, which in a ſhort time reduced the habitations of the Engliſh to a heap of aſhes. They continued, however, to defend themſelves in ſo brave a manner, that the Indians finding that they could not accompliſh their deſign againſt this handful of men, at laſt abandoned the enterprize.

After their departure, ſome of the neighbouring Indians were prevailed upon to furniſh them with an old pitiful boat for ſome hatchets, knives and beads. This the Engliſh fitted up as well as they could, and nineteen of them, the miſerable remains of ſixty-eight, ventured out to ſea in her, without chart or compaſs, and with only four or five gallons of water, with a few plantains and potatoes, about twenty biſcuits, and a little rice. What was ſtill worſe, they had not one mariner among them, and this little boat was ſo overladen, that her gunnel lay almoſt even with the water.

When they had been ten days at ſea, during which four of the men were obliged by turns to continue ſcooping out the water, they, when all hopes began to fail them, diſcovered land; but on their going on ſhore, found to their unſpeakable diſappointment, that it was an uninhabited iſland which afforded no manner of ſuſtenance. In this miſerable ſtate they had no other remedy, but to ſend five of the men to the continent to ſeek relief. Theſe, after many difficulties reached the main land, and went to an Indian town called Tocoyo, from whence, after being abſent fifteen days, they brought ſuccour to their miſerable companions, who were now reduced to thirteen. By the help of this ſupply they got to a Spaniſh town, called Coro, where they were treated with great humanity, and where two more of them died. Three

of them went from thence to Carthagena, and were followed thither by two more, where they procured a paſſage to Spain; but what became of the reſt does not any where appear.

Notwithſtanding ſuch a ſeries of misfortunes as had attended the attempts made for eſtabliſhing this ſettlement, Robert Harcourt, Eſq. cauſed a ſquadron of three veſſels, commanded by himſelf, to be fitted out; the Roſe, a ſhip of eighty tons; the Patience of thirty-ſix tons, and the Lilly ſhallop of nine tons burden, which ſailed from Dartmouth on the 29th of March, 1609, and arrived in the bay of Wiapoco on the 17th of May.

It was not long before ſeveral canoes of Indians came to ſee who they were, and finding they were Engliſh, came on board without the leaſt fear or ceremony. Theſe people were of the town called Caripo, on the eaſt ſide of the hill, at the mouth of Wiapoco river. Their king or chief, who had been many years in England, was then with Mr. Harcourt, and another of his countrymen came paſſenger with him, though he had not diſcovered his quality till the joy of his ſubjects at the ſight of him made him known. Among the Indians who came firſt on board, was one who ſpoke the Engliſh tongue perfectly well, and was known to ſome of the ſailors, he having ſerved Sir John Gilbert in England many years; and the Indian who accompanied the king or chief, having been fourteen years in England, theſe two were of ſingular ſervice to the adventurers.

The firſt ceremonies being paſt, Mr. Harcourt informed them, that he was come to ſettle a colony there, and to take poſſeſſion of the country for the king of England, by virtue of their grant of it to Capt. Leigh, and by ſome of their countrymen before, to Sir Walter Raleigh, aſſuring them at the ſame time, that his majeſty intended no unjuſt uſurpation over them; but would only be their

friend and protector, and ſecure them from the inſolence of the Caribbees. After ſome debate, the Indians conſented to their living among them, but expreſſed ſome diffidence in their performing their promiſes, as Sir Walter had been ſo long without accompliſhing his.

This affair being concluded, they all went on ſhore, where they met with the beſt reception the Indians could give them, and were diſperſed up and down the town, on the ſide of a hill, while the ſhips rode at anchor at the foot of it. The great rains, which confined them near a month, being over, the captain endeavoured to diſcover the golden mountains, which had been the ſpurs to this undertaking; but his guide, who had promiſed great things, failed in the performance of them: for when he came to the ſpot no gold was to be found: and yet all the Engliſh were fully ſatisfied that the country afforded gold, as well from the aſſurances given them by the natives, who ſhewed them ſome images, which upon an eſſay appeared to contain at leaſt one third gold, as from their obſerving great quantities of the white ſpar in which gold is contained; but they had reaſon to believe theſe mines were too far up in the higher parts of Guiana, and were perhaps too ſtrongly guarded for them, to hope that they ſhould be able to reach them; and beſides, they had neither time nor power to ſearch in a proper manner for finding theſe mines.

This diſappointment was near occaſioning a mutiny among thoſe who came with no other view but to amaſs wealth. But the captain with great prudence prevented its running to ſuch a length, and to keep them employed, not only went himſelf up the river of Wiapoco upon diſcovery; but ſent his brother with ſome others, on the ſame errand to the river Arrawary, and the country bordering upon it, which reaches to the river ſo

the Amazons. He alſo went and took poſſeſſion of the mountain Gomoribo, the utmoſt point of land to the northward in the Wiapoco. This he did according to cuſtom, by the ceremony of twig and turf, in the preſence both of his own people and the Indians.

The attempt of the captain's brother, in making the diſcovery of the river Arrawary, was attended with great difficulties and hazards; for the length they ran by ſea to this river was near 100 leagues, through terrible breaks of flats and ſhoals. They went alſo fifty leagues up the river, and all this was done with only flat bottomed canoes, ſomething longer than the common Thames wherries, but not ſo broad. The Indians they met with in this river, plainly diſcovered that they had never ſeen any Europeans before. It was long ere they could be brought to any ſort of trade or converſation with them, though they had other Indians in their company, but at laſt the ſight of their toys induced them to purchaſe them with proviſions. But the want of theſe, however, at laſt obliged them to return to Wiapoco; they nevertheleſs took poſſeſſion of the country in form, as Mr. Harcourt had done of Gomoribo.

Some time after Mr. Harcourt returned to England, leaving behind him fifty or ſixty of his men, over whom he appointed his brother commander in chief, and joined Captain Harvey as his aſſiſtant. In his way homewards, he made ſeveral diſcoveries upon the coaſt, and in ſome of the rivers, and after his return to England, obtained by the favour of Prince Henry, a patent for all the coaſt of Guiana and the river of the Amazons; but being ſoon involved in many troubles, he was unable to ſupply his colony. However, his brother kept poſſeſſion of that part of the country, wherein he was ſettled during three years, in all which time he loſt but ſix of his people.

CHAPTER VIII.

Sir Walter Raleigh's laſt voyage to Guiana, with an account of what took place till his return to England, when he was called down to his former ſentence, and beheaded.

AT length Sir Walter Raleigh, after ſuffering a very long impriſonment in the tower of London, on the pretence of a plot, for which he had been condemned to die, procured his liberty, and though he had been twelve years in priſon, obtained a commiſſion to execute his laſt expedition to Guiana. In order to do this, he turned the beſt part of his fortune into money, which he employed in fitting out ſhips for this expedition, and prevailed on many of his beſt friends to do ſo too. Several of theſe embarked with him, and among them his eldeſt ſon. This fleet conſiſted of ſeven ſail of different ſizes, with which Sir Walter left Plymouth harbour in July 1612, and before he had paſſed the coaſt of England, he was joined by as many more, ſo that his whole fleet conſiſted of fourteen ſhips. However, he waited for theſe laſt ſome time, and it had been better if he had left them behind; for they proved a burden to him, and ſome of them deſerted the expedition.

Soon after he obtained this reinforcement, he met with a ſtorm, which obliged him to put into Cork, from whence he ſailed on the 19th of Auguſt, and on the 6th of September arrived off the iſland of Lancerota, when he ſent to deſire leave of the governor to purchaſe proviſions; but though that gentleman at firſt promiſed him a meeting, he deferred giving it him, and at length refuſed to have any dealings with Sir Walter,

under the pretence, that the inhabitants were ſo much afraid of him, that he dared not, and therefore deſired him to draw off ſuch of his men as were landed upon the iſland. But though he complied with this requeſt, they fell upon his men in their retreat, and ſlew one of them. Of this outrage, Sir Walter complained to the governor of the Canaries, who, inſtead of ſending him an anſwer, ſallied out upon his men as they were marching, in order to draw water in a deſert part of the iſland; and had not young Raleigh and ſome other officers, behaved with great bravery on this occaſion, they would all have been ſlain. But Sir Walter was ſo careful of giving no offence to the court of Spain, that he did not return theſe acts of hoſtility.

Hence he ſteered to Gomera, where the Spaniards alſo reſolved to oppoſe the landing of the Engliſh. They lined the beach and ſtanding cloſe to the water, ſaluted them very roughly, but were ſoon diſperſed by the ſhip guns. After this treatment, Sir Walter ſent a meſſenger on ſhore to let the governor know, that he had no hoſtile intention; that he only wanted a few neceſſaries, for which he would pay very honourably, and that if any of his men ſhould attempt the leaſt fraud or riot, he would hang them in the market-place: and ſo well did he keep his word, that the governor wrote a letter for him to deliver to Count Gondamor, the Spaniſh Ambaſſador at the Court of London, wherein he acknowledged Sir Walter's polite behaviour, and gave him the character he juſtly merited. Many civilities paſſed between Sir Walter and the governor's lady, who was of Engliſh extraction, ſhe being related by the mother's ſide to the Staffords. This lady ſent him ſugar, fruits and other uſeful preſents, for which, in return, he complimented her with a beautiful picture of Mary Magdalen, a ruff finely wrought,

and ſome extracts of amber and roſe-water, which were highly valued in the iſland.

After Sir Walter's leaving the Canaries, his ſhips companies grew very ſickly, and before he reached the iſland of Trinidad, he loſt many of his men, and was himſelf dangerouſly ill. In this weak and low condition, he arrived off Wiapoco, where he hoped to have been aſſiſted by Leonard, an Indian who had lived with him three or four years in England; but finding that he was removed ſo far up into the country, that there was no procuring him, he ſtood away for Caliana on the coaſt of Guinea, at the firſt diſcovery called Port Howard, where the Cacique had been alſo his ſervant, and had lived with him two years in the Tower of London, under the name of Harry. There he arrived in a day or two, having paſſed by an iſland remarkable for its being covered with a multitude of birds, from whence he ſent to the Cacique, his late Indian ſervant, who, with other Caciques, came and brought him great plenty of caſſavi bread, plantains, roaſted mullets, piſtachios, and pine-apples.

In this place he landed his ſick men, and had tents pitched on ſhore, by which means, both he and his people recovered ſtrength daily, from the benefits they received by the land air, and the refreſhments they obtained. He here alſo ſet up his barges and ſhallops, which he had brought in pieces from England; cleanſed his ſhips; fixed up a forge; made ſuch iron works as were wanted; and took in a freſh ſupply of water.

Thus the Engliſh were employed about three weeks on ſhore, and in the river. During this time, Sir Walter was very much careſſed by the Indians, with whom he had been formerly acquainted, and by the other natives of the place, who daily furniſhed him with the beſt proviſions the country afforded; offered him their obedience,

and even propoſed to make him their Sovereign, on condition, that he would abide and ſettle among them; ſo high was the gratitude they ſtill felt for his former behaviour. Theſe propoſals, he mentioned in his diſpatches to England with the greateſt modeſty and unconcern.

On the 4th of December they left this river, and the next day came to an iſland, where Sir Walter's ſhip ran on the ſhoals, and was with difficulty got off.

Sir Walter ſtill continuing ill, it was reſolved, that he ſhould ſtay with five of the ſhips at Punto de Gallo, in the iſland of Trinidad, while the reſt, commanded by Capt. Keymis, young Raleigh, Sir Walter's ſon, and a few other gentlemen, with five or ſix companies of foot, ſhould proceed up the river Oronoko, with a month's proviſions, in ſearch of the mine, the men being ordered to encamp, till the depth and breadth of the mine was diſcovered. Sir Walter at the ſame time deſired, that if they found the Spaniards very ſtrong, they would be careful of landing, as a repulſe from them, would reflect diſhonour on the nation; and he concluded with obſerving, that if they did not find the mine well worth their pains of working, they need only bring a ſmall quantity of the ore, to convince the King, that it was not a mere fiction of his invention.

With theſe inſtructions the five ſhips ſet forward on the 10th of December, and ſoon reached a new Spaniſh town, called St. Thomas, upon the main channel of the Oronoko, where Antonio Berreo, who was taken by Raleigh in the iſland of Trinidad, had planted a ſettlement. This town conſiſted of about 14 houſes ſlightly built, with a chapel, a convent of Franciſcans, and a garriſon. Keymis and the reſt now thought themſelves obliged, through fear of leaving the enemy between them and the boats, to deviate from their inſtruc-

tions, by which they had been enjoined firſt, to take a ſmall party to make trial of the mine, under ſhelter of their own camp, and then to deal with the town as they ſhould ſee cauſe. It was reſolved, to go on ſhore in one body, between the mine and the town; but unhappily landing by night nearer the town than they ſuſpected, and intending to reſt themſelves by the river ſide till morning, they were attacked by the Spaniſh troops, who had been apprized of their coming. This charge was ſo unexpected, that the common ſoldiers were ſtruck with ſuch conſternation, that had not they been animated by their Commanders, they had been all cut to pieces, but ſoon rallying by the example of theſe brave men, they made ſuch a vigorous defence that the Spaniards were put to flight. However, in the heat of the purſuit, the Engliſh found themſelves at the Spaniſh town, before they knew where they were. Here the battle was renewed, they being aſſaulted by the Governor himſelf, Don Diego Palameca, and four or five Captains, at the head of their companies, againſt whom Capt. Walter Raleigh, a brave and ſprightly young man of 23 years of age, ruſhed forwards at the head of a company of pikes, without waiting for the muſketeers, and having killed one of the Spaniſh captains, was mortally wounded by another: but preſſing ſtill on with his ſword, upon Erinetta, probably the Captain who had ſhot him; that Spaniard knocked him down with the but-end of his muſket, upon which the brave youth, crying, Lord have mercy upon me, and proſper your enterprize, expired. But at the ſame inſtant, young Raleigh's Serjeant, thruſt the Spaniſh Commander through with his halbert. Two other of the Commanders were alſo ſlain, and at length the Governor himſelf, fainting under his wounds, was trampled to death, on which his men diſperſed; ſome of them taking ſhelter in the houſes about the

market place, from whence they killed and wounded the Engliſh at pleaſure; who finding it not eaſy to diſlodge them, ſet fire to the houſes, and drove them into the woods and mountains, whence the Spaniards ſtill continued to alarm them.

Capt. Keymis now leaving a garriſon in the place, reſolved to make an attempt upon the mines, ſome of which were not far diſtant; but the Spaniards who had fled, having taken poſſeſſion of the paſſes that led to them, Capt. Keymis found all approach to them very difficult, particularly with reſpect to the mine he had in his eye, for the river was ſo low, that in moſt places he could not approach the banks that were near it by a mile, and where he found an aſcent, he received a volley of muſket ſhot from the woods, which killed two of the rowers, and wounded ſix more of his men, among whom was Capt. Amhurſt.

Capt. Keymis finding the attempt very hazardous, the paſſage being full of thick and impaſſable woods, and thinking that the Engliſh who were left on ſhore at the Spaniſh town, would not be able to defend it, eſpecially if the enemy ſhould be recruited, he gave over the enterprize, and returned to St. Thomas's, where the Engliſh plundered the town, and carried away the moſt valuable part of the treaſure: and the enemy not daring to appear, in order to ranſom the reſt, they ſet fire to that part which was ſtill unconſumed.

Sir Walter, upon the news of his ſon's death, and the ill ſucceſs of this expedition, which had diſappointed him in his hopes, ſeverely reprimanded Capt. Keymis, and exclaimed, that he had undone him; obſerving, that if he had only brought 100 weight of the ore, though with the loſs of 100 men, it would not only have given the king ſatisfaction, and have preſerved his reputation, but have afforded the nation encouragement to have returned the next year with a greater force, and to have

held the country for his majeſty, to whom it belonged.

Upon this, Keymis retired in diſcontent to his cabbin, and ſoon after a piſtol going off, Sir Walter called out to know the occaſion, when Capt. Keymis anſwered, that it was nothing but a piſtol he had let off, on account of its being long charged: but in about an hour after, his boy found him lying dead, weltering in blood, with a piſtol and long knife lying near him, and upon examination it appeared, that he had endeavoured firſt to ſhoot himſelf, but the bullet being ſmall, had only cracked one of his ribs, ſo that effectually to put an end to his life, he had thruſt the knife through his left pap.

Sir Walter now called a council of his officers, who were of opinion, that they ought to retire to Newfoundland, in order to refit and take in refreſhments; but many of his men mutinying on the way, he ſent them home directly to England.

On his arrival at Newfoundland, great diſturbances aroſe on board his own ſhip, which being unable to quell, he joined with the ſtronger party, who, againſt his own inclinations, declared for returning to England.

Sir Walter Raleigh arrived at Plymouth about the end of July, when he found the king had publiſhed a proclamation, requiring him and his people to appear before the privy-council, for having burnt the town of St. Thomas. He was ſoon after arreſted, and on his being brought to London, was committed priſoner to his own houſe, but endeavouring to eſcape from thence to a veſſel which waited for him at Graveſend, he was ſeized near Greenwich, carried to the Tower, and on the 28th of October, 1618, brought from thence to the court of king's-bench, where the record of his former ſentence being examined, he was ordered to the gate-houſe, and the next morning beheaded in Old Palace-yard, aged ſixty-ſix.

Upon this great occaſion he behaved like a brave man and a Chriſtian. He made a nervous and eloquent ſpeech in juſtification of his conduct, and then feeling the edge of the axe, ſaid with a ſmile, "It is a ſharp medicine, but a ſound cure for all "woes." After which his head was ſtruck off at two blows.

All Europe were aſtoniſhed at the injuſtice and cruelty of this proceeding; but Gondamor, the Spaniſh Ambaſſador, thirſted for his blood, on account of his having been the ſcourge of Spain, during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and King James durſt not refuſe him the life of a man, who as a ſoldier, a ſcholar, and a ſtateſman, was the greateſt ornament to his country. That mean-ſpirited prince, to his eternal infamy, ſoon after ordered Cottington, one of the reſidents of Spain, to inform the Spaniſh court how able a man Sir Walter Raleigh was, and yet to give them content he had not ſpared him, though by preſerving him he would have given great ſatisfaction to his ſubjects, and had at his command upon all occaſions, as uſeful a man as ſerved any prince in Chriſtendom.

CHAPTER IX.

The voyages of Capt. Goſnold, Capt. Pringe, Capt. Gilbert, and Capt. Weymouth, to the countries then called Virginia.

IN the year 1602, the Virginia company fitted out a veſſel for that country, under the command of Capt. Bartholomew Goſnold, who ſailed from Falmouth on the 26th of March, with only thirty-two perſons on board, and on the 11th of May arrived among the iſlands, which form the

north ſide of Maſſachuſett's Bay in New-England, where finding no conveniencies for forming a ſettlement, he entered what is now called Plymouth Bay, and afterwards went on ſhore in a ſmall but uninhabited iſle, which he called Elizabeth's Iſland, and on another, which he named Martha's Vineyard. Here ſome of his company ſowed Engliſh corn, and ſaw it come up very kindly. On Elizabeth's Iſland he erected a fort for his own ſecurity, that he might trade from thence with the neighbouring Indians, to whom the Europeans ſeemed to be no ſtrangers. For the commander of the firſt body that came for the ſake of trade, after the ſigns of peace being given on both ſides, made a long ſpeech, and then boldly came on board the ſhip; but what was moſt extraordinary, he was dreſſed in a waiſtcoat, a hat, breeches, ſhoes and ſtockings, but his attendants had only deer-ſkins about their ſhoulders, and ſeal-ſkins about their waiſts. Their hair was very long, and tied up with a knot behind, and though they were painted all over, the natural ſwarthineſs of their complexions was eaſily diſcovered.

On the north-weſt ſide of Elizabeth's Iſland, the captain found a lake of freſh water, about a league in circumference, very near the ſea, and in the middle of it was a ſmall iſland, which contained about an acre, and this they pitched upon as the moſt commodious place for building the above fort. In this lake they found an infinite number of turtle, with ſeveral ſorts of fiſh and fowl, whence thoſe who propoſed to ſettle there, had the agreeble proſpect of being in no want of proviſions. On their viſiting the continent near Elizabeth's Iſland, they found the country extremely delightful, and abounding in meadows, brooks and rivers. They had alſo ſome communication with the Indians of the main land, for they traded with them for European commodities, and gave in ex-

change for knives and toys, beavers, martins, otters, foxes and rabbits, together with ſeals and deer-ſkins.

The affairs of the plantation might have gone on very proſperouſly had all the planters been unanimous, but they were ſolely intent upon their private intereſts, and upon making a profitable voyage. The captain having in vain endeavoured to perſuade ſome of them to ſtay in the fort, took in a large cargo of ſaſſafras, cedar, furs, &c. and leaving the iſland on the 18th of June, arrived at Plymouth on the 23d of July following.

At the time of the queen's deceaſe, a deſign was on foot for proſecuting the diſcoveries and trade to North-America, in which were concerned ſeveral of the gentlemen and merchants of Briſtol, among whom was the Rev. Mr. Hackluit, prebendary of the cathedral of that city, who was choſen to apply in behalf of himſelf and the reſt of the perſons concerned, to Sir Walter Raleigh, who was ſtill conſidered as the proprietor of Virginia, in order to procure his licence for that trade, and upon his application, Sir Walter not only granted him a licence under his hand and ſeal, but generouſly made over to them all the profits that ſhould ariſe from the voyage.

Being thus empowered, they raiſed the joint ſtock of 1000l. and fitted out two ſmall veſſels, the Speedwell of fifty tons burden, commanded by Matthew Pringe, with thirty men and boys, and the Diſcoverer, a bark of twenty-ſix tons, commanded by William Brown, who had under him a mate and eleven men and boys. They were victualled for eight months, and had a large cargo on board of the goods thought moſt proper for that country.

Theſe veſſels ſailed from Briſtol on the 20th of March 1603, but were obliged by contrary winds, to put into Milford-Haven, where they continued

till the 20th of April following, when they proceeded on their voyage, and without any remarkable accident arrived on the coaſt of North-America, in the latitude of 43°. whence they ſailed ſouth-weſt, in ſearch of that part of the country, which had been viſited by Captain Goſnold.

They at length found in the latitude of 41°. and ſome few minutes, a very convenient bay, to which they gave the name of Whitſon's Bay, in honour of Mr. John Whitſon, who was then Mayor of Briſtol. Here they landed and cut a good quantity of ſaſſafras, which they carried on board; but firſt to prevent their being ſurprized in the woods by the natives, while they were at work, they erected a ſmall fort or redoubt, in which they left their effects under a guard of about four or five men.

Forty or fifty, and ſometimes an hundred of the Indians, frequently came in a company to trade with the Engliſh, with whom they eat and drank, and were very merry, and once on their obſerving an Engliſh lad playing upon a guitar, they got round about him, and taking hold of each other's hands, danced twenty or thirty in a ring, after the American manner. The ſeamen obſerving, that the natives were more afraid of two maſtiffs they had with them than of twenty men, whenever they wanted to get rid of their company, had the brutality to let looſe one of the maſtiffs, at which the natives ran ſhrieking into the woods. This ill treatment, and the erecting a fortification in the country, probably made the Indians look upon the Engliſh as their enemies: for ſoon after a party of them came and ſurrounded the fort, when moſt of the Engliſh were abſent, and would probably have taken it, if Captain Pringe had not fired two guns, which alarmed the workmen in the woods, who immediately returned to its relief.

The Indians indeed pretended that they had no hoſtile intentions, but the Engliſh did not care to truſt them afterwards, and the day before they embarked, the natives came in great numbers and ſet fire to the woods where they had cut their ſaſſafras, which was probably to let the Engliſh know, that they would preſerve nothing in their country, that could invite ſuch gueſts to viſit them again.

About the middle of June, they had completed the freight of their bark, and having ſent her to England, made all the diſpatch they could in loading their own veſſel with a valuable cargo of ſkins and furs, which they had before procured of the Indians, in exchange for the commodities they had brought with them.

Theſe Indians much reſembled thoſe mentioned by Captain Goſnold, and among the other curioſities the Engliſh found in the country, they took one of the boats uſed by the inhabitants, made of the bark of a birch-tree, ſewed together with twigs, the ſeams of which were covered with roſin or turpentine, and though this boat was ſeventeen feet long, four broad, and capable of carrying nine perſons, it did not weigh ſixty pounds. Thoſe boats were rowed with oars reſembling our baker's peels, by the help of which they went at a great rate.

Capt. Pringe having quitted the coaſt of Virginia on the 9th of Auguſt, ſailed to England, and on the 2d of October entered King's Road, where he had the ſatisfaction of finding, that the bark was ſafely arrived a fortnight before.

In the ſame year, another attempt was made upon the ſame account by Capt. Bartholomew Gilbert, who had been the year before at Virginia with Capt. Goſnold. This gentleman ſailed from Plymouth on the 10th of May, in the Elizabeth, a bark of fifty tons burden, and in his paſſage

touched at St. Lucia, Dominica, and Nevis, where he traded, and at the laſt of theſe places cut about twenty tons of lignum vitæ.

On the 3d of July he ſailed from thence for the coaſt of Virginia, and in particular for Cheſapeak Bay, where he was very deſirous of obtaining ſome intelligence of the manners and diſpoſitions of the people.

He arrived on the 25th near the mouth of that harbour; but the wind blew ſo hard, and the ſea ran ſo high, that he could not enter it, and therefore, after beating about two or three days, was obliged to ſteer more to the eaſtward.

On the 29th, being not far from the ſhore, the captain with four of his beſt men landed in their boat, and being provided with arms, proceeded ſome way up the country; but in their march being attacked and overpowered by the inhabitants, they were all killed; and it was not without ſome difficulty that the boat, with two young men who were left in her, returned to the ſhip with this melancholy news.

There being now in all but eleven men and boys in the ſhip, they were afraid to venture the loſs of any more of their ſmall company; and their proviſions growing ſhort, Henry Shute the maſter, who had taken the command, reſolved, though they were in extreme want of wood and water, to return homewards, which they did, and arrived ſafely in the river of Thames about the end of September.

The buſineſs of ſettling and planting the northern continent of America being now laid open by the attainder of Sir Walter Raleigh, on the ridiculous pretence of a very improbable plot, and thoſe who had been concerned in the laſt voyages, not only giving a favourable account of the country, but obtaining very conſiderable profits, ſeveral perſons of diſtinction were determined to pro-

mote theſe diſcoveries; and in particular Henry Wriotheſly earl of Southampton, and Thomas Lord Arundel of Wardour, reſolved to fit out a ſhip for that expedition.

This veſſel, which was called the Archangel, and was commanded by Capt. George Weymouth, ſailed from Dartmouth on the 31ſt of March, 1605, and met with nothing of conſequence, till they imagined that they were near the coaſt of Virginia, when the winds carrying them to the northward into the latitude of 41°. 30'. and their wood and water beginning to grow ſhort, they became very deſirous of ſeeing land, which their charts gave them reaſon to expect. They therefore bore directly in with it; but found none in a run of almoſt fifty leagues. However, after much expedition, they obtained ſight of an iſland that was very woody along the ſhore. It abounded in fruit, and vaſt numbers of fowls; the ſea afforded plenty of fiſh, while large ſtreams of freſh water ran down the cliffs.

This was the eaſtern part of what is now called Long Iſland; from thence they could diſcern a great many other iſlands, and the main land ſtretching from the weſt-ſouth-weſt to the eaſt-north-eaſt; they viſited ſeveral of the iſlands near the continent, and found them very full of timber, and fruit-trees of various ſorts.

Among theſe iſlands they met with an harbour in which ſhips of any burden might lie defended from all winds, from ſix to ten fathom water, and this they called Pentecoſt harbour, from its being diſcovered about Whitſuntide. The fir-trees, which grew in great numbers on the iſlands, yielded excellent turpentine, and many of the ſhells they found about the rocks, afforded ſmall pearls.

While they lay here, the natives from the continent came to trade with them for ſkins and furs, in exchange for knives, beads, and ſuch trifles, very

readily giving the value of ten or twelve pounds in their goods, for ſuch Engliſh hard-ware as was not worth above five ſhillings.

Their bows, arrows and canoes, were like thoſe of the other Indians on the coaſt. The heads of their tobacco pipes were ſometimes made of clay, and ſometimes were only the claw of a lobſter; but they were all ſufficient to hold as much as ten or twelve of ours.

The moſt extraordinary diſcovery made in this voyage, was that of a river, which was eſteemed by thoſe who found it, the moſt beautiful in America. They ſailed ſeveral leagues up it with their ſhip, and found it of a conſiderable breadth for forty miles together, it being in moſt places a mile broad, in ſome three quarters, but never leſs than half a mile. It flows ſixteen or eighteen feet, and is ſix or ten fathom deep at low water. On both ſides there are at a ſmall diſtance from each other, many fine coves, ſome of which are able to contain above 100 ſail, where the ground is ſoft ooze with a tough clay underneath for anchorage. Nature has alſo formed ſeveral convenient places like docks, in which ſhips of all burdens might be graved and careened. The neighbouring land treads along on both ſides in a ſmooth line, and inſtead of rocks and cliffs, is bordered with graſs, and tall trees of different ſorts.

After they had remained here about ſix weeks, and during all that time carried on a very profitable trade with the natives, they thought of returning to England; for which they ſet ſail on the 16th of June, and arrived that day month in ſight of the Land's End.

CHAPTER X.

Patents granted by King James I. for erecting two Virginia Companies. The London Company fit out a ſquadron under the command of Capt. Newport, who ſettles a colony in a Peninſula in Pouhatan, or James's river, and calls the place James's town. A deſcription of the climate, ſoil, beaſts, birds, fiſhes, trees, and plants of Virginia; particularly of Maize or Indian Corn, and the manner of cultivating Tobacco.

THE above proſperous voyage inducing many perſons of rank and fortune to wiſh this trade thoroughly eſtabliſhed, they applied to the crown, for ſuch legal authorities as were neceſſary, and two companies were formed for ſettling this large tract of land, which was at this time divided into north and ſouth Virginia. One of theſe companies conſiſted of the adventurers of the city of London, who were deſirous of fixing a plantation between 34, 41°. of north latitude, and the other of thoſe of the cities of Briſtol, Exeter, and the town of Plymouth, who wanted to ſettle in between 38 and 45°. Each of theſe companies obtained letters patents in which it was provided, that the above reſpective colonies, ſhould not plant within 103 miles of each other. That they ſhould poſſeſs an hundred miles of the country to the weſtward within the land; fifty miles either way along the coaſt, from the ſeat of their firſt ſettlement, and all the iſlands oppoſite to the coaſt for the ſpace of 100 miles at ſea. They were empowered to dig mines in and beyond their reſpective limits, to the weſtward, paying the crown a fifth of all the gold and copper ore, they ſhould obtain; they were likewiſe empowered to ſeize all the ſhips that

ſhould trade within their reſpective limits; and even to coin money, and raiſe forces for their defence.

Theſe two companies no ſooner received this extenſive authority from the crown, than they began in earneſt to provide for making ſettlements within the bounds, proſcribed by their reſpective grants. With this view, the London company fitted out three veſſels, one of 100 tons, another of 40, and a pinnace of 20; on board of which were 110 landmen, and every thing neceſſary for ſettling a colony. The command of this ſmall ſquadron, was given to capt. Chriſtopher Newport, but the orders relating to the government of the colony, and the name of the council who were to be intruſted with the adminiſtration of it when ſettled, were delivered to them in a box ſealed up, which was not to be opened till they were on ſhore.

This ſquadron ſailed from London on the 20th of December, 1606, took in water and other neceſſaries at the Canaries, and proceeded to the Caribbee Iſlands, where they arrived on the 23d of February, and ſtaid among them, but chiefly at the iſland of Nevis, about five weeks. On the 3d of April they ſailed for Virginia, and on the 26th of the ſame month, landed at the ſouthern Cape of Cheſapeak Bay, where they built a fort, which they called Cape and Fort Henry, and to the northern Cape gave the name of Cape Charles, in honour of the two princes; but the river Powhatan, they called James's River, in honour of the king.

This river they completely ſearched, before they would come to any reſolution about forming a ſettlement, and then, by unanimous conſent, they pitched upon a peninſula, about fifty miles up the river, which, beſides the goodneſs of the ſoil, was eſteemed moſt capable of being made a place of trade and ſecurity, two thirds of it being

ſurrounded by the main river, which all along affords good anchorage; and the other third by a ſmall river, able to receive veſſels of 100 tons burden, till it comes within thirty yards of the great river, where it generally overflows in ſpring tides; on which account, this peninſula obtained the name of an Iſland, and both the town and river received their name from king James. The whole iſland thus incloſed, contains about 2000 acres, beſides many thouſands of very good marſh-lands, with as fine paſturage as any in the country. The narrow paſſage rendered this place very ſecure from being attacked by the enemy, and to add to its ſtrength, they here built caſtles and a fort. This was the firſt Engliſh plantatation that ſucceeded.

The firſt buſineſs the colony entered upon after their landing, was opening their orders, when they found that ſeven gentlemen were appointed their council, one of whom was Captain Smith, on whoſe ſkill and experience, the company in England ſeemed to rely, more than upon any of the reſt; but the other gentlemen had ſuch a diſlike to him, that they had confined him priſoner ever ſince they left England, and now excluded him from the council; but afterwards the planters themſelves, after they had by their perpetual jars almoſt ruined the company's affairs, were obliged, not only to admit him into the council, but in a manner to reſign the adminiſtration into his hands.

The ſhips having ſtaid five or ſix weeks before the intended new town, Captain Newport departed with them for England, leaving upwards of 100 men ſettled in the above form of government: but the ſhips were no ſooner gone, than the ſame feuds and diſorders broke out again with freſh violence. However, in the midſt of theſe feuds, they fell to planting, ſowing, building and fortifying. They alſo carried on a very advantageous

trade with the natives, of which they might have had much greater profit, and have managed it more to the ſatisfaction of the Indians, if they had been under any rule, and not at liberty to outbid one another. Thus they not only leſſened their own profit, but created jealouſies and diſturbances among the Indians, by letting one have a better bargain than another, by which means thoſe who had been hardeſt dealt with, thought themſelves cheated and abuſed, whence they conceived an averſion to the Engliſh in general, and even made it a national quarrel. This ſeems to have been the original cauſe of moſt of the vexations the Engliſh received from the Indians: However, the former ſubſiſted chiefly by the help of their proviſions, till the return of the ſhips.

But now an object drew their eyes and thoughts not only from trade, but from taking the neceſſary care of their preſervation: They found in the iſthmus of the peninſula on which James's Town was built, a ſpring of water that flowed from a ſmall bank, and waſhed down with it a yellow ſort of duſt-iſinglaſs, which lay ſhining at the bottom, and filled their minds with an inſatiable deſire of riches; for taking this to be gold, they were ſo ſtupid as to neglect both the neceſſary defence of their lives from the attacks of the Indians, and the ſupport of their bodies by procuring proviſions; abſolutely relying upon the power of gold; thinking that where this was in plenty, nothing elſe could be wanting; and thus infatuated with the hopes of obtaining mountains of wealth, they deſpiſed the mines of Peru and Mexico, in compariſon of their own ineſtimable ſtream. They, however, ſoon grew in ſome meaſure ſenſible of their error; for by their negligence, they were reduced to great ſcarcity of proviſions, and the little they had was loſt by the burning of the town, while all hands were employed about this imaginary treaſure, ſo

that they were obliged to live upon fruit, crabs, and muſcles, without having a day's proviſion before hand. By this neglect many of them alſo became a prey to the Indians, while the reſt not daring to venture abroad, were forced to be contented with what they could get.

They were in this miſerable condition when a ſhip arrived the next year, freighted with men and proviſions for the ſupply of the plantation, and as they neither thought nor ſpoke of any thing but gold, they put on board this veſſel all the yellow ſand they had gathered, with the ſkins and furs, for which they had bartered with the Indians, and then ſent her away. Soon after another ſhip arrived, filled with ſupplies, when they alſo ſtowed her with this imaginary gold-duſt, and filled her up with cedar and clap-board.

However, being at length perſuaded that they might apply themſelves to other labours more neceſſary than collecting yellow ſand, which if ever ſo valuable, would be always in their power, if they did but take care to fortify themſelves effectually, they began to do this in earneſt, and by the good management of Capt. Smith, made ſeveral diſcoveries in James River and Cheſapeak Bay, and in the year 1608, they firſt gathered Indian corn of their own planting. But unhappily Capt. Smith going to make diſcoveries up the country, was attacked by 300 of the Indians, under the command of one of their chiefs, who ſlew all his men, and taking him priſoner, carried him to Powhatan, their principal ſovereign, who would have put him to death had it not been for the interceſſion of his daughter Pacahunta: however, Capt. Smith being afterwards releaſed, returned to James Town, when the preſident of the council reſigning his office, he was unanimouſly deſired to accept of it.

While Capt. Smith was employed in making the above diſcoveries, things ran again into confuſion in James Town; and ſeveral uneaſy people taking advantage of his abſence, attempted to deſert the ſettlement, and to run away with a ſmall veſſel that was left to attend it; for Capt. Smith was the only man among them who could manage diſcoveries with ſucceſs, or keep the people in any order; they, however, now made two other ſettlements, one at Nanſamona in James River, above thirty miles below James Town, and the other at Powhatan, ſix miles below the falls of the river, which laſt was bought of Powhatan for a certain quantity of copper; each ſettlement conſiſting of 120 men; and ſoon after they made a fourth ſettlement near the mouth of James River.

Two thirds of the adventurers coming over with a view of having every thing provided to their hands, were ſubſiſted by the labour of the other induſtrious third, till Capt. Smith compelled them all to take a ſhare in the work, which being done, a ſufficient quantity of ground was ſoon planted to ſubſiſt the colony in plenty, when by moderate exerciſe and good food, they were not only reſtored to health, but became in a very flouriſhing condition; and being now no longer under the neceſſity of procuring food from the Indians by violence, they lived and traded together very amicably, and Powhatan ſuffered them to make ſeveral other ſettlements in the country.

But when their affairs were in this proſperous ſituation, the arrival of ſix or ſeven ſhips from England, with a large ſupply of ammunition and proviſions, and between 3 and 400 planters, threw the whole colony into confuſion, which being made known to the company in England, they obtained a new patent from King James, which empowered them to appoint a governor, and they prevailed on the Lord Delawar to accept of this

office. Whereupon that nobleman made Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, and Capt. Newport his deputies, till his arrival, and theſe gentlemen ſet ſail from England with nine ſhips and 500 men, in May 1609.

Theſe three deputies being embarked in one ſhip, were unfortunately caſt away on the Bermudas iſlands, which were then uninhabited; but they and all the crew eſcaped on ſhore, where they found plenty of proviſions, and took poſſeſſion of thoſe iſlands for the crown of England, ſince which time they have been called the Summer Iſlands, from Sir George Summers.

In the mean time the reſt of the fleet arrived ſafe in Cheſapeak Bay, where Capt. Smith was ſtill the preſident, but both the old and new planters declared, that they were not obliged to obey him, as another commiſſion had been granted, which had ſuperſeded his. Capt. Smith however, kept them in ſome order while he remained among them: but having the misfortune to be accidentally wounded by the exploſion of ſome gunpowder, it was found abſolutely neceſſary for him to return to England with the veſſels that ſailed ſoon after. But he was no ſooner on board than every thing fell into the utmoſt confuſion; all buſineſs was neglected, and the people living profuſely upon what was contained in the magazines, were quickly reduced to want, which no ſooner happened, than they rambled about without order through the country, plundering the natives of their proviſions, while they attacking them in their own defence, cut off great numbers of them.

They were in this ſituation when the deputy governors arrived in two ſloops, which they had built in the Bermudas, and thoſe gentlemen had the mortification to ſee that the vices of theſe men, together with ſickneſs and famine, had reduced them from upwards of 400 to leſs than eighty. Sir

Thomas Gates and Sir George Summers endeavoured all in their power to remove their uneaſineſs, and to reduce them once more to order; but it was all in vain, for the people ſhewed their empty warehouſes, their ruined ſettlements, and the number of their ſick, obliged them to conſent to their embarking for England, as the only means of ſaving thoſe who were left.

But juſt as they were ſailing out of Cheſapeak Bay, they were met by a ſhip in which was their new governor, the Lord Delawar, who obliged them to go back to James Town, in order to repair their houſes and forts, and they had no ſooner returned on ſhore, than his lordſhip ſet before them, in a free and plain diſcourſe, the folly and madneſs of their proceedings; reproving them for their diviſions, idleneſs, and ill conduct, which had occaſioned their misfortunes; adviſing them to reform, or he ſhould be compelled to draw the ſword of juſtice, and cut off the delinquents; declaring, however, that he had much rather draw his own ſword in their defence, telling them for their encouragement, that he had brought them ſuch plenty of proviſions, that there would be no danger of wanting for the future, if they were not wanting to themſelves. He then proceeded to conſtitute a council, and afterwards to furniſh the people with fleſh, for though there were no leſs than 5 or 600 hogs in the plantation, when Capt. Smith went to England, there was not at this time one left alive, for they had been either eaten by the colony, or deſtroyed by the Indians, who had likewiſe driven all the deer and other game out of the country, and the Engliſh were ſo ill provided with nets, that though there was plenty of fiſh in the rivers, they knew not how to take them.

The company had ſent over a ſupply of cloathing, biſcuit, flour, beer and other liquors, but taking it for granted, that there were hogs, veniſon, fowl

and fiſh enough in the country, had ſent no cattle. Upon which ſir George Summers was diſpatched to Bermudas to bring over live hogs from thence, for he had found plenty of them in that iſland, when he was caſt away upon it. The governor alſo employed ſome in fiſhing, but the nets and tackle were ſo bad, that they had no ſucceſs; he endeavoured to ſettle a correſpondence with Powhatan, and other of the Indian chiefs, in order to purchaſe fleſh of them for Engliſh goods, and in ſome of theſe negotiations he ſucceeded, particularly with the king of Patomack, one of the moſt powerful of the Indian chiefs. But though Powhatan had already promiſed to acknowledge the king of England for his ſovereign, and had on that account received preſents of conſiderable value he was ſo exaſperated at the Engliſh, that he would return no other anſwer, than that he deſired them to depart the country, or confine themſelves within the limits of James Town-Iſland, and not continue ranging through his dominions, with a view, as he ſuppoſed, of ſubduing them; threatning to give orders for their being cut off, if ever they went beyond their limits. He alſo commanded the meſſengers ſent by his lordſhip, not to ſee his face again, unleſs they brought him a coach and ſix horſes; for he had been informed by ſome Indians who had been in England, that all perſons of diſtinction rode in thoſe vehicles.

The lord Delawar, exaſperated at this anſwer, had an Indian taken priſoner, whoſe right hand he cauſed to be cut off, and in this condition he ſent him to Powhatan, with orders to tell him, that he would ſend him all his ſubject in that manner, and burn all the corn in the country, which was then ripe, if he did not for the future forbear all acts of hoſtility. This inſtance of barbarity had its effect, and the colony lived for ſome time in peace and

plenty, making freſh diſcoveries, and forming new alliances with the Indian princes.

Mean while Sir Thomas Gates was ſent to England to give an account of the ſtate of the colony; when the ſhips being freighted home with cedar, black walnut, and iron ore, theſe returns appeared ſo inconſiderable, that the company were in ſome ſuſpence, whether they ſhould not ſend for the lord Delawar and the colony home; but Sir Thomas Gates told them, that if they would ſend over men who knew how to make pitch and tar, and plant flax and hemp, they might furniſh England with all kind of naval ſtores. That as the country abounded in mulberry-trees, they might eaſily ſet up a manufactory of ſilk; that the ſoil was exceeding fertile, producing corn, graſs, grapes, and a variety of other fruits: that European cattle and corn multiplied prodigiouſly, and that their colony would never want fiſh and fowl, was it provided with boats, nets and engines, which would enable the Engliſh to ſupport themſelves.

This repreſentation made the patentees reſolve to proceed with alacrity in improving this plantation, in which reſolution they were confirmed by the lord Delawar, who having left the honourable Mr. Percy as his deputy, returned to England for the recovery of his health.

While the lord Delawar was in England, his deputy brought about a peaceable correſpondence with the natives, which at laſt advanced ſo far, that ſeveral intermarriages took place, and among theſe, the Indian princeſs Pacahunta, who had ſaved Capt. Smith's life, eſpouſed Mr. John Rolf, an Engliſh gentleman, whoſe poſterity ſtill enjoy the lands deſcended to them from this lady.

CHAPTER XI.

The tranſactions of the firſt colony in New-England with the Indians, and the ſurprizing increaſe of the ſettlements. The ſituation and climate of New-England.

IN the laſt chapter we have given an hiſtory of the ſettlements made by the London or South-Virginia company, and are now to mention the proceedings of the weſtern or Plymouth company, as they are ſtiled by the writers of that age. They were for ſome years contented with trading with the natives of North-Virginia for furs, and with fiſhing upon that coaſt; but at length two ſhips being employed in this fiſhery in the year 1614, commanded by Capt. John Smith, and Capt. Thomas Hunt, the former went on ſhore, took a particular view of the country of the Maſſachuſets, and had ſome ſkirmiſhes with the natives. After which, he ordered Hunt to diſpoſe of his fiſh in Spain, and then return to England; but Hunt, baſely propoſing to make a market of the natives, as well as of their fiſh, treacherouſly enticed 27 of the Indians on board his ſhip, and then ſetting ſail with them to Malaga, ſold them to the Spaniards for ſlaves, at the rate of 20l. a man, keeping only an Indian called Squanto, who was afterwards of great ſervice to the Engliſh.

This outrage was ſo reſented by the Indians, that for the preſent all commerce between them became impracticable; and though capt. Dormer was ſent to New-England, in the year 1619, with Squanto for his interpreter, in order to conclude a peace with the natives, and to ſettle a colony near Maſſachuſets-Bay, the Indians refuſed to be reconciled, and attacking the Engliſh, Dormer was

wounded, upon which he left Squanto on ſhore, and proceeded to Virginia.

The patentees were at laſt ſo affected by theſe diſcouragements, as to give up all thoughts of making a ſettlement. However other adventurers carried on a trade to New-England, that turned to a very good account; and it is probable that this commerce might have been carried on for ſeveral years in the ſame manner, without any thoughts of planting, had it not been for a congregation of Browniſts, or Independants, who being perſecuted in England, had retired to Holland, and formed themſelves into a church, under Mr. John Robinſon, their miniſter, and ſoon after projected the deſign of ſeeking an eſtabliſhment in the new world. In order to this, they, by means of Sir Robert Nanton, obtained the conſent of king James I. for ſettling in America; and afterwards, by means of their agents in England, contracted with ſome merchants for a ſettlement on the bank of Hudſon's river.

Theſe merchants were proprietors of the country, and agreed to a contract, which bore hard upon thoſe who were to be the firſt ſettlers. Mr. Robinſon's congregation, however, ſold their eſtates, and made a common bank for a fund to carry on this undertaking. They then hired a ſhip of 180 tons, which they freighted with proper goods and merchandize, and the whole company, conſiſting of about 120 perſons, coming to England, embarked on board this veſſel at Southampton.

This ſhip ſailed from Plymouth, on the 6th of September 1621, and fell in with Cape Cod on the 9th of November, a very improper time of the year for beginning to build and plant. Here they refreſhed themſelves for about half a day, and then tacked about to the ſouthward for Hudſon's River; but Jones, the maſter of the ſhip, having been bribed by the Dutch, who intended

to take poſſeſſion of theſe parts themſelves, as they did ſome time after, inſtead of putting out to ſea, entangled them among dangerous ſhoals and breakers, where meeting with a ſtorm, the ſhip was driven back again to the cape, on which they put into the harbonr, and reſolved to attempt a ſettlement there; but Cape Cod not being within the limits of the land for which they had obtained a grant, they aſſociated themſelves into a body politic, by a formal inſtrument, wherein having declared themſelves the ſubjects of the crown of England, they ſolemnly engaged ſubmiſſion to the laws that ſhould from time to time be made for the good of the country.

Having choſen a very commodious place for building a town, with a very agreeable country about it, they reſolved not to trouble their friends about obtaining any farther licence, but to riſk their fortunes where Providence had caſt them, and in conſequence of this reſolution went hard to work, in building a town, in 42°. north latitude, which they named Plymouth. The planters who agreed to ſtay in this place, were about 100, including women and children, and of theſe there were only nineteen families; but ſuch were the fatigues endured by this infant colony during the firſt winter, that fifty perſons out of the hundred died within the ſpace of two months, and had the Indians attacked them they had probably all periſhed.

They, however, ſaw none of the natives, till the middle of March, when Samoſet, one of their ſagamores or captains, came and told them that his people would be glad to trade with them The next day, coming to them again with other Indians, he informed the Engliſh that Maſſaſſoiet, their great ſachem, had his reſidence three days march to the northward, and intended them a viſit. Accordingly Maſſaſſoiet arrived on the 22d

of March, with a retinue of ſixty people, and being received by Captain Standiſh, at the head of a file of muſqueteers, was conducted to a kind of throne, prepared in one of the houſes. He was of a large ſtature, was middle-aged, had a grave countenance and was ſparing in his ſpeech. His face was painted red, and both his head and face were ſmeared over with oil. He had a deer-ſkin mantle; his breeches and ſtockings which were of a piece, were of the ſame materials, and his arms were covered with wild cats-ſkins. His knife hung by a ſtring at his breaſt, and his tobacco-pouch behind. His principal attendants were dreſſed in the ſame garb, and there appeared no marks of diſtinction between this prince and his ſubjects, unleſs it were a chain of fiſh-bones which Maſſaſſoiet wore about his neck. This chief had not been long ſeated when Mr. Carver, the governor came in with a guard of muſqueteers, whereupon Maſſaſſoiet roſe up and kiſſed him, after which they both ſat down, and an entertainment was provided by the Engliſh, of which, no part appeared more acceptable than the brandy, the ſachem himſelf drinking very plentifully of it.

In Maſſaſſoiet's retinue was Squanto, who had been carried to England by Hunt, and brought back again into the country. This Indian had, it ſeems, a very great affection for the Engliſh, among whom he had lived ſeveral years, and from his favourable repreſentation of the colony, the ſachem was induced to make them this friendly viſit. At this firſt meeting he entered into an offenſive and defenſive alliance with the Engliſh, acknowledged King James for his ſovereign, and as an evidence of his ſincerity, granted part of his country to the planters and their heirs for ever: for the ſachem being informed by Squanto of the great power of the Engliſh, both by ſea and land, promiſed himſelf their aſſiſtance againſt his enemies

the Naraganſet Indians, while the Engliſh ſtood in no leſs need of his friendſhip, to eſtabliſh themſelves in this country. This alliance being therefore founded upon the mutual intereſts of the contracting parties, was inviolably maintained for many years.

The treaty being concluded, Maſſaſſoiet returned to his capital, leaving Squanto with the colony, who was extremely ſerviceable to them, not only as an interpreter, but by inſtructing them how to plant and manage their Indian corn, in piloting them along the coaſt, and ſupplying them with fiſh, fowl, and veniſon. The Engliſh however ſtill remained ſickly, and ſeveral of them died, among whom was Mr. Carver, their governor, and the ſeamen were ſo ill that they were not in a condition to ſet ſail till May, when the ſhip returned to England, to give their friends an account of the ſituation of the colony.

When the ſhip was gone to England, the colony made choice of Mr. Bradford for their governor, who enjoyed that poſt for many years, and ſaw the plantation thoroughly eſtabliſhed, though in his time there aroſe great feuds and jealouſies, on account of differences about religion.

The colony remained without a charter till in the year 1624, they ſent a perſon to England, who procured one that enabled the planters to elect a governor, council, and magiſtrates, and to make laws, provided they were not contrary to thoſe of England, or encroached on the prerogatives of the crown. Thus this colony became firmly eſtabliſhed without any aſſiſtance from the North-Virginia company.

We are now to ſpeak of that, which though later in point of time, is now become in every reſpect the moſt conſiderable; for in the year 1625, Mr. White, miniſter of Dorcheſter, obſerving the ſucceſs of the Plymouth colony, projected a new

ſettlement in Maſſachuſett's Bay, and while ſome of his friends went over to make choice of a proper ſettlement, procured a grant from the North-Virginia, or New-England company, for himſelf and his friends, of all that part of New-England that lies between the great river Merimack and Charles River, at the bottom of Maſſachuſett's Bay, and of all the lands, &c. three miles north of Merimack River, and three miles ſouth of Charles River, and in length between theſe rivers, from the Atlantic Ocean to the South-Sea.

This new colony, which ſettled the town called Salem, was ſupported with the ſame ſpirit and vigour as the former, and ſoon after obtained a patent from King Charles I. whereby they were incorporated, by the name of the governor and company of the Maſſachuſett's Bay, in New-England, and were empowered to make laws for the good of the plantation, not repugnant to thoſe of England, and liberty of conſcience being granted to all who would ſettle there, great numbers went over, and in a little time two new ſettlements were made, the one ſtyled Charles-Town, on the north ſide of Charles River, and the other Dorcheſter, at the bottom of Maſſachuſett's Bay. Soon after part of the inhabitants of Charles-Town paſſing over to the oppoſite ſhore, erected Boſton, which is now the capital of New-England.

As new planters arrived every year, the colony ſoon became over-ſtocked, and diviſions breaking out among them, Mr. Roger Williams, paſtor of a church of Browniſts, ſettled without this government, and called this his plantation, Providence, which was afterwards united to the government of Rhode-Iſland.

At length the Pequen Indians beginning to grow very troubleſome, it was conſidered that a town and fort on Connecticut River would make a good frontier on that ſide. Agents were therefore

ſent to view the country, who made ſuch an advantageous report of the fertility of the ſoil, and the largeneſs of the river, as induced many of the planters in ſeveral of the towns to entertain thoughts of removing thither, they being already ſtraitened for room where they were.

Upon this Mr. Hooper, miniſter of Newtown, put himſelf at the head of about 100 of theſe new adventurers, who ſet out in the month of July, and travelling on foot with their children and baggage, about nine or ten miles a day, arrived at the banks of the river, where they began a town, which they called Hartford. After theſe came another draught, who built a little town which they called Windſor; a third detachment built Weathersfield; and a fourth Springfield.

The towns thus built being from fifty to ſixty miles up this river, a ſhip freighted with proviſions for theſe planters at the Maſſachuſett's colony, came ſo late in the year that its mouth was frozen up ſixty miles from ſome of theſe plantations, upon which many of the new adventurers travelled back in the depth of winter, and others who attempted it were frozen to death. However, thoſe who had courage to ſtay till the ſpring, carried on their ſettlements with ſuch ſucceſs, that they were not only in a capacity of ſubſiſting, but of making head againſt their enemies. They had a ſort of commiſſion from the government of the Maſſachuſetts Bay; but finding they had extended their plantations beyond the limits of that colony, they entered into a voluntary aſſociation, to obey the laws that ſhould be made by proper perſons for the common good, and then choſe a governor.

In this ſituation the colony of Connecticut continued, till they obtained a charter from King Charles the II. authorizing them to elect their own Governor, Council and Magiſtrates, to form a political aſſociation like that of England, and

to enact ſuch laws as ſhould be thought moſt advantageous to the colony, provided they were not oppoſite to the laws of the mother country.

Great numbers of people ſtill removing to New-England, and the old colonies being overſtocked, there was an abſolute neceſſity of forming new plantations, and in 1637, Theophilus Eaton, Eſq; and the Reverend Mr. Davenport, finding there was not room at the Maſſachuſetts Bay, and being informed of a larger bay to the ſouth-weſt of Connecticut River, purchaſed of the natives all the land between that river and New-York or Hudſon's River. thither they removed, and having ſeated themſelves in the bay, over againſt Long-Iſland, built New-Haven, from whence that colony, province and government were ſo denominated. They alſo built Guilford, Stamford Milford and Brainford; then going over to Long-Iſland, formed ſeveral ſettlements there, and erected churches in all places where they ſettled. But being without the limits of the Maſſachuſetts juriſdiction, they had no charter, and no other title to the lands than what they purchaſed from the natives. The men who ſettled in this country were generally London merchants, who firſt applied themſelves to trade, in which they followed the example of their governor, Mr. Eaton; but they met with ſo many loſſes and diſcouragements, that they reſolved to remove to Maryland or to Ireland; but at laſt applying themſelves to huſbandry; they had ſurpriſing ſucceſs, and therefore laid aſide all thoughts of removing.

While the ſouth-weſt parts of New-England were thus filling with inhabitants, the north-eaſt were not neglected; for as the Engliſh frequented the coaſt for the benefit of fiſhing and the fur-trade, this put ſome of them on attempting a ſettlement between the rivers Merimack and Sagadahock, which ſucceeded ſo well, that in a few years two

counties were laid out, New-Hampſhire and Main, and ſeveral towns built, as, Dover, Hampton, Wells, Kittery, &c. Theſe planters and traders being alſo ſettled without the limits of the Maſſachuſetts colony, voluntarily formed themſelves into a body politic, after the example of the Connecticut colony. Thus they continued till being wearied out with feuds and diviſions, they petitioned the General Court of the Maſſachuſetts colony, to be brought within their juriſdiction; yet in 1684, they made an abſolute reſignation of their charter, and the government remained in the hands of the crown until the late revolution.

In ſhort, in the ſpace of about 20 years, New-England had above forty towns, and the people were in a happy and thriving condition.

CHAPTER XII.

The firſt ſettlement of the Bermudas or Summer-Iſlands. An account of five perſons who ſailed from thence in a boat to Ireland. A deſcription of thoſe iſlands, and of the plants and animals found in them.

THE Bermudas iſlands were diſcovered by John Bermudas, a Spaniard, after which they were frequently touched at by his countrymen, in their paſſage to the Weſt-Indies; but were unknown to us till the year 1593, when one Henry May was ſhipwrecked upon them in a French veſſel: but they became much more famous by Sir George Summers and Sir Thomas Gates ſuffering the like misfortune in their paſſage to Virginia in 1609, of which we have before given an account, as well as of Sir George's being ſent thither a ſecond time to fetch hogs, when he died upon the iſland, at above

ſixty years of age; but though Sir George directed his men to return to Virginia with black hogs for the relief of that colony, they having ſtored their ſhip with proviſions, ſet ſail for England, and arrived at White-church, in Dorſetſhire, with Sir George Summers's corpſe on board, leaving only the heart and bowels at Bermudas, where twelve years after, Capt. Butler built a handſome monument over them.

Theſe men gave ſuch an account of the country to the Virginia company, that 120 perſons of the ſame ſociety obtained a charter from King James, and became the proprietors of theſe iſlands, whoſe name was changed to Summer's Iſlands, from the above gentleman, and are by our mariners called the Summer-Iſlands, a name they well deſerve from their pleaſantneſs and fertility.

When Sir George Summers firſt left theſe iſlands, two of his men who had committed ſome crime for which they would have been put to death, ſtayed behind, and were there at his return. They lived in St. George's iſland, where they ſupported themſelves on the productions of the place, and built a hut. Theſe two men, whoſe names were Chriſtopher Carter, and Edward Waters, alſo ſtaid behind Sir George's ſecond company, and even perſuaded Edward Chard to remain with them; and now Carter, Waters, and Chard, were the ſole lords of the country; but they ſoon fell out among themſelves, and Chard and Waters were going to fight, when Carter, though he hated them both, yet not liking to be alone, prevented it, by threatening to declare againſt the man who ſtruck firſt. At laſt, neceſſity made them good friends, and they joined together in making diſcoveries, in one of which expeditions they found a large piece of ambergris among the rocks, that weighed eighty pounds, beſides other ſmaller pieces. This treaſure made them almoſt mad, they grew giddy with the

thoughts of it, and that they might have an opportunity of making uſe of it, reſolved on the moſt deſperate attempt that men could run upon; which was, to build a boat after the beſt manner they could, and to ſail to Virginia or Newfoundland, juſt as the wind happened to blow: but before they could put their project in execution, they were prevented by the arrival of a ſhip from England; for Capt. Matthew Summers, Sir George's brother, had promiſed to come to them, or ſend a veſſel to their relief. This ſhip was the Plough, with ſixty perſons on board, ſent by the New Bermudas company, to make a ſettlement, of which Mr. Moore was governor. That gentleman pitched upon a plain in St. George's iſland, and there built a cabbin of palmetto leaves, large enough for his wife and family; and the reſt of the adventurers following his example, it grew in time into a town of conſiderable bigneſs. This is now St. George's Town, one of the ſtrongeſt and beſt built in the American colonies; for all the houſes are of cedar, and all the forts are of hewn ſtone. Moore proved an excellent governor; and in the year 1614 diſappointed the Spaniards in a deſign they had formed of conquering theſe iſlands.

This governor was ſucceeded by Capt. Daniel Tucker, who having a better education, and more experience, eſtabliſhed a regular form of government, traced out plantations, and obliged every man to build uniformly in the town, and to plant regularly in the country; by which means the iſlands were much improved, and the exportations to England increaſed. He alſo eſtabliſhed a tolerable militia, and placed the iſlands in ſuch a poſture of defence, as put it out of the power of any of their enemies to hurt them.

The ſeverity of Capt. Tucker's government gave ſuch diſguſt to ſome licentious perſons, that five of them executed as deſperate a deſign to eſcape, as

Waters and his companions had propoſed. They knew the governor would not give them leave to go off, and therefore hearing that Capt. Tucker had a great deſire to go a fiſhing out at ſea, but was afraid of doing it, becauſe ſeveral fiſhing boats had been driven off by the weather; they propoſed to built a boat of two or three tons, with a deck, and ſo fitted that ſhe ſhould live in all weathers. The governor conſented to this, they began to build in a private place, under the pretence of its being convenient for getting timber and launching the boat. Theſe perſons were, Mr. James Barker, a gentleman; Richard Saunders, who contrived the deſign; William Goodwin, a ſhip carpenter, who undertook to build the boat, and Henry Puet, a common ſailor, who promiſed to navigate it.

They finiſhed the boat ſooner than was expected, and the governor ſending for it in order to go on board a ſhip that was ready to ſail for England, the men, on coming to the place, could neither find the boat nor the builders, and all that they could hear of them was, that the boat being finiſhed the night before, thoſe who built it went off to ſea, in order to try how it would ſail; but at laſt they found, by ſome letters they had left behind them, that they were gone for England.

Theſe men had on ſome pretence or other borrowed a compaſs-dial from a neighbour; and then going on board the ſhip bound for England, exchanged ſuch things as they could ſpare for proviſions, and one of them at parting told the mariners, that though they were forbidden to go with them, yet they hoped to be in England before them; at which the maſter of the ſhip laughed, and away theſe fearleſs adventurers ſailed, with a fair wind and weather, that laſted twenty-one days. They then met with a ſtorm which laſted forty-eight hours, and drove them a little out of their courſe to the weſtward; but the wind coming fair

again, and continuing ten days, they went on cheerfully. In that time they met with a French privateer, and went on board to beg ſome relief; but inſtead of aſſiſtance, the French plundered them of all the little they had, took away even their inſtrument of navigation, and then cruelly turned them adrift. In this miſerable condition they ſailed on, growing every day weaker and weaker. Their proviſions were almoſt ſpent, their fire-wood quite gone, not a drop of freſh water left, nor food for above a day, when at laſt, in the very hour when they expected to periſh, they to their unſpeakable joy, made land, which proved to be Ireland, where going on ſhore in the county of Cork, they were nobly entertained by the earl of Thomond, to whom they related their voyage, which had laſted forty-two days.

In the year 1619, Capt. Tucker reſigned to Capt. Butler, who arrived with four good ſhips, in which he brought 500 paſſengers, and there being as many Engliſh before on the iſland, the colony began to make a conſiderable figure.

Theſe iſlands lie in 32°. 30'. north latitude, and in 35°. weſt longitude, at a vaſt diſtance from either continent, ſince the neareſt land, which is cape Hattaras in Carolina, lies at leaſt 250 leagues to the weſt of them. They lie very contiguous to each other, in the form of a ſhepherd's crook, but authors differ greatly as to their number, ſome aſſerting there are but 300 of them, while others affirm there are more than 500. However, ſcarce an eighth part of them are inhabited, and all but St. George's, St. David's, and Cooper's iſles, have only a few houſes ſcattered up and down. There are none of them of any conſiderable bigneſs, the main or greateſt iſland, which is called St. George's is only about 16 miles in length, and not a league over in the broadeſt place. But it is fortified by nature all round, with rocks every way extending

themſeves a great way into the ſea. To its natural ſtrength, eſpecially to the eaſtward, where it is moſt expoſed, the inhabitants have added that of forts, batteries, parapets and lines, ſo well diſpoſed, that they command the ſeveral channels, and inlets into the ſea. There are no more than two places where ſhipping can ſafely enter, and the rocks lie ſo thick, that without a good pilot from the ſhore, a veſſel of ten tons could not find the way into theſe harbours, which being once known, the biggeſt ſhips in the world may enter. But they are ſo well fortified, that if an enemy ſhould attempt either of them, he might be eaſily kept out. Indeed all theſe iſlands are ſo environed with rocks, that they ſeem to threaten all the ſhips that venture on the coaſt with preſent deſtruction; and ſo many have been wrecked upon them, that the Spaniards gave them the name of Los Diabolos, or the Devil's Iſlands.

The air of theſe iſlands has been always thought extremely ſalubrious, and the appearance of every thing very delightful and charming, whence people have been accuſtomed to remove thither from the other colonies, in order to recover their broken conſtitutions. The heat in ſummer is very ſupportable, and with reſpect to winter they have really none; ſome even go ſo far as to affirm, that there is but one ſeaſon, and that a perpetual ſpring, in which the trees never loſe their verdure; for though the leaves at one time of the year fall off, others bud out at the ſame time. But notwithſtanding the fineneſs of the climate, theſe iſlands are ſubject to ſtorms of thunder and lightning.

There grow here all the plants found in the Weſt-Indies, and all kind of trees, herbs, roots and flowers, brought from Europe thrive to perfection. Maize, or Indian corn, which is the principal ſupport of the people, is twice reaped; for what they ſow in March, they reap in July; in a

fortnight after they ſow again, and reap in December. Laurel, olive, mulberry and date trees, are very common, as are alſo palmettos, which are a kind of palm-tree, and are extremely uſeful, for the leaves being eight or ten feet long and near as broad, they cover their houſes with them inſtead of thatch or tiles. Theſe trees produce a very luſcious fruit, in ſhape, ſize and colour reſembling a damſon. Their foreſts alſo abound with a variety of odoriferous woods, ſome black, ſome yellow, and ſome of a red colour. The berries of theſe trees have the ſtyptic quality of a ſloe, and are much uſed by the Engliſh to cure the flux, which they frequently get by eating the luſcious palm-berries too greedily.

But amongſt a multitude of ſhrubs and trees, peculiar to theſe iſlands, and equally valuable for their timber and fruit, there are two, which though found in other parts of the world, have a peculiar excellence here; the firſt is their orange tree, whoſe fruit in point of ſize, ſcent and flavour, far exceeds thoſe either in the Weſt or Eaſt-Indies: the ſecond is their cedar, which is firmer and more durable than any of its kind we are acquainted with, and anſwers in every reſpect to oak timber. It is therefore uſed in ſhip-building, and the beſt ſloops, brigantines and other ſmall veſſels, both for ſervice and ſailing in uſe throughout the Weſt-Indies, are built at the Bermudas. They have alſo a very ſingular plant called the Summer-Iſland redwood, the berry of which is as red as the prickle-pear, and alſo gives the ſame kind of tincture: out of this berry come firſt worms, theſe afterwards turn into flies, ſomething bigger than the cochineal fly, and have a medicinal virtue much exceeding it. They have alſo a plant called the poiſon weed, that grows much in the ſame manner as our ivy, but this is the only noxious thing in any of theſe iſlands.

As for animals, there were none in the Bermudas, but hogs, inſects and birds, when Sir George Summers was ſhipwrecked there; theſe hogs he found by ſending out two or three of his own to feed, which rambling home, a huge wild-boar followed them, and being killed was found excellent meat. The hogs they afterwards killed were all black, whence it is concluded that the Spaniards left them there to breed, becauſe they were of the ſame kind with thoſe they carried to the continent of America.

Theſe iſlands abound in more fowl, and in a greater variety than are to be found in any part of America. There are ſwans, moor-hens, teal, ſnipe, ducks, widgeons, herons, bitterns, oſſpreys, baldcoots, cormorants, and hawks of all ſorts; bats and owls are alſo very common, and there are multitudes of ſmall birds, as wood-peckers, ſparrows, &c. The Engliſh at their firſt coming, found a ſort of fowl called cowkoes, that breed in the holes of the rocks and in burrows like rabbits. They were extremely numerous, and ſo gentle that they were taken by hand; but they are now almoſt deſtroyed. This bird is of the ſize of a ſea-mew. There is alſo the tropic bird, and the pemlico.

They have as great plenty of fiſh as of fowl, and ſo many ſorts that authors have not yet found out names for them, and in particular, they have great numbers of turtle, which are as good and as large, as any in the world.

CHAPTER XIII.

Hudſon's and Burton's voyages for the diſcovery of a north-weſt paſſage.

WHILE theſe diſcoveries were making, the merchants of England again attempted to find a new paſſage to the Indies, by the north-eaſt and north-weſt, and in particular fitted out Mr. Henry Hudſon in 1607, who undertook to ſail directly north, which he did to the height of 81°. 30. where he found the weather in July pretty warm. He propoſed to have paſſed round the great tract of country called by the Danes, Groenland; afterwards to fall into Davis's Streights, and then to return home; but being diſappointed in this, he undertook two voyages for the diſcovery of a north-eaſt paſſage, with no better ſucceſs. At laſt he reſolved to make an attempt towards the north-weſt, and ſet ſail on this voyage in April 1610. He now proceeded to the mouth of Davis's Streights, then ſteered directly weſt, and afterwards ſailed through thoſe ſtreights that now bear his name, till he doubled Cape Worſenham, after which he ſailed down the weſt coaſt of New-Britain, to the very bottom of the bay, where he made choice of a place to winter in, that was almoſt as far ſouth as any part of Great-Britain, in hopes of performing ſomething very conſiderable the next ſpring. However, the hardſhips the men endured while they wintered in this place, were exceeding great. The cold was ſo extreme, that it lamed moſt of the company; but during the firſt three months, they ſaw ſuch flights of white partridges

that they killed above 100 dozen, beſides other fowl.

At the approach of ſpring, the partridges left them, and were ſucceeded by ſwans, geeſe, ducks and teal; but theſe were hard to catch. They flew from the ſouth to the north, and whenever a northerly wind aroſe, ſtaid till the wind ſerved them.

At the approach of ſummer, the fowls diſappeared, and the men were obliged by hunger to ſearch the woods, hills and vallies, for any thing that might ſerve for food. The frogs, though in their engendering time, when they were as loathſome as toads, were not ſpared, and they alſo fed on the moſs that grew on the ground. As ſoon as the ice began to break, one of the natives came to the ſhip, and ſold them ſome furs and ſkins, for knives and hatchets; and when the ſound began to be clear of the ice, ſo that the boat could move from place to place, ſeveral of the men were ſent to catch fiſh, in which they had indifferent ſucceſs, though not enough to ſupply the wants of the ſhip's company. At length, ſome of the men reſolving to get the little proviſions that were left to themſelves, barbarouſly contrived to turn Captain Hudſon, the carpenter and all the ſick men, out of the ſhip, and to make the beſt of their way for England. This they performed by forcing Captain Hudſon and eight more into the ſhallop without proviſions, though moſt of them were taken ſick out of bed, and after that time they were never heard of more. The leaders of this mutiny, did not eſcape much better; for being obliged to land frequently on the deſert coaſt to obtain ſubſiſtence, moſt of them were killed by the inhabitants, and the few who remained, returned to England in a miſerable condition.

Upon the imperfect account of Hudſon's Bay, received from Pricket, one of theſe men, ſeveral

perſons who had already been engaged in expeditions for the diſcovery of a north-weſt paſſage, began to hope that they had now a fairer proſpect than ever of bringing it to bear, and therefore applying to Henry, Prince of Wales, who was then the great patron of learning, his highneſs reſolved to ſend one Captain Button, his own ſervant, and a man of great abilities, courage and experience; and accordingly he ſailed in the year 1611, on this expedition; paſſed Hudſon's Streights, and then leaving Hudſon's Bay to the ſouth, ſailed above 200 leagues to the north-weſt, through a ſea above eighty fathoms deep, and diſcovered a great continent, called by him New Wales. He wintered at Port Nelſon, in 57°. 10'. north latitude, where the men ſuffered greatly by the cold, and many of them died, though he kept three fires in the ſhip all the winter, and had great plenty of white partridges and other fowl, beſides deer, bears and foxes. The next ſummer he carefully ſearched all the bay, from him called Button's Bay, back almoſt to Digg's Iſland, and diſcovered the great iſland called Cary's Swan's Neſt.

Upon his return from this voyage, he received the honour of knighthood, and great expectations were raiſed from his diſcoveries, which would certainly have been farther proſecuted, if Prince Henry had not died ſoon after.

CHAPTER XIV.

An account of the ſettlement and produce of Barbadoes.

WE are now brought by the order of time to the ſettlement of Barbadoes, an iſland that may be eſteemed the beſt peopled, and beſt cultivated,

not only in America, but in the whole known world. It is not eaſy to determine by whom this ſmall iſland was diſcovered; but it is moſt probable that it was firſt ſeen by the Portugueſe. However, the firſt Engliſhmen who landed there, are ſaid to have been ſome of Sir William Curteen's ſeamen, that were cruiſing in thoſe ſeas, in the latter end of the reign of king James I. and they at their return to England, reporting that the ſoil was fruitful, ſome adventurers went thither in order to plant it; but the iſland being covered with wood, and there being ſcarce any other animals upon it than hogs, it was a long time before it anſwered their expectations.

In the firſt year of the reign of Charles I. the property of this iſland was granted by that prince to James, earl of Carliſle, of whom ſeveral adventurers purchaſing ſhares, tranſported themſelves thither, and began with planting tobacco, which not ſucceeding, they proceeded to try cotton and indigo, which yielded conſiderable profit. But little ſugar was made in the iſland till the year 1647, when colonel Modiford, colonel Walrond, colonel Drax, and ſeveral other cavaliers, not chuſing to ſtay in England after the king's death, converted their eſtates into money, and tranſported themſelves to Barbadoes, with ſuch machines and implements as were proper for carrying on ſugar-works, and had ſuch ſucceſs, that in a few years colonel Drax is ſaid to have acquired an eſtate of 7 or 8000l. per annum. The adventurers fixed their principal ſettlement on the great bay, in the ſouth-weſt part of the iſland, and gave it the name of Carliſle-Bay, in honour of the proprietor, which it ſtill retains.

Afterwards the iſland was divided into four circuits, and eleven pariſhes, each pariſh ſending two repreſentatives to the general aſſembly; and ſo prodigious was the encreaſe of the inhabitants,

that in the year 1650, they amounted to between 30 and 40,000 white perſons, beſides the negroes, who were much more numerous, and frequently plotted the deſtruction of their maſters; but their plots were conſtantly diſcovered, and the moſt terrible puniſhments inflicted on the ringleaders; however, the cruelties ſuffered by thoſe who thus endeavoured to recover their liberty, did but increaſe the diſaffection of the reſt, and laid the foundation of freſh conſpiracies: notwithſtanding which, no colony of ſo ſmall an extent, ever arrived within the ſpace of twenty or thirty years, to ſuch riches and grandeur. The parliament thought this iſland of ſuch conſequence, that in 1651, they ſent thither a ſtrong ſquadron of men of war, under the command of Sir George Aſcue, who compelled Lord Willoughby, the governor to ſurrender the iſland, upon condition that the royaliſts ſhould remain in the poſſeſſion of their eſtates and liberties, and Mr. Searl was appointed governor,

In the Dutch war the colony was prohibited from trading with the Hollanders, who till this time had conſtantly furniſhed the iſland with negroes, and taught the barbarians to plant and manage their ſugars to the beſt advantage, moſt of which they took off their hands, in order to ſupply themſelves and the reſt of Europe; and the barbarians were compelled by the parliament to bring all their ſugars directly to England: this ſtep was alſo taken by the miniſtry after the reſtauration of king Charles II. and this was the foundation of the act of navigation, which requires all the Britiſh colonies to bring their ſugars and tobacco to England, and prohibited their trading with foreigners in theſe and ſome other articles.

The vaſt ſucceſs of this firſt ſugar-colony promoted the ſettlement of the others; and as the ſugar plantations increaſed, more hands were required to

carry on the work than could at that time be ſpared from home. This gave birth to the Guinea trade, for ſupplying thoſe colonies with negroe ſlaves; and as the planters flouriſhed and increaſed, ſo did their demands for all ſorts of Britiſh manufactures, and ſuch of the neceſſaries of life as could not be produced in that climate, which alſo opened new ſources of trade for the Britiſh merchants. In ſhort, the act of navigation, by obliging all the ſugar to be brought to Great-Britain, ſoon made London the chief mart in Europe for ſugar, and there being annually more imported than was neceſſary for home conſumption, the merchants exported the ſurplus to foreign markets, and by underſelling the Portugueſe, they in time beat them out of almoſt all their ſugar trade to the northward of Cape Finiſterre.

In the year 1668, king Charles II. purchaſed the property of this iſland of the lord Kinowl, heir to the earl of Carliſle, and appointed the lord Willoughby of Parham, governor; upon which the colony granted a duty of four and a half per cent. for the ſupport of the civil government, and for maintaining the forces and fortifications of the iſland, which duty is ſaid to amount to 10,000l. a year.

The iſland of Barbadoes is ſituated in the Atlantic Ocean, in 13° north latitude, and 59° weſt longitude. It is of a triangular from, and where broadeſt, about 25 miles from north to ſouth, and only 15 from eaſt to weſt. It is, for the moſt part, a plain, level country, with ſome ſmall hills of an eaſy aſcent, and though it was covered with woods when the Engliſh firſt ſettled there, they have been all cut down to make way for plantations of ſugar-canes, which at preſent take up almoſt the whole iſland, for their very corn, fleſh, and fiſh, are for the moſt part imported.

There is ſcarce an harbour in the iſland; the beſt is that of Bridge-Town, in Carliſle-Bay, which lies open to the weſtward, but is ſecure from the north-eaſt. This is here the conſtant trade-wind, and blows all night and all day, except when they have their tornadoes and hurricans, which uſually happen in the three ſummer months, and blow from every quarter. At ſuch times the ſhips in the bay are in the utmoſt danger of being wrecked on ſhore, if they cannot get out to ſea, and therefore they ſeldom attempt to ride out thoſe ſtorms.

The coaſt is defended on the eaſt from the invaſion of an enemy, by rocks and ſhoals; and on the weſt, where it is moſt expoſed to a deſcent, breaſt-works and redoubts are erected for its ſecurity. There is ſcarce a ſtream in the iſland that deſerves the name of a river, though there are two on the eaſt ſide, to which they have given the names of Scotland River and Joſeph's River. However, they have good water in their wells almoſt all over the iſland, and do not dig very deep for it: they have alſo large ponds and reſervoirs, where they preſerve rainwater. The weather is generally fine and ſerene, and their rains, as in other parts of the torrid zone, fall chiefly when the ſun is vertical, and after theſe are the proper ſeaſons for planting.

Their heats are not ſo exceſſive as in the ſame latitude on the eaſt ſide the continent of America; the air being conſtantly refreſhed by the trade-wind in the day-time, which increaſes as the ſun advances, and abates as the ſun declines; but there being no mountains on the iſland, the trade-wind is not interrupted.

The only town of any conſequence in the iſland is that of Bridge-Town, or St. Michael's, in Carliſle Bay, which was formerly encompaſſed with a moraſs that rendered it unhealthy; but this has been in a great meaſure drained. However, the

low ſituation of the town renders it ſtill ſubject to inundations. It is ſaid to contain 1000 or 1200 houſes built with brick and ſtone; and there are commodious wharfs and keys for loading and unloading of goods. The chief produce of this iſland, as has been already intimated, is ſugar; of the melaſſes or dregs of which, they make great quantities of rum; they have alſo ſome cotton, indigo, and pimento. They have ſcarce any foreſt-trees left; but their fruits are oranges, limes, citrons, pomegranates, pine-apples, guavas, plantains, cocoa-nuts, Indian figs, prickle-pears, melons, and almoſt all manner of roots and garden-ſtuff, but very few flowers.

Their horſes they import from New England, &c. and they have a ſlight breed of their own. They have alſo ſome aſſes, cows, and ſheep; but the laſt do not thrive here: however, they have a great number of hogs. They have good poultry, and ſea-fiſh, but no freſh water fiſh, and all manner of proviſions are ſo dear, that there is no dining at an ordinary under a crown a head. Freſh meat is indeed a rarity, and chiefly the food of people of condition: the reſt are glad of ſalt pork, beef and fiſh, imported from the United States; from whence alſo come their wheat, flour, Indian corn, beans, peas, &c. They make bread alſo of the caſſavi root, and the negroes feed on yams, potatoes, and other roots and fruits. The gentry chiefly drink Maderia wine, and wine and water, and great quantities of rum punch are drank by the vulgar. They have alſo ſtrong beer imported from Old and New England, and liquors made of maize and fruit.

CHAPTER V.

A concise account of the settlement of St. Christopher's, Nevis, Montserrat, Barbuda, Anguilla, and Antigua, and of the produce of those islands.

WE shall next speak of the island of St. Christopher's, which was called by the Indians, Liamuega, and was discovered by Cristopher Columbus, in his first voyage to America. He gave it the name of St. Christopher's from the figure of its mountains, there being in the upper part of the island a very high mountain, bearing on its summit another of a smaller size, as St. Christopher is painted like a giant carrying our Saviour on his back. It is situated in 17° north latitude, and is about seventy-three miles in circumferrence. Sir T. Warner, an English adventurer, and Monsieur Desnambue, a French gentleman, whocommanded for the French in America, arrived at St. Christopher's on the same day, and both took possession of the island in the names of their respective masters. It was then inhabited by the Caribbees, and the Spaniards used to put in there, in their West-India voyages, to take fresh water. These last were on such good terms with the Caribbees that they sometimes left their sick there, of whom the natives took great care.

The above gentlemen left some of their men in the island, and returned to their respective countries for recruits, when their masters approved of their conduct, sent them back in 1626, with supplies of men and provisions, and with commissions to be governors of the new settlements. Monsieur Desnambue arrived there about the month of January, 1627, with about 300 people, after a

long and ſickly voyage. The Engliſh colony had as many men, and Sir Thomas had proceeded a good way in his ſettlement before Monſieur Deſnambue's arrival. The two governors therefore, to prevent any differences among the people about the limits of their reſpective territories, on the 13th of May, 1627, ſet boundaries to their ſeveral diviſions, with this particular proviſo, that fiſhing and hunting ſhould be equally free to the inhabitants of both nations; that the ſalt-ponds, and moſt valuable timber ſhould be in common, together with the mines and havens; and a league offenſive and defenſive was concluded between them againſt all enemies; after which they proceeded with great harmony.

However, the Engliſh receiving ſupplies of men and proviſions from London, throve better than the French; and not only became ſtrong enough to keep what they had, but to ſpare men for ſettling plantations at Nevis, of which Sir Thomas Warner took poſſeſſion, and left a ſettlement there in the year 1628.

Mean while the Spaniards being alarmed at the progreſs of the Engliſh and French in the Caribbee Iſlands, thought the ſafety of their own plantations required their preventing thoſe nations from ſettling in their neighbourhood, and therefore in the following year, ſent Don Frederic de Toledo with a fleet of twenty-four ſhips and fifteen frigates to diſpoſſeſs the Engliſh and French of the iſland of St. Chriſtopher's. Don Frederic ſeized ſome Engliſh ſhips near the iſle of Nevis, and then anchored in the road of Marigot, under the cannon of a fort called the Baſſe Terre, where Monſieur Roſſey commanded. Neither the French nor the Engliſh forts were in a condition to oppoſe ſuch an enemy. Roſſey, therefore, after a ſmall oppoſition, abandoned the Baſſe Terre, and retreated to Cabes Terre, another fort, commanded

by Monſieur Deſnambue in perſon: but they could not prevail on their men either to defend themſelves there, or to retire to the foreſts and mountains, where a few men might have reſiſted a thouſand, and nothing could content them but embarking, and leaving the place, which Monſieur Deſnambue was obliged to comply with. Mean while the Engliſh being in great conſternation, on their hearing the news of Deſnambue's being gone with his colony, ſome endeavoured to eſcape by ſea; others fled to the mountains, and all who were left, ſent deputies to treat with the Spaniards.

Don Frederic having them now in his power, commanded all on the iſland to depart immediately, on the pain of being put to the ſword, and to forward their going ſent them the Engliſh ſhips he had taken at Nevis; but as there was not room in theſe ſhips to carry off all the people with their families, he conſented that thoſe who could not embark, ſhould ſtay till they could be removed.

Don Frederick having made theſe regulations, weighed anchor, taking with him 600 of the Engliſh, who were fitteſt for his ſervice. But he was no ſooner gone, than the Engliſh who were left reſolved to go on with the ſettlement; when the French who were got no farther than Antigua and Montſerrat, ſent a ſhip for intelligence to St. Chriſtopher's, and being informed that the Spaniards were gone, and the Engliſh buſy in rebuilding and planting, they rejoiced at this happy and unexpected turn, and ſailing back to St. Chriſtopher's, reſumed the poſſeſſion of their former habitations.

The Engliſh now continued carrying on their colony till they were able to ſpare more men for ſettlements at Burbuda, Montſerrat and Antigua, which were peopled and planted by Sir Thomas Warner. At the ſame time the Dutch made them-

ſelves maſters of St. Euſtatia, and the French took poſſeſſion of ſome other iſlands. Monſieur Deſnambue died about the the year 1637, and Sir Thomas Warner did not long ſurvive him; but before this laſt gentleman's death, the colony was ſo increaſed, that the Engliſh in the iſland amounted to between 12 and 13,000.

The chief employment of the firſt planters, was cultivating tobacco, by which they gained a competent livelihood; but afterwards, the quantity lowering the price, they in ſeveral places applied themſelves to the planting of ſugar, ginger, indigo, and cotton, and in a little time became a rich and flouriſhing people; both the French and Engliſh living cordially together.

Though St. Chriſtopher's is the largeſt of all the Caribbee iſlands, the middle part of it being extremely mountainous, it is thought there are not above 24,000 acres of land fit for ſugar in the whole iſland, and yet it annually produces about 10,000 hogſheads of that valuable commodity.

It has been already obſerved that Sir Thomas Warner ſettled Nevis or Mevis about the year 1628, and notwithſtanding the Engliſh had been diſpoſſeſſed by the Spaniards, as has been already related, the inhabitants of that iſland in twenty years amounted to at leaſt 4000 people, and they continued increaſing in the ſame manner, for a conſiderable time, having no enemy to ſtruggle with, but the hurricanes, which generally viſited them once a year.

When Sir William Stapleton was governor of theſe iſlands, he uſually made this the place of his reſidence, and moſt of the affairs of government were tranſacted here; for each of the Lee-ward iſlands has a particular lieutenant-governor, council, and aſſembly, while the general government centers in the captain-general.

In the reign of King James the II. Nevis ſupplied the others with almoſt all their wines and negroes, and was computed to contain above 10,000 perſons beſides the negroes, who amounted to above 20,000. What prodigious improvement muſt then have been made of this little iſland, which is not more than twenty miles in circumference, to render it capable of maintaining above 30,000 men, women and children! Its annual produce is about 6000 hogſheads of ſugar.

The iſland of Montſerrat ſo called by the Spaniards, from its reſembling a mountain in Catalonia of the ſame name, famous for a chapel dedicated to the Bleſſed Virgin, is ſituated in 17°. north latitude, and is about three leagues in length, and almoſt as much in breadth, ſo that it ſeems to be round. It was diſcovered by Columbus, at the ſame time with St. Chriſtopher's, but no ſettlement was made upon it, till Sir Thomas Warner procured a ſmall colony to ſettle there, in 1632.

This iſland at firſt flouriſhed more than Antigua; but ſince the lord Willoughby's time, the latter has got and kept the ſtart of it. Sixteen years after its being firſt inhabited, there were 700 men in the iſland, and the rolls of the militia amounted to 360.

The climate, ſoil, animals, trade and productions of Montſerrat, are the ſame with thoſe of the other Caribbee iſlands. This, however, is fuller of mountains, which are covered with cedars and other trees, that afford a moſt delightful proſpect from the ſea. The vallies are fruitful, and better ſupplied with freſh water than thoſe of Antigua; and it is computed, that at preſent there are in this iſland about 4500 white people, and about 12,000 negroes. As Montſerrat is leſs than any other of the Caribbee iſlands, it annually produces only 2500 and ſometimes 3000 hogſheads of ſugar.

The iſland of Barbuda, which was planted by Sir Thomas Warner as early as Montſerrat, is ſituated in 17°. 30'. north latitude, and is about fifteen miles long. The firſt colony was ſo often diſturbed by the Caribbees, that the people were frequently forced to deſert their plantations; for they hardly paſſed a year in which they did not make one or two incurſions, and that generally in the night, for they durſt not attack them by day; ſo that the Engliſh grew weary of dwelling in a place where they were ſo much expoſed to the fury of the natives; and therefore deſerted the iſland: but the Caribbees diminiſhing daily in number, and the Europeans in the other iſlands increaſing, the Engliſh again poſſeſſed themſelves of Barbuda; in a few years the inhabitants amounted to 500, and they are now increaſed to about 1200 perſons. The proprietor chooſes the governor, and has the ſame privileges as the other lords-proprietors in their ſeveral juriſdictions in America. The inhabitants apply themſelves chiefly to the breeding of cattle, for which there is always a good market in the ſugar-iſlands.

The next plantation is that of Anguilla or Snake-Iſland, ſo called from its figure; it being long, narrow and winding almoſt about. It is near St. Martin's, from whence it may be ſeen, and lies in 18°. 12'. north latitude. The country is extremely level, and there is not a mountain in it; however, it is very woody. In the broadeſt part of it there is a pond, about which the Engliſh ſettled in the year 1650, and applied themſelves to the planting of corn and the breeding of tame cattle. They were afterwards joined by ſome people from Barbadoes and other of the Engliſh Caribbee-iſlands, who incorporating with the reſt, learned their manners, and though they are ſaid to amount to about 150 families or 900 ſouls, yet they have neither miniſter or magiſtrate among

them. They apply themſelves to farming, in which they have had very good ſucceſs, and live like the old patriarchs, every man being a kind of ſovereign in his own family.

Antigua or Antego, is the laſt of theſe iſlands ſettled by the Engliſh. Sir Thomas Warner attempted to form a ſettlement there, but without ſucceſs. However, Francis Lord Willoughby, who was governor of Barbadoes, obtained a grant of the iſland of Antigua, in 1663, from King Charles II. and planted a colony in it about three years after. It is ſituated in 16°. 11'. north latitude, and in 63°. weſt longitude from London. It is of a circular form, about twenty miles diameter, and near ſixty in circumference. The climate is far from being agreeable, ſince it is hotter than in Barbadoes, and very ſubject to hurricanes. The ſoil too is ſandy, and great part of the land is overgrown with wood. The greateſt diſadvantage is, there being but few ſprings, and not ſo much as a ſingle brook in the whole iſland; ſo that the people depend chiefly upon rain water, for which they are ſometimes diſtreſſed; yet notwithſtanding theſe inconveniences, it is a very conſiderable and a very thriving plantation.

Antigua is divided into five pariſhes, four of which are towns, as St. John's-Town to the northward, which is the capital of the iſland, and conſiſts of about 200 houſes; and Falmouth, Parham and Bridge-Town, to the ſouthward. The other pariſh is St. Peter's.

Beſides St. John's harbour, which is the moſt commodious, there are other very good ones, as Five-Iſland Harbour, ſo called from five little iſlands to the weſtward of the iſle of Carliſle-bay; Engliſh Harbour, at the bottom of which is Falmouth Town, defended by Charles fort; next to it is Willoughby Bay; on the eaſt ſhore Green Bay; of which is Green-Iſland; next to this is Nonſuch

Harbour, which is a ſpacious bay. There are alſo ſeveral little iſlands, particularly to the northward. The forts are in pretty good repair; Monk's Hill fort is mounted with thirty pieces of ordnance; the other fort erected at St. John's Harbour, is mounted with fourteen; and there are ſeven other batteries for the defence of ſo many landing-places.

CHAPTER XVI.

Maryland planted by Leonard Calvert, Eſq.

MARYLAND was eſteemed a part of Virginia, till the year 1632, when king Charles I. made a grant of all the country not then planted, on the north of Potowmac River, to Cecilius Calvert, Lord Baltimore, and his heirs, and this part of the country was afterwards called Maryland, in honour of Henrietta-Maria, the Queen Conſort. The Lord Baltimore ſent his brother, Leonard Calvert, Eſq; with ſome Roman Catholic gentlemen, and other adventurers, to the number of 200, to take poſſeſſion of the country, who ſailing from England on the 23d of November, 1633, arrived at Point Comfort, in Cheſapeak bay, on the 24th of February following, where being ſupplied with proviſions by the Engliſh of Virginia, they continued their voyage northward to the river Potowmac, which was appointed the boundary between Virginia and Maryland.

The adventurers ſailed up this river, and landing at ſeveral places on the northern ſhore, informed the inhabitants, that they were come to trade and ſettle among them; but though the natives did not ſeem to deſire their company, no acts of hoſtility were committed on either ſide, and the Engliſh returning down the river Potowmac again,

choſe a place near the mouth of a river which falls into it, and which they called St. George's River, and there ſettled their firſt colony. They afterwards advanced to an Indian town called Yeamaco, the capital of the country, and at a conference with the Weorance, or ſovereign of the place, to whom they made conſiderable preſents, the Weorance conſented, that the Engliſh ſhould dwell in one part of the town, and his own people in the other till after harveſt, and that being over, they ſhould reſign the whole to the Engliſh, and retire farther into the country, which they accordingly did. It was alſo agreed on both ſides, that if any wrong was done by either party, the nation offending ſhould make full ſatisfaction. The reaſon why the Yeamaco Indians were ſo ready to enter into a treaty with the Engliſh, and to yield them a part of their country, was the hopes of obtaining their protection and aſſiſtance againſt their northern neighbours, the Suſquahannah Indians, with whom they were then at war.

The Engliſh having thus obtained the poſſeſſion of the town, gave it the name of St. Mary's, and immediately applied themſelves with great diligence in cultivating the ground, and raiſing Indian corn, while the natives went every day into the woods to hunt for game, bringing veniſon and turkeys to the Engliſh colony in great plenty, for which they received knives, tools and toys. Thus both nations lived in the greateſt friendſhip, doing mutaul good offices to each other, till ſome of the Engliſh in Virginia, envying the happineſs of this thriving colony, wickedly ſuggeſted to the Indians, that theſe ſtrangers were not really Engliſh, as they pretended, but Spaniards, and would enſlave them, as they had done many of their countrymen.

The Indians being ſo credulous as to believe this report, grew jealous of Mr. Calvert, and made

preparations for attacking the colony, which the Engliſh perceiving, ſtood upon their guard, and erected a fort for their ſecurity, on which they planted ſeveral pieces of ordnance, at the firing whereof, the natives were ſo terrified, that they abandoned their country, and left the Engliſh in full poſſeſſion of it, who continually receiving ſupplies, and reinforcements from England, ſoon became a flouriſhing people, many Catholic families of quality and fortune tranſporting themſelves thither, to avoid the penal laws made againſt them in England; and no country in America can boaſt of having had fewer diſturbances on account of religion.

CHAPTER XVII.

An account of the conqueſt of Jamaica. A deſcripition of that iſland and its productions, particularly the Cacao, or Chocolate-Nut, Pimento, or Jamaica Pepper, the wild Cinnamon-Tree, and the manner in which Indigo is cultivated and prepared.

OLIVER CROMWELL being ſenſible of the advantages the Spaniards obtained from their provinces in America, formed a project for taking from them the fine iſland of Hiſpaniola, and, for that purpoſe ſent a conſiderable ſquadron of men of war commanded by general Penn, with a fleet of tranſports under general Venables, with which they ſailed from Portſmouth, and arrived at Barbadoes on the 15th of January, 1654. They afterwards ſailed to Hiſpaniola, where being repulſed with loſs, it was reſolved to try what could be done againſt the iſland of Jamaica.

Engraved by F. Shollus.

Venables attacks and takes Jamaica.

The fleet and troops being arrived at this laſt iſland, general Venables iſſued orders, that if any man attempted to run away, the next man to him ſhould put him to death, and that if he failed to do it, he ſhould be liable to be tried for his life. The troops were no ſooner landed than they advanced towards the fort, which they made themſelves maſters of with little loſs, and the next morning when the ſun aroſe, began to march towards the Savannah near the town, when ſome Spaniards coming forwards deſired to treat; but this that general refuſed, unleſs they would ſend his men a conſtant ſupply of proviſions, of which they were in great want, and to this the Spaniards conſented, and actually performed their promiſe. After which the following articles were at laſt agreed upon. That all the forts, arms, ammunition, and neceſſaries of war: that all the ſhipping in the harbours of the iſland; and all wares, merchandize, &c. ſhould be delivered up to general Venables, for the uſe of the Protector and the Commonwealth of England. That all the inhabitants of the iſland, except ſome that were particularly named, ſhould have their lives granted. That thoſe who choſe it, ſhould have leave to ſtay, and the others to be tranſported to New-Spain, or ſome other of his Catholic Majeſty's dominions in America, together with their apparel, books and papers. That the commiſion-officers alone at their departure ſhould be permitted to wear their rapiers and poynards, and that the artificers and meaner ſort of the people, ſhould be permitted to remain in the iſland, and to enjoy their goods, provided they conformed to the laws that ſhould be eſtabliſhed.

Thus the fine iſland of Jamacia was ſubdued, and though the Spaniards continued to lurk about ſome parts of it for ſeveral years afterwards, and once made a bold attempt to recover the place,

yet colonel Doyly forced them to withdraw, and ſo effectually reduced the whole iſland, that at the reſtoration the Spaniards yielded it to the crown of Great Britain to which it has belonged ever ſince; and is the nobleſt poſſeſſion they have in thoſe parts.

Jamaica is ſituated in between 17 and 18° north latitude, and between 76 and 79° weſt longitude. It is 140 miles in length, and in the middle about 60 in breadth, growing leſs towards each end. It is about twenty leagues eaſt of Hiſpaniola, and as many ſouth of Cuba, and is upwards of 150 leagues to the north-ward of Porto Bello and Carthagena. The whole iſland is one continued ridge of hills, which run from eaſt to weſt through the middle of it, and are generally called the Blue Mountains; and on each ſide there are other hills much lower. The mountainous part is very ſteep and furrowed on the north and ſouth ſides of the higheſt hills, by very deep channels, made by violent rains, which almoſt every day fall on the mountains. and firſt wearing a ſmall channel for their paſſage and afterwards carrying all before them, make their channels extremely deep. All the high lands are covered with woods, in which there is very good timber, though the ſoil is there extremely barren, and they are obliged to ſhoot their fibrous roots into the crannies of the rocks. Moſt of the ſavannahs, or plains fit for paſture and cleared of wood, are like our meadow land, and lie near the ſouth ſide of the iſland, where a perſon may ride many miles without meeting with the leaſt aſcent; ſome of theſe plains are within land encircled with hills. Theſe ſavannahs are very green and pleaſant after rain, but after a long drought look yellow and parched.

The chief ports in the iſland are Port Royal, which is a fine capacious harbour; Old Harbour, which lies ſeven or eight miles weſt of St. Jago;

Port Morant at the eaſt end, and Point Negril, at the weſt end of the iſland; beſides which there are ſeveral others on the ſouth and north ſides. But it is dangerous approaching the coaſt without a pilot, on account of the coral rocks with which it is almoſt ſurrounded.

There are near 100 rivers in Jamacia, but none of them navigable; for riſing in the mountains in the middle of the iſland, they precipitate themſelves down the rocks to the north and ſouth, falling into the ſea before they have ran many miles, and frequently carry down with them, large trees and great pieces of rock, and it is very common to have cataracts among the mountains fifty or ſixty feet high: Yet in dry years water is very ſcarce in the ſavannahs diſtant from rivers, ſo that many cattle die with driving to water. and it is remarkable that ſome rivers in the mountains riſe above and ſink under ground in many places, and in particular the Rio d'Oro falls and riſes two or three times. Some of the ſprings and rivers petrify their channels and ſtop their courſe by a cement, which unites the gravel and ſand in their bottoms. There are ſeveral hot ſprings, and alſo many ſalt ſprings which form ſalt lagunas, or great ponds, particularly Riottoa-Pond, which receives a great deal of water by a river, and yet has no viſible rivulet or diſcharge running from it; and in theſe and other ponds formed by the ſea water, great plenty of ſalt is made by the heat of the ſun exhaling the moiſture.

This iſland being 7°. within the tropic, has the trade wind continually there, which is on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, and is called the ſea breeze. It comes about eight o'clock in the morning, and increaſes till twelve in the day, and then as the ſun grows lower it decreaſes till there is none at four in the afternoon. The land breeze begins about eight in the evening, blowing four leagues

into the ſea: it continues increaſing till twelve at night, and decreaſes again till four. Thus as the land wind blows at night and the ſea breeze in the day time, no ſhips can come into port except in the day, nor go out but at break of day or very ſoon after.

This iſland is ſo very ſubject to earthquakes, that the inhabitants expect one every year; ſome of theſe have been extremely dreadful, particularly in the year 1692, when the town of Port Royal was almoſt ſwallowed up. Thunder is heard almoſt every day in the mountains, with the rains there; froſt and ſnow, however, are never ſeen in this hot climate, but hail is ſometimes very large.

The dews are here ſo great within land, that in a morning the water drops from the leaves of the trees, as if it had rained; and a man riding in the night, will find his cloaths and hair very wet in a ſhort time; but there are ſeldom any fogs in the plains or ſandy places near the ſea. The rains are violent, and the drops very large. Generally ſpeaking, the great rainy ſeaſons are in May and October, when they begin at the new or full moon, and continue day and night for a fortnight, ſo that Sir Hans Sloane obſerves, that all the level places are laid ſome inches under water. The month of January is alſo expected a rainy ſeaſon; but this is neither ſo conſtant nor ſo violent as the two others.

As to the produce of the iſland, it has all the tropical fruits, as plantains, cocoas, pine apples, cacao or the chocolate nut, pimento, cotton-trees, woods for dying, mahogany, and manchineel wood: ginger, and ſeveral medicinal drugs and gums. As this iſland produces more of the cacao or chocolate nuts than any Engliſh plantation, we ſhall here give a particular account of them.

The cacao nuts grow on a tree, in green, red and yellow pods, every pod having in it three,

four or five kernels, about the bigneſs and ſhape of cheſnuts, which are ſeparated from each other by a ſubſtance like the pulp of a roaſted apple, that is moderately ſharp and ſweet, from which theſe kernels or nuts are taken when ripe and cured by drying. The body of a cacao-tree is commonly four inches in diameter, five feet in height, and about twelve to the top of the tree. Theſe trees are vey different, for ſome ſhoot up in two or three bodies, and others only in one; their leaves, unleſs in very young trees, are many of them dead, and moſt of them diſcoloured; a bearing tree generally yields from two to eight pounds of nuts a year, growing out of the body or great limbs and boughs; and at the ſame place there are both bloſſoms, young and ripe fruit. Theſe trees are always planted under the ſhade. Some ſet them under plantain trees, and ſome in the woods. The nuts are cured by their being cut down when ripe, and laid to ſweat three or four days in the pods, which is done by throwing them on heaps; after this the pods are cut; the nuts taken out and put into a trough covered with plantain leaves, where they ſweat again about ſixteen or twenty days; they are then put to dry three or four weeks in the ſun, and then become of a dark reddiſh colour.

Pimento is another of the natural productions of Jamaica, from whence it is called Jamaica pepper, that being the chief place where it is found. The pimento tree is generally very tall and ſpreading, with a trunk as thick as a man's thigh: it riſes ſtrait above 30 feet high, and is covered with an extraordinary ſmooth bark of a grey colour: it then ſpreads into branches, which have leaves reſembling thoſe of a bay-tree, and when bruiſed are very odoriferous. The ends of the twig are branched into bunches of flowers, which falling off, are ſucceeded by bunches of berries crowned with four ſmall leaves: theſe berries are at firſt ſmall and

greeniſh, but when ripe they are bigger than juniper berries; they are then black, ſmooth and ſhining, and contain a ſmall green aromatic pulp, with two large ſeeds ſeparated by a membrane.

This tree grows on all the hilly parts of the iſland of Jamaica, but chiefly on the north ſide; it is generally left ſtanding when other trees are felled, and is ſometimes planted where it never grew before, on account of the great profit ariſing from the fruit, which is annually exported in great quantities into Europe. The Pimento tree flowers in June, July and Auguſt, ſooner or later according to the ſituation, and different ſeaſon for rains, and after it flowers, the fruit ſoon ripens, but in clear open grounds, it is ſooner ripe than in thick woods.

There is no great difficulty in curing or preſerving this fruit: this is for the moſt part done by the negroes, who climb the trees, and pull off the twigs with the unripe green fruit, after which they carefully ſeparate the fruit from the twigs and leaves, and expoſe it to the ſun for many days, from its riſing to its ſetting; ſpreading the berries thin on cloths, turning them frequently, and carefully avoiding the dews. By this means they become a little wrinkled, and from a green, change to a brown colour, when they are fit for the market; being of different ſizes, but commonly of the bigneſs of black pepper, and reſembling in ſmell and taſte a mixture of ſpices, from whence it is called Allſpice. The more fragrant and ſmaller they are, they are accounted the better. That great phyſician Sir Hans Sloane obſerves, that this is deſervedly reckoned the beſt, moſt temperate, mild and innocent of all ſpices.

The wild cinnamon, or more properly canella alba tree, alſo grows in this iſland. Its trunk is about the bigneſs of that of the Pimento-tree, and riſes 20 or 30 feet high, having many branches

and twigs hanging downwards, and forming a very beautiful top. The bark conſiſts of two parts; the outward bark is as thin as a ſhilling, of a whitiſh aſh or grey colour, with ſome white ſpots here and there upon it, and ſeveral ſhallow furrows of a darker colour, running variouſly through it. The inward bark is as thick as a crown piece, ſmooth, and of a whiter colour than the outward; it has a much more biting and aromatic taſte, ſomewhat like that of cloves. The leaves ſhoot out near the ends of the twigs without any order, ſtanding on foot ſtalks, each of them two inches in length, and one in breadth. They are of a yellowiſh green colour, and are ſmooth and ſhining without any inciſure about their edges. The ends of the twigs are branched into bunches of ſcarlet or purple flowers, which falling off, are ſucceeded by cluſters of roughiſh green berries, of the ſize of a large pea, that contain a pale, green, thin pulp, and four black ſhining ſeeds of an irregular figure.

All the parts of this tree, when freſh, are very hot and aromatic; but in the inward bark of the tree is what is chiefly in uſe both in the Engliſh plantations in the Weſt-Indies, and in Europe, and it is eaſily cured by only cutting off the bark and letting it dry in the ſhade, The ordinary ſort of people, in the Weſt-Indies, uſe it inſtead of all other ſpices, it being thought very good to conſume the immoderate humidity of the ſtomach, to help digeſtion, and expel wind. Rum loſes its diſagreeable ſmell if mixed with this bark. The tree grows in the ſavannah woods, and is found on each ſide the road between Paſſage-Fort, and the town of St. Jago de la Vega.

As great quantities of indigo have been produced in Jamaica, we ſhall here give a particular account of the manner in which it is cultivated and prepared. It thrives beſt in ſandy ground. The ſeed

from whence it is raiſed, is yellow, round, and ſomewhat leſs than a tare. The ſoil is made light by hoeing; then trenches are dug like thoſe our gardeners prepare for peaſe, into which the ſeed is put about March: it grows ripe in eight weeks time, and freſh broken ground will ſpring up about three feet high, but in others to no more than eighteen inches. The ſtalk is full of leaves of a deep green colour, and will, from the firſt ſowing, yield many crops in one year. When it is ripe it is cut, and ſteeped in fats twenty four hours, after which it is cleared from the firſt water, and put into proper ciſterns, where, when it has been carefully beaten, it ſettles in about eighteen hours. In theſe ciſterns are ſeveral taps, which let the clear water run out, and the thick is put into bags of about three feet long, made commonly of oſnaburgs, which being hung up, all the liquid part drops away; and when it will drop no longer, what remains is put into wooden boxes about three feet long, fourteen inches wide, and one and a half deep; theſe boxes are placed in the ſun till the indigo is very hot, and then taken in till the extreme heat is over; and this is repeated till it is ſufficiently dried.

In land that proves proper for indigo, the labour of one hand, will in a year's time produce between eighty and a hundred weight, if no accidents happen; for indigo, as well as other commodities in thoſe parts is ſubject to many; the moſt common are blaſting and worms, by which it is frequently deſtroyed.

CHAPTER XVIII.

The manner in which Carolina was ſettled by the Engliſh, after the attempts made by the Spaniſh and French. The climate and ſoil of Carolina. An account of the ſettlement of New-York.

CAROLINA is a part of that extenſive country in north-America, which was formerly comprehended under the name of Florida. It was firſt diſcovered by Sebaſtian Cabot, and afterwards received the name of Florida from Juan Ponce de Leon.

The Spaniards endeavoured ſeveral times to make ſettlements in this country; but after many unfortunate and expenſive expeditions, being entirely diſcouraged, abandoned it for ſeveral years. At length the French, perceiving that this large tract of land was neglected by the Spaniards, admiral Coligny ſent John Ribaut, who formed a ſettlement here in the reign of Charles IX. and having built a fort, called it Charles-Fort, giving the name of Port-Royal to the harbour.

However, the civil war raging in France, Ribaut's ſoldiers mutinied for want of ſupplies; for though the natives were very kind to them out of hatred to the Spaniards, they could not furniſh them with many of the neceſſaries they wanted; Ribaut, therefore, having made ſome diſcoveries in the eaſt part of Florida, returned to France; but in his paſſage the men were reduced to ſuch extremity, that they killed and eat one of the crew, and would probably have done ſo by others, had they not providentially met with an Engliſh ſhip, which ſupplied them with ſome proviſions. Two years after, a peace being concluded in France between the papiſts and proteſtants, admiral Coligny procured more ſhips to be ſent; and ſome time after Ribaut followed with other veſſels and a ſupply of men and proviſions.

The French now began to conceive great hopes of this plantation, when a ſquadron of Spaniſh ſhips drove the French out of the fort, baſely killed Ribaut and 600 men, after having given them quarter, and obliged the few whom they ſuffered to remain alive, to return to France.

The French king was the leſs moved with this outrage committed on his ſubjects, on account of their being proteſtants: however Peter Melanda, who had diſlodged the French, ſo provoked the Indians by his cruelty and injuſtice, that they only waited for an opportunity to be revenged, which happened ſoon after: for Capt. de Gorgues, a French gentleman, at his own expence, fitted out three ſtout ſhips, and ſailing to Carolina with 280 men, was aſſiſted by the Indians, and having taken Fort Charles put all the Spaniards he found therein to the ſword. They had built two other forts which he eaſily reduced, ſerved the garriſon in the ſame manner, and then demoliſhed the fortifications. It does not appear that monſ. de Gorgues made any ſettlement here, or that the Spaniards endeavoured to recover the country, which from the year 1567 lay deſerted by all European nations, till the reign of Charles II. king of England.

In 1622, ſeveral Engliſh families flying from the maſſacres committed by the Indians in Virginia and New-England, were driven upon thoſe coaſts, and ſettled in the province of Malica, near the head of the river May, whare they became a kind of miſſionaries among the Malicans and Apalachites, and in the year 1653, Mr. Brigſtock, an Engliſhman went to Apalachia, where he was honourably entertained by his countrymen, who were there before. And this perſon wrote an account of this ſettlement.

Such was the ſituation of things, when after this country had been abandoned by the French for

near 100 years, king Charles II. made a grant of this province in 1663, to Edward earl of Clarendon, lord high chancellor of England, George duke of Albemarle; William, lord Craven, Anthony lord Aſhly, Sir George Carteret, Sir William Berkley, and Sir John Colliton; from the north-end of Luck Iſland, within 36°. of north lattitude, to the river San Matthio, which borders on the coaſt of Florida, and is within 31°. of north latitude, and to the weſtward as far as the ſouth ſeas.

Theſe proprietors afterwards obtained another grant which ſomewhat varied the bounds of the province, by fixing its northern frontier at Carotoch-river, in 36°. 30'. north latitude, and its ſouthern frontier in 29°. within which bounds both the Carolinas, and the new province of Georgia are included.

The plan of government for this new colony was ſtruck out by that great ſtateſman, Anthony earl of Shaftſbury, and digeſted into form by the juſtly celebrated Mr. John Locke; but after it had been in the poſſeſſion of the proprietors or their heirs, for about ſixty years, ſeven of them ſold their ſhares to the crown for 17,500l. each proprietor who had a whole ſhare, having 2500l. and the quit-rents, and other incomes due to theſe proprietors, ammounting to about 9000 l. they alſo ſold them to the crown for 5000 l. This ſurrender was confirmed by act of parliament, in the year 1728, when the remaining one eighth of the property in the poſſeſſion of the lord Carteret, was confirmed to him and his heirs.

This province is ſeated between the extremes of heat and cold; but yet the heat is more troubleſome in ſummer than the cold in winter, this laſt ſeaſon being very ſhort, and froſty mornings frequently ſucceeded by warm days. The air is for the moſt part ſerene and clear, both in ſummer and winter; yet the inhabitants have their winter rains,

and ſometimes very heavy ſhowers about midſummer, eſpecially if the wind changes ſuddenly from the ſouth-eaſt to the north-weſt, when it blows exceeding cold, and brings diſtempers on thoſe, who do not take care to guard againſt it. To thoſe who live regularly and uſe any precaution, the country is generally healthful: But perſons who after a hot day expoſe themſelves to the cold breezes of the evening uſually feel their effects; as do thoſe who indulge themſelves in eating great quantities of fruit, and drinking pernicious liquors to exceſs. The country is ſubject to hurricanes, as well as the Caribbee-iſlands, but they do not happen ever year.

The next colony in America ſettled by the Engliſh; was that of New-York. The coaſt was firſt viewed by Sebaſtian Cabot, and in the reign of queen Elizabeth, that country was conſidered as a part of the province of Virgina. Afterwards in the year 1608 the famous navigator Hudſon, diſcovered the river that has ſince borne the name of Hudſon's River, and the adjacent country, which he afterwards, without any legal authority, ſold to the Dutch, who planted there. At length ſome Engliſh diſſenters, who for the ſake of religious liberty, fled to Holland, hearing the Dutch give an inviting deſcription of the river, climate, and ſoil of this country, embarked in order to ſail thither; but the maſter of the ſhip being bribed by the Dutch, obliged them to land farther to the northward, where they became the firſt planters of New England.

Two or three years before this, ſir Samuel Argall had deſtroyed the Dutch plantations, when to prevent the like for the future, they applied to king James for his licence to ſtay there, to build cottages, and to plant for traffic, as well as ſubſiſtence, pretending it was only for the conveniency of their ſhips, touching there for freſh water and proviſions, in their voyage to Braſil; but by little

and little they extended their limits, built towns, fortified them, became a flouriſhing colony, and called the country Nova Belgia.

The Dutch colonies were in this thriving condition at the opening of the firſt Dutch war in king Charles the ſecond's reign, when they were attacked by the Engliſh in 1644, by Sir Robert Carr, who was ſent to take poſſeſſion of this plantation. He took with him between two and 3000 men, and offering protection to ſuch of the inhabitants as ſubmitted, became maſter of the whole country without a blow. After which his majeſty gave leave to ſuch of the inhabitants as were inclined to it, to ſtay, and ſuffered the reſt to depart freely with their effects. The number of the latter was but very inconſiderable in compariſon of the former. Col. Nichols was left governor of the province and continued ſo twenty years.

CHAPTER XIX.

An account of the ſettlement of the Eaſt and Weſt-Jerſeys, and of the produce and trade of thoſe provinces

THE countries now called the Jerſeys, fell under the dominion of the crown of Great-Britain, by the conqueſt of Nova Belgia or New-York, of which they were a part. The ſeveral voyages that had been made for the planting of Virginia, rendered theſe coaſts very well known to multitudes of Engliſh ſeamen, who being diſperſed into different parts of the world, carried the news of theſe rich and pleaſant countries in America, along with them wherever they went, and this inſpired ſtrangers with a ſtrong deſire of poſſeſſing what the Engliſh ſeemed to neglect.

The firſt Europeans who ſettled here were the Swedes, who had three towns in this province, Chriſtina, called by the Indians Andaſtaka, Elſinbourgh, and Gottembourgh. Their ſettlements were chiefly on the ſouth ſide of the river towards Pennſylvania; oppoſite to which there is a place ſtill called Fort Elſinbourgh. The Swedes however made but little progreſs in their plantation, while the Dutch being always induſtrious in promoting their own advantage, worked them ſo far out of it, that Bergen, the northern part of New-Jerſey, was almoſt entirely new planted by Hollanders. At length King Charles II. gave this tract in his grant of Nova Belgia to the Duke of York, but the Engliſh made no ſettlement in it till ſeveral years after they were in the poſſeſſion of that province, and had much extended their plantations.

The Duke of York having inveſted this province, under the name of Nova Caneria, in John, Lord Berkley, and Sir George Carteret, they or their aſſignees agreed to divide it into two parts, when Eaſt-Jerſey which borders on New-York, falling to Sir George, whoſe family was of the iſle of Jerſey, this province took its name from thence, and Weſt New-Jerſey, which borders on Pennſylvania, falling to the Lord Berkeley, it was agreed to give the name of that iſland to the whole.

This entire province containing the two Jerſeys, has the main ocean on the ſouth and eaſt; the river Delaware, which ſeparates it from Pennſylvania, on the weſt; and Hudſon's River on the north. It lies between 39 and 40°. north latitude, and extends in length above 120 miles, and ſixty in breadth from north to ſouth. The largeſt and beſt inhabited part of this province is Eaſt-Jerſey, which extends from Little-Egg Harbour to that part of Hudſon's River which is in 41°. north latitude, and to the ſouthward and weſtward was

divided from Weſt-Jerſey by a line of partition, that extends in length from Egg Harbour to the ſouth branch of Raritan River, and contains Bergen county, Eſſex county, and Middleſex, on the north ſide of the laſt mentioned river, and Monmouth county on the ſouth. Weſt-Jerſey contains the ſame number of counties, and theſe are Burlington, Glouceſter, Salem, and Cape-May.

Theſe two provinces were for a conſiderable time, in the hands of different proprietors; but at length on the 22d of April 1702, theſe proprietors made an aſſignment of their rights to Queen Anne, and ever ſince that time they have conſtituted but one royal government, the king appointing the governor and council, and the freemen chooſing the repreſentative body of the commons. Sometimes indeed the governor of New-York is alſo governor of the Jerſeys, but this is always by a ſeparate commiſſion.

The chief towns in the Jerſeys, are firſt, Perth-Amboy, the capital of the county of Middleſex, pleaſantly ſituated at the mouth of Raritan River, which had it been built according to the intended model, would have been one of the fineſt towns in North-America; but planters have not reſorted to it as was expected, though it is ſo commodiouſly ſituated for trade, that ſhips of 300 tons may come up in one tide and lie before the merchants doors; but Elizabeth's-town, which is the capital of the county of Eſſex, and is ſituated to the north, flouriſhes much more, and may ſtill be deemed the moſt conſiderable town in the Jerſeys. The other principal towns, are Bergen, the capital of the county of the ſame name; Middletown, Shrewſbury, and Freehold in the county of Monmouth; Burlington or Bridlington, the capital of the county of Burlington, and of all Weſt-Jerſey. This laſt town is ſituated on an iſland in the Delaware, to the northward of Philadelphia in Pennſylvania, but

on the oppoſite ſide of the river: The houſes are handſomely built of brick, and laid out into ſpacious ſtreets, with commodious keys and wharves, to which ſhips of 2 or 300 tons may come up. It has alſo a handſome market-place, a town-houſe where the courts of juſtice were formerly held, and two good bridges over the creek; the one called London-Bridge, and the other York-Bridge, and having an eaſy communication with Philadelphia and the ocean, it is ſaid to be one of the beſt towns in Weſt-Jerſey, whether we conſider its ſituation, buildings or trade.

The ſoil and convenience of rivers and creeks are much the ſame in both Jerſeys, except that Weſt-Jerſey abounds more in the latter, from its ſituation on Delawar river. As the Engliſh colony behaved with ſuch integrity to the Indians, as to purchaſe of them the land they planted, they have had the advantage of living without moleſtation, and it is computed that the inhabitants amount to about 100,000. But there are not above 200 Indians in this province.

The country produces plenty of all ſorts of grain, and the inhabitants, beſides carrying proviſions to the ſugar iſlands, drive a trade in furs and ſkins. They alſo ſhip off train oil, iron, copper, black-cattle, fiſh, corn and other proviſions for Portugal, Spain, and the Canaries.

CHAPTER XX.

The hiſtory of the various Settlements and Revolutions in the Lucayan or Bahama iſlands.

WE now come to the ſettlement of the Lucayan or Bahama iſlands, the firſt parts of the new world diſcovered by Columbus, who arrived

firſt at Guanahani, to which he gave the name of St. Salvador, but the Engliſh changed it to that of Cat Iſland. The Spaniards never thought of ſettling there, but afterwards contented themſelves with cruelly extirpating the native inhabitants, who were at that time remarkable for being the beſt people in all America: And thus they wantonly murdered many thouſands of innocent perſons, without any advantage to themſelves.

As theſe iſlands lie pretty much out of the courſe of ſhips bound to the continent of America, it was long before we had any notice of them: But in 1667, Capt. William Sale being bound to Carolina, was forced by a ſtorm among theſe iſlands, and had an opportunity of examining them carefully, particularly a large iſland to which he gave his own name. But being a ſecond time driven upon it, when bound to the continent he gave it the name of Providence.

After his return to England, he let the proprietors of Carolina know the ſituation and circumſtances of theſe iſlands; obſerving that in caſe they were ſettled, they might not only be of great benefit to this nation, but be a conſtant check on the French and Spaniards, in caſe of a breach with either, or both of thoſe nations. Theſe reaſons being ſuggeſted to king Charles II. his majeſty made a grant of the Bahama iſlands, to George duke of Albermarle, Anthony lord Aſhley, John lord Berkeley, William lord Craven, Sir George Carteret, and Sir Peter Colliton.

The Bahama iſlands are ſituated to the north of Cuba, and ſtretch to the north-eaſt from the ſouth-weſt between 21 and 27°. of north latitude, and between 73 and 81°. of weſt longitude. The iſland of Bahama, which communicates its name to the reſt, is ſeated in the latitude of 26°. 36. at the diſtance of about twenty or thirty leagues from the continent of Florida. It is about fifty

miles in length, but ſcarce any where ſixty miles in breadth, and in many places not half ſo broad. It is however very pleaſant and fruitful; the ſoil is remarkably rich and the country every where abounds with brooks, and ſprings of freſh water.

Providence Iſland, lies in the centre of ſome hundreds of iſlands, ſome of them many miles in length, and others no bigger than ſmall rocks riſing above the water; ſo that it is extremely dangerous for ſhips to be forced in among them by a tempeſt. This iſland lies in 25°. north latitude, and is twenty-eight miles long, and eleven miles broad, at the greateſt breadth. The moſt conſiderable profit made by the planters of Providence iſland, aroſe from the misfortunes of ſuch as were ſhipwrecked, or from thoſe who in a winter voyage to the continent of America were driven to the Bahama iſlands, and put into Providence for proviſions, which it is true, had little or none but what came from Carolina, however the traders in the iſland kept ſtore houſes to ſupply thoſe who wanted, and theſe afforded great relief to unfortunate mariners.

The firſt governor who was ſent to Providence iſland by the proprietors was Mr. Chillingworth, who went there about the year 1672, when ſeveral people ſailed from England, and the other colonies to ſettle there; but living a licentious life, they grew impatient under government, and Mr. Chillingworth, endeavouring to bring them to reaſon, they aſſembled tumultuouſly, ſeized him, and ſhipped him off for Jamaica, after which they lived as they thought proper.

Though ſuch an unruly colony afforded but little encouragement for any man to put himſelf into their hands, yet ſix or ſeven years after, the proprietors made Mr. Clarke, governor, whoſe fate was much worſe than that of his predeceſſors; for the Spaniards being at that time jealous of every

new Engliſh colony towards the ſouth, landed in Providence, deſtroyed all the ſtock which the inhabitants could not carry off, and burned their houſes: but what is ſtill more extraordinary, Mr. Trott, one of Mr. Clarke's ſucceſſors, always aſſerted, that the Spaniards roaſted Mr. Clarke on a ſpit, after they had killed him. It is however certain that he was killed, and that the people removing to other colonies, the iſland remained uninhabited till about the time of the revolution, when ſeveral perſons removed thither from Europe and the continent, and a new governor was appointed by the proprietors.

About ten years after, there were in Providence and the adjacent iſlands, near 1000 inhabitants; ſome tobacco was planted; a ſugar mill ſet up, and other improvements made, but in 1708, the Spaniards and French landed, ſurprized the fort, took the governor priſoner, plundered and ſtripped the Engliſh, burned the town of Naſſau, together with the church, ruined the fort and nailed up the guns. After which they carried off the governor and about half the blacks, the reſt ſaving themſelves in the woods, but in about a month after they returned, and took moſt of the negroes who were left. After this ſecond invaſion the Engliſh inhabitants of the Bahamas thought it vain to ſtay any longer, and therefore removed, ſome to Carolina, ſome to Virgina, and ſome to New-England, and other places. In the mean time the proprietors appointed one Mr. Birch to go over governor, who landing in Providence and finding it a deſert, he did not give himſelf the trouble to open his commiſion, but after remaining there two or three months, during which he was forced to ſleep in the woods, he returned back and left the place uninhabited.

At length the Bahama iſlands, becoming a receptacle for Priates, and the houſe of lords con-

ſidering that it would be of fatal conſequence if they fell into the hands of an enemy, they addreſſed her Majeſty Queen Anne, that the iſland of Providence might be put in a poſture of defence: But this advice being neglected, their lordſhips, four years after, addreſſed his late Majeſty King George the I. upon which he was pleaſed to give directions for diſlodging theſe pirates; for making ſettlements, and erecting a fortification.

Captain Woodes Rogers was now appointed governor and ſailed for Providence in April 1718, with a naval force for ſubduing the pirates. In the mean time col. Bennet, governor of Bermudas, ſent a ſloop to the iſland, ordering them to ſurrender, purſuant to a late proclamation. Thoſe who were then on the iſland gladly accepted the mercy offered them, and promiſed to ſurrender themſelves as ſoon as they could get a paſſage to the Engliſh colonies; adding, that they did not doubt but their companions who were at ſea would gladly follow their example. Accordingly, capt. Henry Jennings, and fifteen others, immediately followed the ſloop to Bermudas, and ſurrendered themſelves, and capt. Laſſie, capt. Nicholls, capt. Hernigold, and capt. Burgeſs, ſurrendered ſoon after, and 114 of their men. But Vane, one of the captains of the pirates, knowing that capt. Rogers was coming to reduce thoſe robbers by proclamation, or by force, ſet fire to a French ſhip of 22 guns, which he had taken in order to burn the Roſe frigate, which arrived at Naſſau: however that frigate got off in time by cutting her cables. But this bold and raſh attempt could not have ſecured him; for ſoon after there appeared the Milford man of war and another, on board of which was the governor, ſtanding in for the harbour, upon which Vane, and about fifty of his men, made off in a ſloop. But though the governor ſent a ſloop with a ſufficient force after them, they made their eſcape.

Mr Woodes Rogers landed on the 27th of July, when he took poſſeſſion of the fort, and cauſed his Majeſty's commiſſion to be read in the preſence of the officers, ſoldiers, and about 300 people, whom he found there at his arrival; who had been almoſt daily exerciſed in arms for their defence, in caſeof an attack from the Spaniards or French, and capt. Rogers brought with him him above 100 ſoldiers, who being added to the others were ſufficient to ſecure the Bahama iſlands.

Mr. Rogers began to regulate the government, and to reduce it to order. He nominated ſix of the adventurers who came with him to be of the council, to which he added ſix out of ſuch of the inhabitants as had never been pirates. As ſoon as the governor and council had ſettled the board, about 200 of the pirates ſurrendered themſelves to them, had certificates of their ſurrender, and took the oaths of allegiance, as did voluntarily the greateſt part of the inhabitants of Providence, who a few years after were computed at 1500 perſons; out of theſe were formed three companies of militia under officers of their own iſland. Theſe companies took their turn every night in the town guard at Naſſau. The independant company was always upon duty in the fort, and another fort of eight guns was erected at the eaſtermoſt entrance into the harbour.

By theſe methods the face of affairs in this part of the world was entirely changed. The town of Naſſau was rebuilt, a regular force eſtabliſhed, and plantations laid out. Soon after the neigbouring iſland of Eleuthera was alſo ſettled, about 60 families fixing themſelves there, erected a ſmall fort for their defence. The like was done in Harbour iſland, where the plantation ſoon grew more conſiderable, and a large fort was built for the protection of the inhabitants.

At length Mr. Rogers returning to England, was ſucceeded in his government by Capt. Fitz Williams, and ever ſince this laſt ſettlment of theſe iſlands, they have been continually improving, though they advance but ſlowly.

CHAPTER XXI.

The hiſtory of the ſettlements of the Hudſon's Bay company. An account of the ſeveral factories. The religion, manners and cuſtoms of the Indians, and of their plants and animals, particularly of the Beaver.

THE next corporation formed for enlarging the Engliſh commerce, was that of the Hudſon's Bay company, erected by King Charles the II. upon the following occaſion: Meſſrs. Radiſon and Gooſelier, two Frenchmen, meeting with ſome Indians in the lake of Aſſimponals in Canada, were informed that they might go by land to the bottom of the bay, where the Engliſh had never yet been; whereupon they deſired them to conduct them thither, which the Indians did; after this the two Frenchmen returned to the upper lake, the ſame way they came, and thence to Quebec, the capital of Canada; where they offered the principal merchants to conduct ſhips to Hudſon's Bay, but their project was rejected; they therefore went to France in hopes of a more favourable hearing at court; but after preſenting ſeveral memorials, and ſpending much time and money, their project was conſidered as chimerical, and they were anſwered in the ſame manner as at Quebec. Mean while the Engliſh Ambaſſador at Paris, hearing of their propoſals, imagined he ſhould do a piece of ſervice to his country by engaging them to ſerve the Engliſh, who had already pretenſions to the bay; he therefore perſuaded them to go to London,

where they met with a favourable reception, from ſome perſons of quality, merchants and others, who employed Mr. Gillam, a perſon long uſed to the New-England trade, to perfect this diſcovery.

He ſailed in the Nonſuch ketch, in the year 1667, into Baffin's Bay, to the height of 75°. and from thence ſouthward to 51°. where he entered a river, to which he gave the name of Prince Rupert's River, and finding the natives diſpoſed to a friendly commerce, he erected a ſmall fortreſs, which he ſtiled Charles Fort. The ſucceſs of this expedition was ſo remarkable, that the perſons concerned in fitting out this veſſel, upon the return of Mr. Gillam, applied to King Charles II. for a patent, who granted them one, dated the ſecond of May, 1670.

Hudſon's Bay is ſituated from fifty-one to ſixty-four degrees north latitude, and is 600 miles in length; and the mouth of the ſtreights, which are ſix leagues over, lies in about 61° north latitude. The two oppoſite ſhores are called the Eaſt-Main and Weſt-Main: the former is alſo termed Labrador, and the latter New South Wales.

The company had their firſt fort on Rupert's River, but never had any towns there; they live within their forts in little houſes and huts, in which the builders conſider nothing but how to defend them from the cold and rain; they are however, not ſo much diſturbed by the latter as by the former. In 1670, another factory was eſtabliſhed at Fort Nelſon. Mean while the company by their governors and agents, made ſuch contracts with the captains or kings of rivers or territories, for enjoying an excluſive trade, that the Indians could not pretend that they had encroached upon them. Theſe contracts were as firm as the Indians themſelves could make them, and were confirmed by ſuch ceremonies as they thought moſt ſacred and obligatory.

In the year 1686, the company were in poſſeſſion of five ſettlements, viz. Albany River, Haye's Iſland, Rupert's River, Fort Nelſon, and New Severn; and their trade at each of them was very conſiderable. From Albany River they had generally 3500 beavers a year, and their commerce increaſed ſo much, that the French began to be afraid that all the Upland Indians would be drawn down to the bay. But being ſenſible that they could do any thing with James II. King of England, they reſolved to drive the Engliſh out of all their places in the bottom of the bay. Firſt they took Haye's Iſland, and then the fort on Rupert's River; after which the French company at Canada, procured a detachment of ſoldiers to be ſent under the Chevalier de Troyes, who marched over land from Quebec, and in a time of profound peace, laid ſiege to the fort at Albany River; but though the governor did all in his power to defend the place, he was obliged to ſurrender it in a week's time. However about ſeven years after, the company being aſſiſted by the government, retook all the forts and factories of which the French had deprived them in time of peace; but they were ſoon after driven out of them again by the French.

In 1696 the company applied themſelves to King William, repreſenting their inability to maintain themſelves againſt the French, and praying the aſſiſtance of the crown for their ſupport; upon which two men of war were ſent under the command of Captain Allen, who coming into Haye's River, ſummoned all the forts to ſurrender; when the French governor finding he could not defend them againſt the Engliſh, capitulated, and the French were allowed to march out with all military honours. However, in the next general war, the French renewed their attacks upon the ſettlements of the Hudſon's Bay company with ſuch ſucceſs, that they left them only Fort Albany; but by the

treaty of Utrecht, every thing was reſtored to the company again, and an equitable ſatisfaction ſtipulated for their loſſes: Since which time, their trade has greatly increaſed, ſo that it became at leaſt treble to what it was when that peace was concluded, and is ſtill in a very flouriſhing condition; they having beſides the above, York Fort, Churchill and Mooſe River factories.

As to the ſituation of the country about theſe forts: Mooſe River factory is in latitude 51°. 28. and is built near the mouth of the river, which at twelve miles diſtance from the fort, is divided into two branches, one comes from the ſouthward, and the other from the ſouth-weſt. Upon the ſouthern branch all ſorts of grain thrive, as barley, peaſe and beans do at the factory, though expoſed to all the chilling winds, that blow from the ice in the bay. Upon the ſouthern part above the falls, there grow along the river wild oats and rye, which have black huſks, though the grain is perfectly clear, and white like rice, and as it grows in the water, the Indians beat it off when ripe, into their canoes, as they paſs along the river. In the woods at the bottom of the bay, at Mooſe, Albany, and Rupert's river, are very large timber trees of all kinds; as oak, aſh, &c. as well as pines, cedars, and ſpruce, They have good graſs for making hay, and may have every where within land, all ſorts of pulſe and grain, and the ſame ſort of fruit trees, that are natural to the ſame climate in Europe; for all the ſorts they have tried, thrive very well.

The ice breaks up at Mooſe factory in the beginning of April, but higher up in the country, in March. The river is navigable for canoes a great way up among the falls; at a conſiderable diſtance there is one fall of fifty feet, but above that the river is deep, and navigable for a great way, where the climate is very good. The French

have a ſettlement for trade near the ſouthern branch, about 100 miles above the factory, where they ſell their goods cheaper than the company, notwithſtanding the difficulty and expence of carrying them ſo far from Canada, and give as much for a martin's ſkin as they do for a beaver, when we inſiſt upon three for one; by which means the French get all the choice ſkins, and leave only the refuſe for the company. The French have alſo another houſe pretty high up Rupert's River, by which they have gained all the trade upon the Eaſt-Main, except a little the company get at Slude River.

Though the bottom of the bay is as near the lin as London, it being in 51°. yet the air is exceſſively cold for nine months in the year, and the other three months very hot. However ſome fruits, as gooſe-berries, ſtraw-berries, and dew-berries, grow about Prince Rupert's River, where the comodities for trade are guns, powder, ſhot, cloth, hatchets, kettles, tobacco, &c. which the Engliſh exchange with the Indians for furs, as beavers, martins, foxes, mooſe, and other ſkins.

The Indians have no beavers to the northward of Churchill River, on account of there being no ponds or woods, proper for thoſe animals; but they have a great number of martins, bears, rein-deer, buffaloes, wolves, and other beaſts with rich furs, the country being moſtly rocky and covered with white moſs. There is a great deal of ſmall wood near the factory, but the wood improves, further up the river from the bay, where they have juniper, birch, and poplar, and ſtill more ſoutherly the timber is larger, and there is great variety of trees.

Mr. Dobbs obſerves, that "The company avoid "all they can making diſcoveries to the north-"ward of Churchill, or extending their trade that "way, for fear they ſhould diſcover a paſſage to

" the weſtern ocean of America, and tempt, by " that means, the reſt of the Engliſh merchants " to lay open their trade, which they know they " have no legal right to; which, if the paſſage " was found, would not only animate the reſt of " the merchants to purſue the trade through that " paſſage, but alſo to find out the great advantages " that might be made of the trade of the rivers " and countries adjoining to the bay, by which " means they would loſe their beloved monopoly. " But the proſpect they have of gain to be made " by trading with the Eſkimaux Indians for whale-" fin, whale and ſeal oil, and ſea-horſe teeth, in-" duces them to venture a ſloop annually, as far " as 62°. 30. to Whale-Cove, where theſe Indians " meet them, and truck their fins and oil with " them."

The Indians of certain diſtricts, bounded by particular rivers, have each of them what they call an Okimah or Captain, who is an old man, eſteemed only for his prudence and experience. His authority is only what they pleaſe to give him upon particular occaſions. He is their orator, when they addreſs the Engliſh, and ſpeaks for them in their own councils, when they aſſemble every ſpring, to ſettle their quarters for hunting, fowling and fiſhing. They have but few religious ſentiments. They maintain that there are two monetoes or ſpirits, one who ſends all good things, and the other all the bad. Their worſhip conſiſts in ſongs and dances at their feaſts, in honour of the monetoes who have favoured them; but if they are ſick, or almoſt famiſhed for want of proviſions, they hang ſome little bauble, which they eſteem, upon the top of a pale near the tent, to pacify the offended ſpirit. As they live a rambling life, they can receive no benefit from tame fowl or cattle, for they ſeldom ſtay above a fornight at a place, unleſs they find plenty of game. On their removal they build

their huts, and then diſperſe to get game for their food, returning at night, after having killed enough to ſupport them for a day. But in theſe excurſions they do not proceed above a league or two from their huts. When they find ſcarcity of game they remove a league or two farther, and thus traverſe through theſe countries and bogs, ſcarce miſſing one day in winter and ſummer, whether the weather be fair or foul, and going in the greateſt ſtorms of ſnow. The ſmaller game got by traps or ſnares are generally the employment of women and children, as martins, ſquirrels, ermines, &c. while the elks, or mooſe-deer, ſtags, bears, tygers, wild beeves, wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, corcajons, &c. are the employment of the men. But when the Indians kill any game for food, they leave it upon the ſpot, and the next day ſend their wives to fetch it home; directing them to the place, by breaking off branches from the trees, and laying them in the road, pointing to the place where they ſhould go, and ſometimes they ſcatter moſs, ſo that they never miſs finding it. It is obſervable that the trees all bend towards the ſouth, and that the branches on that ſide are larger and ſtronger than thoſe of the north ſide, and that this is alſo the caſe with reſpect to the moſs that grows upon the trees.

When they go abroad in winter to hunt and ſhoot for their daily food, before they dreſs, they rub themſelves all over with bear's greaſe, or oil of beavers, which does not freeze. They alſo greaſe the fur of their beaver coats, and then put them on. They have a kind of boots or ſtockings made of beaver's ſkin, well oiled with the fur inwards, and above them they have an oiled-ſkin laced about their feet, which keeps out the cold and water, where there is neither ice nor ſnow; and by this means they never freeze or ſuffer by the cold. In ſummer when they go naked, they alſo rub them-

ſelves with oil or greaſe, which keeping their ſkins ſoft and ſupple, prevents their being ſcorched by expoſing themſelves to the ſun, and hinders their being moleſted by the flies, bugs, muſketoes, or any other noxious inſect. When they want to get rid of it, they go into the water and rub themſelves all over with mud or clay, then letting it dry upon them, they rub it off, but whenever they are free from the oil, the flies and muſketoes immediately attack them.

They uſe no milk from the time they are weaned, and have an averſion to cheeſe, from the opinion that it is made of dead men's fat. They love pruins and raiſins, and will give a beaver's ſkin for twelve of them, to carry to their children; they will give the ſame for a Jew's harp, or for the ſmalleſt print or picture, and all toys are conſidered by them as jewels.

The carcajons and otters prey upon the beavers when they can take them at an advantage. The former is as big as a very large dog, and has a good fur, which in exchange is valued at a beaver and a half.

A large beaver, or caſtor, is about twenty-ſix inches long from the hind part of the head to the root of the tail, and is about three feet eight inches round. Its head is about ſeven inches long and ſix broad, and its tail, which is ſomewhat of an oval form and covered with ſcales, is fourteen inches long and ſix broad. Its ears are ſhort and round; its eyes are ſmall, and it has two fore teeth in each jaw about an inch long, which are extremely ſharp and ſtrong. Though its legs are but five inches long its feet are above ſix inches in length, and its paws formed like a man's hand; but the toes of the hind feet are joined like thoſe of a duck, with a membrane of a flate colour. It makes uſe of its paw in feeding as apes do, and in building its houſe.

The ancient writers of natural hiſtory are miſtaken in aſſerting that the beavers bite off their teſticles when purſued by the huntſmen; for what the phyſicians call caſtoreum, is inguinal and glands of this animal. Beſides, the beavers are never purſued in hunting; for as they ſeldom leave the ſide of the pond where they have built their kennels, upon the leaſt noiſe they dive under water, and return to their little houſes when the danger is over.

The beavers are of three colours, ſome of a reddiſh brown, others black, and others white. Thoſe of each pond are repreſented by ſeveral authors, as forming a commonwealth; as having an excellent polity and laws, and as holding frequent conſultations for their mutual defence: but it is probable theſe things are greatly exaggerated: however their ſagacity is univerſally allowed to be very extraordinary, and the manner of building their houſes or kennels has been always a ſubject of admiration to the curious.

The beavers finding a rivulet that runs a-croſs a low ground, make banks that ſtop the courſe of the water, and cauſe an inundation that is ſometimes ſix miles in circumference. This bank is made with trees, which they cut down with their teeth, and then drag them along as they ſwim in the water. The trees being ranged along the bottom of the low ground, theſe animals load themſelves with graſs and earth, which they drag along upon their great tails, and throw in between the wood with ſuch art and induſtry, that it would be very difficult, if not impoſſible, for man to make a ſtronger wall with ſuch materials. Their tails ſerve them, both for carts and trowels, and their teeth for axes, their paws ſupply the place of hands, and their feet ſerve inſtead of oars. In ſhort, in the ſpace of five or ſix months, about an hundred of theſe animals will make banks of 4 or 500 paces in length, of 20

in heighth, and ſeven or eight in thickneſs. The pond being completed, they build their houſes near the center, by making holes at the bottom of the water, for planting ſix poſts, upon which each of their edifices is built in a moſt curious manner, with branches of trees, herbs, and earth. Some ſay they have three ſtories, that they may mount up from one to the other, when the waters riſe by rains or thaw; and that each beaver has an apartment to himſelf which he enters under water through a great hole in the firſt floor, that has a communication with the two other rooms; but this is not true.

The chief food of the beavers is the poplar, but they alſo eat ſallows, alders, and moſt other trees that have not a reſinous juice, feeding on the middle bark. In May when wood is not plenty, they live upon a large root, a fathom long, which grows in the marſhes, and is as thick as a man's leg, but at this time the beavers are not ſo good eating as when they feed upon barks. They will cut down trees with their teeth, that are extremely thick, and when one of them obſerves that the tree is ready to fall, he gives a loud cry and runs the contrary way, and is followed by the reſt. They then cut off all the twigs and ſmaller branches, two or three fathoms in length, and draw them to their houſes in the ponds, and having repaired their pond head, they thruſt one end of theſe ſticks into the clay or mud, that they may lie under water all the winter, to preſerve the bark, green and tender for their winter proviſions. In this manner they ſerve both the ſmaller and larger branches, until they come to the trunk of the tree.

The beaver, is excellent food, but the tongue and tail are the moſt delicious parts. They bring forth their young in the beginning of the ſummer, when the females are lean by ſuckling them, the males are alſo lean all the ſummer, during which

they are employed in repairing their ponds and houſes, and in cutting down and providing wood and branches for their winter ſtore, but they are very fat, from November till the end of March. They breed once a year, and have from ten to fifteen at a litter, which grow up in one ſeaſon; they therefore multiply very faſt, whence if the Indians empty a pond, and take the whole lodge, they generally leave a pair to breed, by which it is again fully ſtocked in two or three years time. A good hunter among the Indians can kill 600 beavers in a ſeaſon, but their canoes are ſo ſmall that they can bring only 100. They therefore ſometimes burn off the fur and roaſt the beavers like pigs.

The ounce is of the cat kind, but as large as a great dog; it preys upon all the beaſts it can conquer, as does alſo the tyger, which is the only beaſt in that country that will not fly from a man. The beeves have a large bunch upon their backs, which is by far the moſt delicious part of them, it being juicy, rich, and as ſweet as marrow, though it weighs ſeveral pounds. They are covered with exceeding good hair, almoſt as fine as ſilk, and one of their fleeces will weigh at leaſt eight pounds.

CHAPTER XXII.

A ſhort account of the ſettlement of Pennſylvania.

THE next ſtate that was ſettled in America, was that of Pennſylvania, the beſt projected, and moſt flouriſhing of the ſtates in North America. Admiral Penn, who in conjunction with col. Venables conquered the iſland of Jamaica, and was after-

wards knighted, being in high credit with king Charles II. and the duke of York, had the promiſe of a grant of this country from that king, as a reward for his paſt ſervices, and ſome years after his death his ſon ſtrenuouſly ſolicited the promiſed grant; which, as the king owed conſiderable ſums to his father, he obtained in the year 1679, and the original patent was dated the 4th of March, 1680. Mr. Penn afterwards obtained part of Nova Belgia, or the province of New-York, which was added to the country he had acquired by the firſt grant, and both together, from his own name, he called Pennſylvania, or Penn's Country.

But before we proceed, it may be neceſſary juſt to obſerve that the Dutch were the firſt planters here, as well as at New-York, and living near the bay in the neighbourhood of that province, applied themſelves chiefly to trade. Afterwards ſome of the inhabitants of Finland ſettled near the Freſhes of Delawar, where they applied themſelves to huſbandry, and had a governor appointed them by their own ſovereign the king of Sweden. But between theſe two neighbours there happened frequent diſputes, till the Dutch growing too powerful for the Swedes, the latter ſubmitted to their ſtronger neighbours, and the Swediſh governor made a formal ſurrender of the country to the governor for the States General; after which this province continued ſubject to that republic, till the Engliſh drove the Dutch out of New-York, which rendered the poſſeſſion of thoſe territories the more eaſy to Mr. Penn.

Before Mr. Penn ſent over the firſt adventurers under his patent, there were a few Engliſh in Pennſylvania, over whom he placed as Governor Colonel William Markham, his nephew, to whom both the Swedes and Dutch ſubmitted. Mr. Penn had the more earneſtly ſolicited the above grant, on account of the perſecution of the diſſenters, and

particularly on his finding his friends the quakers haraſſed all over England by the ſpiritual courts, he himſelf being many times thrown in priſon, not only for preaching, but merely for being preſent at their aſſemblies: He therefore reſolved to put himſelf at the head of as many as would go with him, and remove to this country, but firſt ſent over a body of ſettlers from London, Liverpool, and Briſtol, who purchaſed conſiderable quantities of land, at the rate of twenty pounds for a thouſand acres, and paying a ſmall quit-rent. The male and female ſervants were to have fifty acres when their time was out, and the owners of land thirty acres a head for ſuch ſervants. In order to ſecure the new planters from the Indians, he appointed commiſſioners to confer with them about the land and to confirm a league of peace: by theſe firſt adventurers, he alſo ſent a very affectionate and friendly letter to the native Indians, and the ſame year went to Pennſylvania himſelf, taking with him a great number of people, who with thoſe that immediately followed him, amounted to 2000 perſons.

As ſoon as he arrived, he took the government into his own hands, entered into a treaty of peace with the Indian kings, and inſtead of taking advantage of his patent, purchaſed of them the lands he had obtained by his grant. He then ſettled the conſtitution and laws of the country, by the conſent of the inhabitants, by whom it was unanimouſly agreed, according to the fundamental conſtitution of Pennſylvania, which he himſelf had drawn up and publiſhed in England, that all perſons who acknowledged the exiſtence of a God, ſhould enjoy free liberty of conſcience; and have the full enjoyment of civil liberty, and that no laws ſhould be made there nor money raiſed but by the conſent of the inhabitants; who were alſo allowed to enact what laws they pleaſed for the proſperity and ſe-

curity of the province. He eſtabliſhed courts of juſtice in every county, with proper officers, to prevent law-ſuits and contentions; and three peace-makers were choſen by every county-court in the nature of common arbitrators, to hear and put an end to all the differences that aroſe between man and man; he alſo ordained that every ſpring and autumn, an orphans court ſhould be held in each county, to inſpect and regulate the affairs of widows and orphans.

Mr. William Penn ſtaid there two years till he had ſettled every thing to his own and the people's ſatisfaction, during which he behaved in ſuch a manner to the Indians, that he inſpired them with a moſt extraordinary love and eſteem both for him and his people; ſo that they ſtill ſpeak of him with the utmoſt gratitude and affection, and whenever they would expreſs an extraordinary regard for any Engliſhman, they ſay we eſteem and love you as if you were that good man William Penn himſelf.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Some account of the motives, and the plan for ſettling the province of Georgia. The firſt colony ſent over under the direction of Mr. Oglethorpe.

BEFORE the laſt war with Spain, ſome perſons of great diſtinction obſerving, that conſiderable numbers of people in theſe kingdoms were by a variety of misfortunes rendered incapable of ſubſiſting in ſuch a way as to be uſeful to themſelves and the community, formed a deſign of ſettling that part of America which properly forms the frontier towards the Spaniards and the French, and which, though within the bounds of the pro-

vince of Carolina, as deſcribed in its charter, was in reality no part of it, as not being at all ſettled: and for that reaſon, rather a burden than an advantage to the province to which it belonged. They therefore applied to the crown for ſufficient powers to ſet this undertaking on foot, and meeting with all the encouragement they could deſire or expect, eaſily obtained a very extenſive charter. Their next care was to raiſe a fund ſufficient for ſending over a conſiderable number of people, and providing them with all kinds of neceſſaries, towards which they ſubſcribed liberally themſelves, obtained conſiderable ſums by way of collection, and had alſo a grant from the parliament of 10,000 l.

In laying the plan for this frontier ſettlement it was reſolved, to conſider each ſettler in a double capacity, as a planter, and as a ſoldier, and to provide for them arms for their defence, as well as tools for the cultivation of the land, and to have them taught the uſe of both. It was alſo reſolved, that upon the firſt ſettling of this colony, towns ſhould be laid out, and lands allotted each of the men, for their ſupport, as near thoſe towns as poſſible. It was agreed, that every lot of land ſhould conſiſt of 50 acres, and that it ſhould be granted them in tail male as the propereſt tenure for the colony in its infancy; and with reſpect to any hardſhips that might ariſe from this tenure, they determined to remedy them occaſionally, till ſuch time as the condition of the colony ſhould render an alteration neceſſary; they alſo determined to prohibit negroes, the uſe of them being abſolutely inconſiſtent with the deſign of forming a frontier ſettlement, and in many reſpects inconvenient and dangerous.

Theſe diſpoſitions being made, it was reſolved to ſend over 114 perſons, men, women, and children, out of ſuch as were in low circumſtances, and by that means unable to follow any buſineſs in

England, and who if in debt had leave from their creditors to go; and of ſuch as were recommended by the miniſter, church-wardens and overſeers of their reſpective pariſhes, and James Oglethorpe, Eſq. one of the truſtees, offered to go and form the ſettlement at his own expence.

On the 24th of October 1732, the people were all examined whether any of them had any objections to the terms and conditions propoſed, when they declared that they were fully ſatisfied with them, and executed articles under their hands and ſeals, teſtifying their conſents thereto; but four of them deſiring their daughters might inherit, as well as their ſons, and that their widows dower might be conſidered; the truſtees immediately reſolved, that every perſon who ſhould deſire the ſame ſhould have the privilege of naming a ſucceſſor to the lands granted him; who in caſe the poſſeſſor ſhould die without iſſue male, ſhould hold the ſame to them and their heirs for ever; and that the widows ſhould have their thirds as in England. This reſolution was immediately communicated to all the people, who now expreſſed themſelves fully ſatisfied.

The truſtees then prepared a form of government, and eſtabliſhed under their ſeal a court of judicature, for trying cauſes, as well criminal as civil, in the town of Savannah, the name given to the firſt town to be raiſed; they alſo appointed a bailiff, a recorder, two conſtables, and two tything men, out of ſuch of the ſettlers as appeared moſt prudent and diſcreet.

Theſe meaſures being taken, Mr. Oglethorpe ſet out for Graveſend on the 15th of November, 1732, and from thence ſailed for Carolina, where he arrived with the colony on the 15th of January following. They were received at Charles Town, by the governor, with great kindneſs and civility, when Mr. Middleton, the king's pilot, was ordered

to ſteer the ſhip into Port Royal, and to convey the ſmall craft with the colony from thence to the river Savannah. On the 18th Mr. Oglethorpe went on ſhore upon French's Iſland, and left a guard upon John's, a point of that iſland which commands the channel, and is about half way between Beaufort and the river Savannah. Mr. Oglethorpe then went to Beaufort Town, where he was ſaluted with a diſcharge of the artillery, and had a new barrack fitted up, where the colony landed on the 20th, and were cheerfully aſſiſted by the officers and gentlemen of the neigbourhood, From thence he went to view the Savannah river, and having pitched upon a convenient ſpot of ground ten miles up, the town was marked out, and the firſt houſe begun on the 9th of February, 1733.

The chief reaſons that determined Mr. Oglethorpe in the choice of this place were, health, pleaſure, and conveniency. Before his arrival in the country, it had the name of Yammacraw, from an Indian nation who inhabited there, under the command of their chief Tomochichi, who readily gave place to the Engliſh, and entered into a cloſe friendſhip with them, which was the more agreeble, as there was no other Indian nation within 50 miles, but Mr. Oglethorpe called the town Savannah, from the name of the river.

While the town was building, Mr. Oglethorpe kept a ſtrict diſcipline, none of the people were allowed to ſwear or get drunk ; they were debarred the uſe of ſpirituous lipuors, and inſtead of rum, had Engliſh beer. While this work was going forwards, ſome of the land was ploughed up, part of which was ſowed with wheat. At the ſame time two or three gardens were ſowed with pot-herbs, &c. and ſeveral fruit trees planted. The limits of the town were alſo palliſadoed, and every thing went forwards with the greateſt regularity.

Things being in ſome forwardneſs, and every man being appointed his proper ſtation and employment, Mr. Oglethorpe ſet out for Charles-Town, to ſolicit ſuccours for his colony, where both the aſſembly and people in general contributed largely to the aſſiſtance of the new comers. Five hundred pounds of this money Mr. Oglethorpe immediately laid out in cattle, and having given directions for providing at Charles Town what his people might have occaſion for, went back to Savannah.

On his return, he found that the chief men of the Lower Creek Indians were come to treat of an alliance with the new colony. Theſe Lower Creeks are a nation that formerly conſiſted of ten, but are now reduced to eight tribes, that have each a different government, but are allied together and ſpeak the ſame language. Their claims extended from the Savannah river, as far as St. Auguſtin and up Flint river, which falls into the bay of Mexico. Tomochichi and the Indians of Yammacraw, were of the ſame nation.

Mr. Oglethorpe received the Indians in one of the new houſes. They conſiſted of the chiefs and war captains of the ſeveral tribes and their attendants, all of whom being ſeated. Oueekachumpa, a very tall old man, ſtood up and made a ſpeech, which was interpreted by Mr. Wigan and Mr. Muſgrove: He firſt claimed all the lands to the ſouthward of the river Savannah, as belonging to the Creek Indians, and then added, that though they were but poor and ignorant, he that had given the Engliſh breath, had given them breath alſo, but had beſtowed more wiſdom on the white men. That they were all perſuaded, that the great power who dwelt in heaven and all around (at which he ſpread out his hands and lengthened the ſound of his words) had ſent the Engliſh thither for the inſtruction of them, their wives and their children,

that therefore they freely gave up to them their right to all the land they did not uſe themſelves. That this was not only his opinion, but the opinion of the eight towns of the Creeks, each of whom having conſulted together had ſent ſome of their chief men with ſkins, which was their wealth. The chief men then brought a bundle of buckſkins, and laid eight from the eight towns before Mr Oglethorpe. He then ſaid that theſe were the beſt things they had, and that they gave them with a good heart. He thanked him for his kindneſs to Tomochichi, to whom he ſaid he was related, who though he had been baniſhed from his nation, was a good man, and had been a great warrior, and that for his wiſdom and juſtice, the baniſhed men had choſen him Mico or king. He concluded with ſaying, that he had heard the Cherokees had killed ſome Engliſhmen, and that if Mr. Oglethorpe would command them, they would enter with their whole force into the Cherokee country, deſtroy their harveſt, kill the people, and revenge the Engliſh.

When he had done ſpeaking, Tomochichi came in with the Yammacraw Indians, and making a low obeiſance, ſaid, "I was a baniſhed man, and "came here poor and helpleſs, to look for good "land near the tombs of my anceſtors, and when "you the Engliſh came to this place, I feared "you would drive us away; for we were weak "and wanted corn: But you confirmed our land "to us, and gave us food." Then the chiefs of the other nations made ſpeeches, to the ſame purpoſe as Oueekachumpa's; after which a treaty of alliance and commerce was agreed to, and ſigned by Mr. Oglethorpe and them. Which being done, a laced coat, a laced hat, and a ſhirt, were given to each king: Each of the warriors had a gun and a mantle of duffils, and all their attendants had coarſe cloth for clothing and other things.

This treaty being concluded, Mr. Oglethorpe returned to England to procure the neceſſary ſupplies, and arrived there in June 1734, bringing with him Tomochichi, Mico or king of the Yammacraws, Senawki, his conſort, and Yoonakowi, his nephew; as alſo Hilliſpilli, a war captain, and Apakowtſki, Stimaletchi, Sintouchi, Hiuguthi, and Umphychi, five other Indian chiefs, with their interpreter.

Theſe Indians were lodged at the Georgia office in old Palace-yard, where they were handſomely entertained; and being ſuitably dreſſed, were introduced to the court, which was then at Kenſington. Tomochichi preſented to the king ſeveral eagles feathers, which according to their cuſtom was the moſt reſpectful gift he could offer, and then made the following ſpeech; "This day I "ſee the majeſty of your face, the greatneſs of "your houſe, and the number of your people. "I come for the good of the whole nation called "the Creeks, to renew the peace they have long "ago concluded with the Engliſh. I am come "over in my old days, though I cannot live to "reap any advantage to myſelf. I am come for "the good of the children of all the nations of the "Upper and Lower Creeks, that they may be in-"ſtructed in the knowledge of the Engliſh. Theſe "are the feathers of the eagle, the ſwifteſt of all "birds, who fly round our nations. Theſe feathers "are in our land a ſign of peace, and we have "brought them over to leave with you, O great "king, as a ſign of everlaſting peace. O great "king, whatſoever words you ſhall ſay unto me, "I will tell them faithfully to all the kings of "the Creek nations." In anſwer to this ſpeech his majeſty aſſured him, that all thoſe nations ſhould have his protection, and ſincere regard.

Theſe Indians afterwards took a tour through the nation, and during their ſtay in England gave

the moſt evident marks of good ſenſe, and of a ſincere inclination to carry on a friendly correſpondence between their own nation and ours. They in particular deſired the truſtees, that the weights, meaſures, prices, and qualities of goods to be purchaſed by them with their deer-ſkins might be ſettled. That nobody might be allowed to trade with them without a licence from the truſtees, that if they were injured they might know where to complain, and that there might be but one ſtore-houſe in each Indian town, for ſupplying them with the goods they might want to purchaſe, and that in each, the traders ſhould be obliged to ſupply them at the fixed prices. Alleging that the traders had often in an arbitrary manner raiſed the price of goods, and defrauded them in their weights and meaſures; which had frequently created animoſities between the Engliſh and Indians, that had ended in wars, prejudicial to both nations.

In compliance with this requeſt, the truſtees procured ſeveral acts of parliament; one for maintaining peace with theſe Indians; another to prevent the importation and uſe of ſpirituous liquors into the province of Georgia; and another to prevent the introduction of negroes into that province.

Things being thus ſettled, two embarkations were made the ſame year, chiefly of Saltburghers, who with others that went before, built and ſettled a town, called Ebenezer, upon the river Savannah. The ſucceeding year, the colony of South Carolina, ſending over a memorial relating to their danger from the French and Spaniards, the parliament granted the truſtees an extraordinary ſupply of 26,000l. and very conſiderable benefactions were made both in England and Carolina, on which account great numbers of people were ſent, who conſiſted moſtly of perſecuted

German proteſtants, and others from the north of Scotland.

In January 1735, ſome highlanders arrived in Georgia and were ſettled on the Alatamaha river, about ſixteen miles diſtant from the iſland of St. Simon which is at its mouth. They ſoon raiſed convenient huts, till their houſes could be built, and the town at their deſire was called Darien, which name that diſtrict ſtill remains, though they afterwards changed the name of the town to that of New Inverneſs.

On the 6th of February following arrived the great embarkation, conſiſting of 470 perſons, under the direction of Mr. Oglethorpe, and was ſettled upon the iſland of St. Simon. The Creek Indians came down upon this occaſion, and in conſequence of their claiming a right to the country, were treated with, when they agreed that the Engliſh ſhould poſſeſs that and all the adjacent iſlands; which neceſſary ſtep being taken, the town of Frederica was laid out, and the people ſet to work in building of houſes.

The iſland of St. Simon is conveniently ſituated at the mouth of the Alatamaha, a very fine river; it is about forty miles in extent; has a rich and fruitful ſoil, and is full of oak and hickery trees, intermixed with meadows.

As ſoon as this ſettlement was made, care was taken for its ſecurity, on account of its being the ſouthern barrier. A regular fortreſs ſtrengthened with four baſtions, and a ſpur work was erected at Frederica, towards the river, and ſeveral pieces of cannon mounted upon it: A ſtrong battery was alſo raiſed, for the protection of Jekyll ſound, where ten or twelve forty gun ſhips may ſafely ride. Another fort was built on the ſouth-weſt part of Cumberland iſland, where ſeveral pieces of cannon are pointed towards the river, ſo as to command all the ſloops and ſmall craft navigating that

paſſage; within the palliſade which ſurrounds the fort, are fine ſprings of water, and a good timber houſe, with large and convenient magazines under it, for ammunition and proviſions.

But while ſuch care was taken of the ſouth frontier, the northern part of the colony was not neglected: Orders were given for erecting a fort at Auguſta, a place ſituated on the river Savannah, where the traders with the Indians from South Carolina and Georgia reſort, and where there are large warehouſes furniſhed with ſuch goods as are wanted by the Indians. The deer ſkins taken in exchange are ſent 230 miles down the river, to the town of Savannah, in boats that carry each about 9000 weight. A horſe road was alſo made from thence to the town of Savannah, and to the dwellings of the Cherokee Indians. By theſe precautions the trade of both colonies with theſe Indians was facilitated, and the country on that ſide, ſecured from any farther attempts of an enemy.

The ſettlements now became ſo conſiderable as not only to draw the attention but to excite the jealouſy of the Spaniards, who would have been glad to have overpowered and driven out their neighbours, but the Indians being ſtrongly attached to the Engliſh, the governor of St. Auguſtin, upon mature deliberation, found it more expedient to enter into a negociation, and to endeavour to conclude an amicable agreement with the Engliſh ſettlements, and Mr. Oglethorpe concluded a treaty with him, upon very ſafe and advantageous terms; in which it was mutually agreed, that neither the Indians ſubject to the king of Spain ſhould attack the ſubjects of Great-Britain, nor the Creeks commit hoſtilities againſt the ſubjects of his Catholic majeſty. That Mr. Oglethorpe ſhould draw off the garriſon and artillery from the iſland of St George, provided that none of his Catholic majeſty's ſubjects ſhould inhabit it, and that no

prejudice ſhould thence ariſe to the right of his Britannic majeſty to that iſland. That the ſubjects of neither crown ſhould moleſt each other, and the differences that might ariſe concerning the limits of their reſpective governments, and the dominion of the two crowns ſhould remain undecided till the determination of the reſpective courts. But it ſeems the governor of St. Auguſtin was not in the ſecret of his court, for the Spaniſh miniſtry laid claim to Georgia, as being within the dominion of Spain, and began to tranſport troops into Spaniſh Florida from the iſland of Cuba, and other parts of their dominions. They diſapproved of the treaty concluded by the governor of St. Auguſtin, and made open preparations, in order to attack the ſettlements of Georgia.

Theſe preparations ſoon came to the knowledge of the lieutenant-governor of South-Carolina, who ſending a memorial to his Majeſty, he was pleaſed to order a regiment of 600 effective men to be raiſed and ſent for the protection of Georgia; and as a farther encouragement to theſe ſoldiers, the truſtees gave each of them an allotment of five acres of land to cultivate for their own uſe and benefit, and it was reſolved that each ſoldier, who after being ſeven years in the ſervice, ſhould be deſirous of quitting it, ſhould have his regular diſcharge and be entitled to a grant of twenty acres.

In the beginning of the year 1737, the parliament conſidering the great expences the truſtees had been at in making roads, building fortifications and ſending preſents to the Indians, granted them 20,000l. more for the farther ſettling and ſecuring the ſettlement; on which the truſtees made another embarkation, chiefly of perſecuted German proteſtants; and in conſequence of ſo conſiderable an augmentation of people, all the towns laid out in Georgia, received great ſupplies, and the utmoſt care was taken to put the fortifications into the beſt

poſture of defence, that their circumſtances would allow.

On the arrival of the regiment of which Mr. Oglethorpe was appointed colonel, he diſtributed them in the propereſt manner for the ſervice of the ſettlements; but ſtill kept up the ſame diſcipline and took as much care to form and regulate the inhabitants with reſpect to military affairs as ever. He alſo provided different corps for different ſervices; ſome for ranging the woods; and others for ſudden expeditions; he likewiſe provided veſſels for ſcouring the ſea coaſts and for gaining intelligence.

The truſtees by their letters and inſtructions to the magiſtrates, had conſtantly exhorted and encouraged the people to cultivate their lands; but in 1738, finding that there were many who ſtill continued in idleneſs, and were a burden to them, they gave orders for ſtriking off the ſtore, all who having had time to cultivate their lands, neglected this important duty, and at length a part of the people ſent over a memorial to the truſtees complaining of the want of a fee ſimple in their lands, and of not being permitted the uſe of negroes. But thoſe who were ſettled on the frontier and were conſequently moſt expoſed to the Spaniards, having by their induſtry improved their plantations, ſo as to draw from them a comfortable ſubſiſtence, ſent over a contrary memorial, wherein they repreſented the diſadvantages and dangers that would ariſe from the permiſſion of negroes.

At this very time they had intelligence, that a conſpiracy was formed by the negroes in South-Carolina, to riſe and forcibly make their way out of the province, in order to put themſelves under the protection of the Spaniards, who had proclaimed freedom to all who ſhould run to them from their owners. As there was great reaſon to believe that this riſing was to be univerſal, and as

the negroes were computed at 40,000, while the white inhabitants did not exceed 5000, the whole province was upon its guard. However, ſeveral negroes who were employed in Periaguas carried them off, and took the benefit of the proclamation by going to St. Auguſtine, upon which the government of South-Carolina, ſent a ſolemn deputation to demand their ſlaves; but though this was a time of profound peace, the governor of St. Auguſtine peremptorily refuſed to deliver them up, and even declared that he had orders to receive and protect all who ſhould come to him. Upon theſe repreſentations the truſtees ſent an anſwer, in which they poſitively refuſed to ſuffer the ſettlements to have the uſe of ſlaves.

The truſtees had the greateſt reaſon for acting in this manner; ſince among the perſons to whom grants were made in order to their ſettling at their own expence, ſome never went over to take them up or to ſettle at all; others were gentlemen of Carolina, who neglected the proſecution of their grants, and never ſo much as deſired to have their lands laid out; and ſeveral had quitted the laborious life of planters to reſide more at their eaſe at Savannah, where, by the exerciſe of their ſeveral trades and profeſſions, they brought many people in debt; beſides horſe races and other diverſions were ſet on foot, and ſuch a ſpirit of idleneſs began to prevail, as eaſily accounted for their eagerneſs in deſiring to have the uſe of negroes, and plainly ſhewed with what fatal conſequences it muſt have been attended, if the truſtees had nor remained firm to their firſt reſolutions, and had not given ſuch an anſwer as ſhewed they were reſolved to preſerve that ſpirit in the colony, upon which it was ſettled. However, to make the people as eaſy and contented as they could, they enlarged their grants on failure of iſſue male, and made a certain proviſion for the widows of the grantees.

In the mean time the French growing very uneaſy at the ſettlement of Georgia and their intercourſe with the Indians, began to make uſe of every method in order to raiſe jealouſies between them and the Creeks, which was no ſooner known, than it greatly alarmed not only the people ſettled in Georgia, but the whole province of Carolina, from a juſt ſenſe of the danger to which they ſhould be expoſed, if the French either by their artifices or preſents, ſhould draw over the Creek Indians to their party. Upon this, Mr. Oglethorpe thought it neceſſary to enter into a cloſer alliance with that nation, and to take a journey to the Coweta town, though at the diſtance of no leſs than 500 miles from Frederica, where he then was, and through a country very little known and very difficult for Europeans to travel. He however provided himſelf with horſes and preſents, and after a painful and fatiguing journey reached that place in ſafety, where he was received by the Indians with all imaginable marks of friendſhip and reſpect, and had an opportunity of conferring, not only with the chiefs of all the tribes of that nation, but alſo with the deputies of the Choctaws and Chickeſaws, who lie between the Engliſh and French ſettlements, and who had ſent their deputies thither with that view.

His coming to the Coweta town diſſipated all the fears, and extinguiſhed all the jealouſies of the Indians. They told him at the firſt conference that it had been inſinuated to them, that he was coming into that country to deprive them of their lands, and that they had been aſſured he was actually preparing to invade them, but that by the entire confidence he placed in them, by coming without a body of regular troops, he convinced them that theſe were all falſhoods and calumnies, and that inſtead of injuring them by the ſettlement he was making, it would prove a new ſecurity to

to them as well as to the Engliſh, and put it out of the power of their common enemies to hurt them; and in ſhort they readily concluded a new, more full and explicit treaty with him. Thus the deſigns of the French were unravelled, and the Creek nation became more cloſely connected with the Engliſh.

The land of Carolina lies low near the ſea, and is covered with wood, but begins to riſe into hills, at twenty-five miles diſtance, and at length terminates in mountains, which running in a line from north to ſouth along the back of Virginia, and Carolina, end in the province of Georgia, about 200 miles from the Bay of Apalachia, in the gulph of Mexico. As there is a level country from the foot of theſe mountains to that ſea, it was the more neceſſary to fortify the banks of the river Savannah and Alatamaha, in order to prevent the incurſions of the Spaniards and French by land. The Savannah is navigable 300 miles for boats, and 600 for canoes. A range of iſlands runs parallel to the coaſt of Georgia, and defends it from the fury of the ocean; and as both the continent and iſlands are well wooded, the channels between them are extremely pleaſant. There are alſo ſand-banks, that extend upwards of ſeventy miles from the coaſt of Georgia, the water ſhoaling gradually, till within ſix miles of the land, where the ſhallowneſs of the banks bars all farther paſſage, except in the channels that lie between the bars. Theſe were ſuppoſed a ſufficient defence againſt the fleets of the French and Spaniards, till the latter found means to paſs the channels, in the year 1742, and to attack the iſland of St. Simon, which had been loſt with the town of Frederica, if general Oglethorpe had not by his excellent conduct, defeated their deſigns.

CHAPTER XXIV.

An account of Novia Scotia from its firſt diſcovery to its complete ſettlement in 1749.

WE are now brought by the order of time to the ſettlement of Nova Scotia or Acadia. This country was in the reign of queen Elizabeth, conſidered as a part of Virginia, and as ſuch was included in the charter of the weſtern company eſtabliſhed by king James I.

In the year 1618, Sir Samuel Argall, governor of Virginia, made a cruiſing voyage along the coaſt northwards, as far as Cape-Cod in New England, when the Indians informing him that ſome white men, like himſelf, were come to inhabit to the northward of them, he being ſenſible that all the country, as far as it had been diſcovered by Cabot, belonged to the Virginia company his employers, ſailed thither, and found a ſettlement, with a French ſhip riding before it. This veſſel having but one deck, Sir Samuel ſoon drove the men from it with his ſmall arms, and having taken the ſhip, landed his men, marched to the fort, and ſummoned it to ſurrender. The French aſked time to conſider of it; but this being denied, they got privately away, and fled into the woods; upon which the Engliſh entered the place, and having lodged there that night, the French came the next day, and ſurrendered themſelves to Sir Samuel, cancelling the patents that had been granted for their ſettlement by the French king. Sir Samuel now permitted thoſe who choſe it, to ſtay and take a paſſage to Europe in the fiſhing veſſels, which then frequented the coaſt, and the reſt, who were willing to join the Engliſh, he took with him to Virginia.

Sir Samuel being then informed, that the French had another ſettlement at a place they called Port Royal, ſituated on a bay on the ſouth-weſt coaſt of Acadia, ſailed thither without delay, and obliged them alſo to ſurrender; when reſolving that they ſhould quit the country, he made thoſe who did not care to return home, to remove to the river St. Laurence, where Quebec, now the capital of Canada, has ſince been built.

In the year 1621, Sir William Alexander, afterwards created the earl of Sterling, applied to king James I. for a grant of the country to the north of New-England: when it was ſuggeſted to that king that the tract of country on the continent of North-America, belonging to the crown, being very large, and not likely to be planted by the Engliſh in any reaſonable time, it would be a very wiſe and prudent meaſure, to grant, under the great ſeal of Scotland, a part of it to his ſubjects of that kingdom, upon a ſuppoſition that it would be more beneficial to them, and more for the intereſt of his kingdoms, if they went over and ſettled there, than if, as they frequently did, they removed to Poland, Sweden, and Ruſſia, where there were at that time many thouſands of Scots families.

Theſe reaſons appeared of ſuch weight to king James, that he readily granted a patent to Sir William, and the next year that gentleman, and ſome others who were concerned with him, ſent a ſhip with paſſengers to plant and ſettle there.

At that time Newfoundland was well known, on account of the fiſhery, and the ſhip being late in her voyage put in and wintered there. In 1623, they ſailed from thence, and made the cape at the north ſhore of the iſland of Cape-Breton, and coaſting till they came to Cape-Sable in Acadia, they found three good harbours, and went aſhore at one of them, which they called St. Luke's

Bay. They there found a large river, that had eight fathoms water at ebb, and having ſailed up it, the ſhip returned to England, and the proprietors publiſhed an account of the country, which they deſcribed as a kind of a paradiſe; Sir William Alexander himſelf wrote and publiſhed a book on this ſubject, and king James, in order to facilitate this plantation, erected a new order called the knights of Nova-Scotia.

Thus, that country, called by the French, Acadia, obtained the name of Nova-Scotia, or New-Scotland, from its being intended to be ſettled by the Scots; but the ſcheme of that ſettlement was unhappily turned into a job, and by that means defeated. Afterwards another grant was made of the northern part of the country to Sir David Kirk, from whom the French king bought it, or at leaſt agreed to give him 5000l. for it. Though it is evident this proprietor had no more right to diſpoſe of the property of the crown in that country, than a nobleman in England has to diſpoſe of his eſtate to the French king, yet this is an evident proof that the French acknowledged the right by which that proprietor held it, and held ſo juſt an opinion of puſillanimity of king James, as to be in no apprehenſions of his vindicating the unalienible rights of the nation.

Oliver Cromwell, however, ſent major Sedgwick to diſlodge the French from Port-Royal, which he did, and though he afterwards conſented that a French proprietor ſhould enjoy the country, yet it was upon condition that he ſhould purchaſe it of the earl of Sterling, which he afterwards did, and then ſold it to Sir Thomas Temple, who was both proprietor and governor at the reſtoration: after which the French ſettled there again, and continued in the quiet poſſeſſion of the country till the year 1690, when they were diſpoſſeſſed by Sir William Phipps, governor of New-England; but

it was afterwards given up again to the French, by king William III. at the treaty of Ryſwick.

In all theſe changes the iſland of Cape-Breton followed the fate of Nova-Scotia, and both continued in the hands of the French till the year 1710, when governor Nicholſon made himſelf maſter of Port-Royal, which was then become a place of great conſequence, as it gave the French an opportunity of diſtreſſing the trade, to ſuch a degree, that it was properly ſtiled the Dunkirk of America. The taking of this place was therefore conſidered as an important ſervice, and queen Anne, to ſhew that ſhe would never part with it, gave it her own name, and called it Annapolis-Royal. Upon col. Nicholſon's return to England, ſhe made him governor of Nova-Scotia and of Annapolis-Royal, and commander of all her majeſty's forces there, and in Newfoundland.

Things were in this ſituation, when the treaty of Utrecht was concluded, by which the right to Nova-Scotia, or Acadia, with all its ancient boundaries, the city of Port-Royal, now called Annapolis, and every thing in thoſe parts that depend on lands and iſlands, together with the dominion, property, and poſſeſſion, of the ſaid iſlands and lands, ſhall be for ever veſted in the crown of Great-Britain: to which the French king added, the excluſion of the ſubjects of France from fiſhing on the coaſt of Nova-Scotia, and within 30 leagues, beginning from Cape Sable, and ſtretching along to the ſouthweſt.

This colony was however much neglected for many years; for though Nova-Scotia had been ſo long delivered up to the Engliſh, yet there was ſcarce any ſettlement there, except at Annapolis Royal, and Canſo, while the French had a number of little towns and villages, ſcattered along the coaſt, and on the banks of the rivers; but the Engliſh commander at Annapolis, was in ſome

degree acknowledged as goverror. The country was then divided into ten or twelve diſtricts, and each diſtrict annually choſe a deputy to be approved by the commander and council at Annapolis; this deputy was a ſort of agent for his countrymen the deſcendants of the French in that diſtrict, and reported the ſtate of it from time to time; but in what manner is not difficult to determine. There was no civil power; the French miſſionaries who were not only appointed by the biſhop of Quebec, but abſolutely under his direction in their ſeveral diſtricts and villages, acted as the ſole magiſtrates, or juſtices of the peace; yet all complaints might, if the parties thought proper, be brought before the commander and the council at Annapolis, which was very rarely done.

In this wretched ſituation were theſe two ſettlements in the beginning of the war before the laſt, ſurrounded by diſguiſed enemies, continually encroaching, and whoſe numbers daily encreaſed. At length theſe deſcendants of the French, though profeſſedly the ſubjects of Great Britain, joined with that nation, deſtroyed Canſo, and, laid ſiege to Annapolis, but without ſucceſs, ſo that at the concluſion of the peace in the beginning of 1749, there were no other Engliſh in Nova Scotia, beſides the garriſon of Annapolis, and the inhabitants who lived within a few miles round that place.

However, the peace was no ſooner concluded, than the earl of Halifax projected the complete ſettlement of Nova-Scotia by the Engliſh, and animated with the warmeſt zeal for the honour and intereſt of his country, reſolved to uſe his utmoſt endeavours to carry it in the moſt effectual manner into execution. He with the other lords commiſſioners of trade and plantations, having gained his majeſty's approbation, they in March 1749, publiſhed propoſals, offering proper encouragement to ſuch of the officers and private men, as after the

late concluſion of the peace, had been diſmiſſed his majeſty's land and ſea-ſervice, and were willing to accept of grants, in order to ſettle in Nova-Scotia. Fifty acres of land in fee ſimple were offered to every private ſoldier or ſeamen, free from the payment of any quit-rents and taxes, for the term of ten years, and at the expiration of that time they were to pay only one ſhilling a year for every 50 acres. But this was not all, every private ſoldier or ſeamen, who had a family, was to have ten acres for every perſon of which his family conſiſted, including women and children; and farther grants were to be made to them on the like conditions, in proportion as their families encreaſed, or to their abilities for cultivating the land.

Eighty acres were offered on the ſame conditions, to every officer in the land-ſervice under the rank of enſign, and that of lieutenant in the ſea-ſervice, and to thoſe who had families, 15 acres more for every perſon of which their families conſiſted.

On the ſame conditions 200 acres were to be granted to every enſign, 300 to every lieutenant, 400 to every captain, and 600 to every officer above the rank of captain, in the land ſervice. Every lieutenant in the ſea-ſervice was to have 400 acres, and every captain 600; while ſuch of the above officers who had families, were offered a further grant of 30 acres, over and above their reſpective quotas for every perſon belonging to them. The ſame conditions that were propoſed to private ſoldiers and ſailors, were alſo offered to carpenters, ſhipwrights, ſmiths, maſons, joiners, brickmakers, bricklayers, and all other artificers neceſſary in building and huſbandry.

In ſhort, all who were willing to accept theſe propoſals, were to be ſubſiſted with their families, not only during their paſſage, but for 12 months

after their arrival at Nova-Scotia, and to be furniſhed with arms and ammunition as far as ſhould be thought neceſſary for their defence; with a proper quantity of materials and utenſils for huſbandry, clearing and cultivating their lands, erecting houſes, carrying on the fiſhery, and ſuch other purpoſes as might be found proper for their ſupport.

Theſe generous propoſals had all the ſucceſs that could be deſired; and about the beginning of May moſt of the tranſports ſet ſail from Portſmouth, with above 3000 families, and ſoon after others followed from Liverpool and Ireland. This embarkation, which was the largeſt ever made on ſuch an occaſion, was doing at once what in other ſettlements had not been done under a long courſe of years. This great number of ſettlers arrived ſafe at Chebucto harbour on the 28th of July, after a pleaſant paſſage of between five and ſix weeks; loſing few or none in the voyage, which was in a great meaſure owing to the ventilators, fixed in the tranſports; a happy invention, then but lately diſcovered.

On the arrival of this numerous body, they found the Sphinx of 20 guns, which had entered the harbour a few days before, with col. Cornwallis, their governor on board. His excellency had been informed of the arrival of the French at Cape Breton, which had been juſt reſtored to that nation, he therefore ſent for the Engliſh garriſon from Louiſburgh, and they ſoon after entered the harbour, with the regiments of Hopſon and Warburton, on board other tranſports; the officers bringing with them all their furniture, ſeveral milch cows, and other ſtock, with military ſtores, and ammunition of all ſorts. About the ſame time there alſo arrived a company of rangers from Annapolis, and encamped near the new ſettlers, in order to give them aſſiſtance and protection.

The next care of the governor, was to pitch upon a proper ſpot for the firſt ſettlement, and as the peninſula appeared preferable, both on account of its commodious ſituation, and the fertility of the ſoil, the able-bodied men on board each ſhip were employed in clearing ground in order to build a town at the ſouth point, at the entrance of Sandwich River; but many objections being ſoon found againſt that place, another ſpot was choſen by the governor, at about the diſtance of a mile and a half from it on the ſide of Chebucto Harbour, and on the declivity of a riſing ground that commands the whole peninſula, and would ſhelter the town when built from the north-weſt winds. The beach they found was a fine gravel, convenient for ſmall boats, the anchorage was every where good for large ſhips within gun-ſhot of the town, and ſmall but navigable rivers of freſh and wholeſome waters flowed round about it. Here then they made a ſecond and more ſucceſsful attempt, and indeed it would not have been eaſy to have choſen a more happy ſituation, they therefore cleared the ground in as expeditious a manner as poſſible, and having erected a large wooden houſe for the governor, with proper ſtorehouſes, the ground was laid out ſo as to form a number of ſtrait and beautiful ſtreets, croſſing each other at equal diſtances, upon a moſt excellent plan, ſaid to have been formed by the earl of Halifax; the work went on briſkly; the people of New-England brought ſeveral ſhips laden with planks, door-caſes, doors, window frames and other parts of houſes; and the people being employed in ſhips companies, this created an emulation that rendered their labours remarkably ſucceſsful, ſo that in about three years time, this town which was named Halifax from that noble lord, to whom this ſettlement owed its beginning, was finiſhed, and every family had a good houſe of their own, of which the maſter was the landlord. Within the

ſame ſpace of time were alſo erected a church and wharves, the town was palliſadoed and other fortifications erected; ſome land was alſo cleared for agriculture and already planted, notwithſtanding the oppoſition they met with from the French and their tools the Indians. To explain this circumſtance it is neceſſary to obſerve, that in the beginning of the ſettlement and ſoon after the landing of the Engliſh, 100 black cattle and ſome ſheep were brought them by land from a French ſettlement at Minas, a town about thirty miles from the bottom of Bedford Bay; and French deputies alſo coming to make their ſubmiſſions, it was propoſed to cut a road thither, thoſe deputies promiſing to contribute fifty men towards carrying on that work. The Engliſh alſo received the promiſe of friendſhip and aſſiſtance from the Indians, their chiefs waiting upon the governor for that purpoſe. But theſe ſubmiſſions and theſe promiſes were ſoon broken by the perfidy of the French court, which diſapproved of theſe proceedings, and reſolved to harraſs the Engliſh before their town was built and their fortifications erected. Inſtructions were therefore ſent from France, to be communicated to the deſcendants of the French in Nova-Scotia, and immediately the ſcene was changed; the French engaged the Indians to uſe their utmoſt endeavours to prevent the new colony from proceeding; and the year in which peace was proclaimed and Cape-Breton reſtored was not expired, when the town began to be frequently attacked in the night, and the Engliſh in a country, which in the ſtrongeſt terms had been ſecured by treaty to the Britiſh crown, could not ſtir into the adjoining woods without the danger of being ſhot, ſcalped, or taken priſoners. The Engliſh however proſecuted the ſettlement with indefatigable induſtry, and the town as has been already mentioned, was ſoon happily finiſhed.

But it was impoſſible to clear the woods and plough lands without ſeparating into ſmall parties, and this was rendered extremely dangerous: for though the French and Indians durſt not attack any conſiderable body of the Engliſh, yet they frequently fell upon ſmall parties; and though they had been often repulſed, they always returned whenever they could find an opportunity of doing it to advantage. Complaint of this open war in a time of peace, was now made to the court of France, when his moſt chriſtian majeſty propoſed that commiſſaries ſhould be appointed to ſettle the bounds of Nova Scotia; but thoſe of the French endeavouring by all the arts of ſophiſtry, to prove that Nova-Scotia ceded to the Engliſh by the treaty of Utrecht, was no more than the peninſula of that country, the Britiſh commiſſaries juſtified their claim to the whole, by memorials filled with the ſtrongeſt and moſt evident proofs; and the moſt trifling anſwers being returned to theſe, Admiral Boſcawen was ſent to ſeize the French ſhips in North-America, that England might once more have ſomething to reſtore to France, as an inducement to that powerful nation to adhere to her treaties; but this expedient was in vain; France appeared evidently to have concerted the means of conquering all the Britiſh dominions on the continent of America, and therefore war was entered into to prevent it. During which the town of Halifax became firmly eſtabliſhed, and that being the principal rendezvous for their men of war, which naturally cauſes a quick circulation of money, the inhabitants were ſoon in a very proſperous ſituation.

Nova-Scotia is ſituated in between 41°. 30. and 49°. 30'. north latitude, and between 60 and 66°. of weſt longitude, and is bounded by the bay of St. Laurence on the north-eaſt; by the river of St. Laurence on the north-weſt; by New-England on

the ſouth-weſt, and by the Bay of Fundy, and the Atlantic Ocean on the eaſt. According to theſe limits it contains about 420 miles in length, and 380 in breadth. The ſouth-eaſtern part is a large peninſula, extending from the north-eaſt to the ſouth-weſt, and joined to the main land by an iſthmus a little above the gulph of Canſo Though the weather is very ſharp in winter, yet the air eſpecially about the town of Halifax is remarkably clear, ſo that the ſevereſt froſts are frequently accompanied with a fine azure ſky and ſunſhine: but though the cold in winter is very ſevere, the ſummer is hotter than in England. The coaſt has the advantage of many bays, harbours and creeks, and the land is enriched by many rivers, ſome of which are navigated for a long courſe by the native Indians. The harbour of Chebucto, upon which is ſituated the metropolis, may juſtly be eſteemed one of the fineſt in the world, and has extraordinary advantages for a fiſhery. The entrance into it is from the ſouth, with a large iſland of an irregular form, lying on the north-eaſt ſide named Cornwallis Iſland, from the firſt governor of Halifax. Betwixt this iſland and the oppoſite ſhore on the ſouth-weſt, is a channel deep enough for the largeſt ſhips. This iſland, as well as a ſmaller one that lies higher up the harbour, named George-Iſland, is very commodiouſly ſituated for a fiſhery, and has conveniences of all ſorts proper for drying and curing the fiſh.

About two miles higher up the harbour is a creek on the ſouth-weſt ſide, with a ſmall harbour at its entrance. This creek, which was called by the firſt ſettlers of Halifax, Sandwich River, is at the mouth about as wide and deep as the Thames at London Bridge, and is ſalt water for about four or five miles up when it terminates where a ſmall freſh water rivulet falls into it from the north. From the mouth of Sandwich River to the oppoſite

ſide of the harbour is about two miles, with good anchoring ground for the largeſt ſhips in any part of it, and a fine watering place on the north-eaſt ſide: the land on both ſides is exceeding high, and in general very rich and fertile, but covered with wood.

About four or five miles north of the above river is a narrow entrance of half a mile into Bedford Bay, which is about 12 miles in circumference, and has ſeveral creeks at the bottom of it, abounding with the fineſt ſalmon in the greateſt plenty: there are alſo ſeveral iſlands in it; and a great quantity of pines, fit for maſts, grow on the weſtern ſide of it. This bay, with the harbour, and Sandwich river divide the peninſula from the main land.

Upon the oppoſite ſhore are ſeveral large rivers, among which that of St. John is the moſt conſiderable. It is ten leagues diſtant from the gut of Annapolis, and has a very long courſe. There are prodigious falls of water near its mouth no leſs than thirty fathoms deep, occaſioned by the great head of water above, and the channel here being pent up between two ſteep mountains. By this river, and the aſſiſtance of ſome land carriage, there is a communication with the river of St. Laurence; the French had therefore erected a fort upon it, which was taken by the Engliſh in the beginning of the late war.

The woods abound with game, eſpecially partridges, wild ducks, wild geeſe, woodcocks, herons, pigeons, &c. among the beaſts are moſt of the ſorts found in New-England. The trees are oak, fir, ſpruce, birch, &c. and the fruit growing wild, are gooſberries, raſberries, ſtrawberries, &c.

THE

Diſcoveries and Settlements

OF THE

FRENCH IN AMERICA.

CHAPTER I.

An account of the voyages made to America, by John Verazzano under the reign of Francis I. The firſt eſtabliſhment of the French on the banks of the river St. Laurence, and the difficulties they found in fixing a colony in thoſe parts.

THE French have publiſhed ſome accounts of their viſiting North America, at the cloſe of the 15th and the beginning of the 16th centuries, but theſe accounts, which are very uncertain, can at moſt only prove, that ſome French ſeamen and pilots were then employed in the Newfoundland fiſhery, and had ſome ſmall knowledge of the adjacent continent.

However in 1523, Francis I. began to think of forming ſettlements on the coaſts of America, and with this view ſent John Verazzano a Florentine with one ſhip, on board of which were fifty men with proviſions for eight months; but he returned to Dieppe in July 1524, and we have no account that he made any diſcoveries.

He however ſailed again on the ſame deſign towards the latter end of the following year, and arrived on ſome part of the coaſt of North-America, but where is not certain. He was however ſo timerous, that he did not care to venture within any of the bays or ports; but wanting water, and

lying in a road near the ſhore, perſuaded one of the mariners to ſwim to it, and by means of ſome preſents, with which he furniſhed him, endeavour to procure what he wanted from the natives, who came down in crowds, upon the ſtrand to gaze at the ſhip.

The poor mariner on his landing and getting a nearer view of the Indians was ſo extremely amazed and terrified at their uncouth appearance, that throwing his preſents upon the ground, he ran as faſt as he could and caſt himſelf again into the ſea, in order to ſwim to the ſhip; but the waves threw him back upon the ſhore with ſuch force, that he lay breathleſs upon the ſands, and would probably have been drowned if the natives had not haſtened to his relief, and taking him up, carried him in their arms to a place at ſome diſtance, where with great humanity, they took all the pains they could to bring him to himſelf. But when he recovered his ſenſes a little, and ſaw none about him but Indians, he ſet up ſuch a cry as made the woods ring, at which the natives hoping to pacify him, cried as loud or louder than he, which terrified him ſtill more. At laſt they made a great fire, before which they undreſſed him, greatly admiring the whiteneſs of his ſkin, and the hair on ſeveral parts of his body. The poor fellow concluding that they were going to eat or to burn him, trembled extremely, while thoſe on board ſeeing every thing that was done, were very much frightened, and every moment expected to ſee him ſacrificed: however by degrees they were all convinced that theſe dreadful Indians had not the leaſt intention to hurt him; for after drying his cloaths, they ſuffered him to put them on again, and having given him ſomething to eat, conducted him, at his own deſire, to the ſea ſide, and then retiring to ſome diſtance looked on till he ſwam ſafely on board the ſhip, and then quietly departed;

upon which Verazzano returned to France, and reported nothing but this ſtory, and that it happened in the latitude of 50°.

The next year however, he engaged in a third voyage, wherein he was loſt; but from his expeditions, which were carried on thirty years later than thoſe of the Cabots, the French have no great reaſon to boaſt of their ſucceſs.

It was ſome years before the French thought of fitting out any more ſhips for diſcovery, but at length James Cartier an experienced pilot of St. Maloes ventured on another expedition, and ſailed from that port on the 20th of April 1534, with two ſhips of 60 tons each, and 120 men, and arriving on the coaſt of Newfoundland, on the 10th of May, found the country covered with ice and ſnow; this induced him to ſail to the ſouthward, and entering a bay which bears the name of Spaniſh Harbour, he liked both the country and the people, and boldly went on ſhore.

It is reported that the Spaniards had long before viſited this coaſt, and ſome authorities are brought to prove it, but finding neither gold nor ſilver, they haſtily returned on board, crying in Spaniſh Aca Nada! or there is nothing here. Theſe words being remembered by the Indians, they no ſooner ſaw the French land than they cried Aca Nada! Aca Nada! which the latter took for the name of the country, and it has ever ſince been called Canada: ſtrange as this derivation is, it is mentioned by the beſt French authors.

Cartier afterwards ſailed along great part of the coaſt which borders upon the gulf of St. Laurence and the iſlands ſituated in it, and then returned to France.

The next year he was ſent again with three large ſhips to make a ſettlement, and entering the gulph on the feaſt of St. Laurence, gave it that name, which was afterwards extended to the river,

though in the firſt voyage, he had called it the river of Canada; he now ſailed up as high as the fall of St. Louis, giving ſuch names to the iſlands and rivers, as he thought proper. But though he at firſt was much pleaſed with the country, yet twenty-five of the people dying with the ſcurvy, he began to conſider it was a very unwholeſome climate. At laſt he himſelf was attacked with this dreadful diſtemper, upon which he applied to the inhabitants as well as he could, to learn whether they had any cure for it, and they taught him to make an infuſion of the leaves and bark of the white thorn tree, by which means all who were ſick were ſpeedily recovered; and as ſoon as the ſeaſon of the year would permit, he returned to France without making any ſettlement.

Three or four years after the project for ſettling this country was again revived, and Francis de la Roque lord of Roberval, undertaking this affair, king Francis I. granted him letters patent in 1540, and gave him abundance of titles, as viceroy and lieutenant general of Canada, Hockelaga, Sagueny, Newfoundland, Belle Iſle, Cape-Breton, Labrador, &c. allowing him the ſame power and authority in thoſe places, that he had himſelf, which was very eaſily done, as there was not a Frenchman, or a cottage in any one of thoſe places. De la Roque, however being a man of family and fortune, reſolved to purſue this expedition, and therefore prevailed upon James Cartier by large promiſes, to undertake another voyage to the coaſt of Canada, in quality of his pilot; and this gentleman in two or three voyages, formed ſome ſettlements which were the firſt made by the French in America, but theſe were afterwards abandoned.

The navigation of the river St. Laurence fell from time to time into different hands, and ſeveral voyages were made thither to very little purpoſe. However about the year 1608, the French, after

having ſettled and abandoned ſeveral places, founded the city of Quebec, and ſome time after beſtowed the name of New France upon that country, under which name they not only included Acadia and other coaſts that had long been diſcovered by the Engliſh, but ſet up croſſes and the French arms, to ſhew that they had taken poſſeſſion of them. But though the Engliſh colonies were then but thinly inhabited, they boldly aſſerted their prior rights to thoſe places, demoliſhed their croſſes, drove away the French wherever they found them within their limits, and forced them to confine their views to the gulph and river St. Laurence; where the French, with much difficulty raiſed three or four ſettlements in the ſpace of twenty years, of which Quebec was, and ſtill continues the capital.

In 1629 Sir David Kirk with the Engliſh under his command, conſidering Canada as within the limits of the Britiſh dominions, attacked Quebec and made himſelf maſter of all the French ſettlements, and when this news was carried to France, Canada was conſidered of ſuch little conſequence, that it was long debated whether they ſhould demand the reſtitution of it, though they had already eſtabliſhed a company for managing that commerce; but it was at laſt reſolved that it ſhould be demanded, and it was accordingly reſtored by the treaty of 1632. From that time they purſued their diſcoveries and ſettlements in thoſe parts, for ſeveral reigns without moleſtation; but thoſe ſettlements were attended with great difficulties and a vaſt expence, and company after company was ſet up to promote a trade to them, without obtaining any great advantage; for before the French had made any regular ſettlements, the country was ſo far from being agreeable to the conſtitution of the people, that of the numbers ſent thither, a great part periſhed by the hardſhips

they endured, many took the firſt opportunity of returning, and afterwards gave ſuch a dreadful account of the colony they had left, as diſcouraged others from going thither; but the greateſt obſtacle the colony met with, was their continual wars with the natives, of which they have given us very large accounts.

The French kept poſſeſſion of this country till the 13th of September, 1759, when Quebec was ſurrendered to the generals Monkton and Townſhend, who commanded the Britiſh troops that had been deſtined for the expedition againſt it the preceding ſpring, under the command of general Wolfe, and on the 8th of September, 1760, all Canada was given up to the Engliſh by the capitulation ſigned at Montreal, by Monſ. de Vandreueil the French governor, and general Amherſt, and has ſince been confirmed to the Britiſh crown by the late treaty of peace concluded at Fontainbleau. Quebec, the metropolis, which is near the centre of the province, is ſituated in the 46th degree 55 minutes north latitude, and in 69 degrees 48 min. weſt longitude, and is bounded on the north-eaſt by the gulph of St. Laurence, and St. John's river; on the north-weſt by wild uninhabited lands; on the ſouth-weſt by the ſame; and ſoutherly by New-York, New-England, and Nova-Scotia; extending about 500 miles from the north-eaſt to the ſouth-weſt, and upwards of 200 miles in breadth.

Though the northern parts of Canada are ſituated in the temperate zone, yet the air is exceſſive ſharp, and their winter, which ſets in about the middle of November, and laſts till the middle of May, is ſo exceſſively ſevere, that their largeſt rivers and lakes are frozen over, and the country is generally covered with diſagreeable fogs: but notwithſtanding theſe inconveniences, the French boaſt very much of the fertility of Canada, and indeed where

it is cultivated, as it is to the ſouth, it yields Indian and other ſorts of corn, peaſe, beans, and great plenty of moſt kinds of herbs and vegetables. The trees and fruits are much the ſame as in New-England, and the ſame may be ſaid with reſpect to animals; ſo that with a reaſonable degree of labour people may ſubſiſt there tolerably well, and as they are not burdened with taxes, they live much at their eaſe.

The produce of Canada conſiſts of furs, eſpecially caſtors, and in ſeveral kinds of ſkins, which they purchaſe from the natives; and there are exported from thence ſome ſorts of drugs, planks, pipe ſtaves, &c.

The greateſt part of the commerce of the country is carried on in light canoes made of bark, and proper for navigating their lakes and rivers, which are encumbered with rocks and interrupted with water-falls, that render them unfit for other veſſels. In winter they make uſe of ſledges, drawn either by horſes or dogs; and as theſe are proper for paſſing over vaſt tracts of ſnow and ice, they enable them to continue their commerce with the Indians all the winter.

The city of Quebec is ſituated upon the great river of St Laurence, at the diſtance of about 100 leagues from its mouth. It is very large and ſtrong, for beſides a fortreſs, or kind of citadel in which the governor reſides, the whole extent of the place is covered by a regular fortification, with ſeveral redoubts well furniſhed with artillery. The principal buildings in this city are the cathedral, the epiſcopal palace, the Jeſuits college, and ſeveral other religious houſes But if it be conſidered that this is not only the capital, but almoſt the only town in New-France, it is not at all ſurprizing that theſe edifices are very magnificent; and that beſides theſe it contains upwards of 15,000 well-built dwelling-houſes. The town of Montreal is ſtrong by

its ſituation, is ſurrounded with a wall and a dry ditch, and is ſaid by ſome authors to have as many inhabitants as Quebec. The Indians come thither in boats to ſell their ſkins, for the ſake of which Montreal was built, and is now nearly as large and populous as Quebec.

As the manner in which the trade was carried on by the French is pretty ſingular, we ſhall here give it our readers: when the Indians in alliance with the French came thither to trade, their chief firſt demanded audience of their governor general, and if he was not there, of the governor of Montreal, to whom he was with great ceremony admitted. This audience was generally given in a great ſquare in the middle of the town; where a chair of ſtate was placed for the governor, and the chiefs of the ſeveral Indian nations, took their places round him, with their pipes in their mouths. After a due ſilence, the eldeſt chief of the Indians laid down his pipe, ſtood up, and addreſſed himſelf to the governor: he told him, that his brethren were come to viſit him, and to renew their ancient league and friendſhip with his nation: that having nothing in view but the care and advantage of the French, they had brought down with them good quantities of ſkins and furs, being ſenſible that the French could not obtain ſo many, or ſo good, if they did not bring them down to their ſettlements; that they were ſenſible how much they were eſteemed in France, and knew that what they were to take in exchange, were but paltry things and of little value; but that their good friends the French might not be without furs they were content to deal with them; and therefore hoped, that in order to enable them to bring a greater plenty of them the next year, as well as to fall upon their enemies, they would let them have guns, powder, and ball, upon reaſonable terms. At the cloſe of this ſpeech he laid a ſtring of beads, and a bundle

of ſkins at the governor's feet, and deſired leave to ſecure them a free and fair trade, and to protect them from robbers. Then he retired to his place, and took up his pipe again. The governor now aſſured them of his protection, and made them a preſent in return. The next day the trade began, and was ſoon over; by which the French gained very conſiderably; but they were not allowed to ſell either wine or brandy to the Indians, becauſe they were extremely apt to drink to exceſs, and were then furious and mad, and at ſuch times if they did any miſchief to one another, or to the French, they could ſcarce be brought to give any ſatisfaction; for they affirmed, it was the liquor, and not the man, that did the miſchief; and that it was unjuſt to puniſh a perſon for what he did when out of his ſenſes. The other ſettlements are ſcattered at a great diſtance from each other, along the banks of the rivers and lakes, between which a communication is kept up, by water, and by land carriage, where the cataracts render ſailing in the rivers impracticable, without immediate deſtruction. The firſt of theſe lakes of any conſequence is Ontario, which is 180 leagues in circumference, and between 20 and 25 fathoms in depth. It receives ſeveral rivers, beſides that of St. Laurence, and its coaſts are pretty even and level. From this lake to that of Huron, there is a communication by means of the river Tanaouate, and by the aſſiſtance of a land carriage of ſix or eight leagues to the river of Toronto, and there is alſo a paſſage from it to that of Erie up the river Niagara, though a dreadful cataract renders it neceſſary to make part of the way by land. The lake of Erie with thoſe of Ontario and Huron form a triangular peninſula. The lake of Erie which lies to the ſouth, is called by the French by the name of Conti; it is 230 leagues in circumference, and every where affords the moſt delightful proſpects, its banks being adorn-

ed with oaks, elms, chefnut, walnut apple and plumb trees; and with vines that bear their fine clufters up to the very top. The ground is extremely level, and vaft quantities of deer and turkeys are to be found in the woods.

Before we take leave of this lake, it will be proper to give a particular defcription of the fall of Niagara. The whole ftream of this river runs with prodigious rapidity on its approaching a very deep precipice, whence it falls with a more terrible noife than that of thunder; being interrupted in its defcent by an ifland which runs along the middle, it rufhes from thence into the bed of the river at the bottom, where it raifes a mift which rifes as high as the clouds, and may be feen at fifteen miles diftance, when in fine weather it forms a moft beautiful rainbow. The rapidity of this river above the defcent is fo great for near two leagues, that it violently hurries down the wild beafts that endeavour to pafs it in order to feed on the other fide, caffing them down above 150 feet. At the bottom of the cataract, the waters boil and foam in a furprizing manner, and ftill continue their courfe with great impetuofity, while the banks are fo prodigioufly high, that a fpectator can fcarcely look on the water below without trembling. The lake of Huron, which has a communication with that of Erie, is about 400 leagues in circumference, and among feveral iflands has one called Manitoualan, which is about twenty leagues long and ten broad. On the north-weft of this lake is the bay of Toronto, which is above twenty leagues long and fifteen broad at its mouth. This bay receives a river that fprings from a little lake of the fame name, and forms feveral cataracts. From the above fmall lake is a paffage by land to the river of Tanaoute, which falls into Lake Frontiniac.

On the north-weſt of the lake of Huron is a channel that has a communication with the Illenois lake, which is alſo of conſiderable extent.

The Superior or Upper Lake, has alſo a communication with that of Huron by a channel, that on the north-weſt extends to Huron lake, and this Upper Lake is computed to be 500 leagues in circumference, including the windings of the creeks and little gulphs. All theſe large lakes abound in fiſh, and are expoſed to ſtorms and tempeſts. This laſt has ſome pretty large iſlands, that abound with elks and wild aſſes.

CHAPTER II.

A deſcription of Iſle Royal or Cape Breton.

THIS iſland was very early diſcovered by the Engliſh, and was always reckoned a part of Nova-Scotia, for that very charter which conſtituted that extenſive country a diſtinct province, included Cape Breton in expreſs terms. This was never diſputed till after the treaty of Utrecht; though the French had ſettled there as well as in Nova-Scotia; but by that treaty the French conſented to deliver it up to the Engliſh; yet notwithſtanding Queen Anne ordered the Duke of Queenſbury, her Ambaſſador at the court of France, to declare that ſhe looked upon that iſland as a part of the ancient territory of Nova-Scotia, the French were ſuffered to keep poſſeſſion of it, and as they reaped great advantage from its ſituation, both with reſpect to the trade of Canada and the large fiſheries carried on at this iſland, they ſoon erected fortifications at a very large expence, and the greateſt encouragement was given to thoſe who would ſettle there. However in 1745 it was taken by the New-England

men, with very little aſſiſtance from Great-Britain; but was given up by the treaty of Aix-la Chapelle.

That peace was no ſooner concluded than the French diſtreſſing the new colony at Halifax in Nova-Scotia, and attempting to hem in all the colonies on the continent by a chain of forts, the late war broke out, and Louiſburgh, the capital, with the iſland of Cape-Breton, was taken by the Engliſh, who landed in the ſight of a numerous army, though oppoſed by a chain of batteries; and after ſcaling rocks that were thought inacceſſible, drove the French from the coaſt, and afterwards obliged the garriſon of Louiſburgh to ſurrender priſoners of war: this conqueſt was made on the 26th of July, 1758, by general Amherſt, commander of 1100 land forces; with the train of artillery; and by admiral Boſcawen, with 23 ſhips of war beſides frigates; and a few days after, a part of the fleet made themſelves maſters of the iſland of St. John.

The iſland of Cape-Breton, or Iſle Royal, is ſituated in between 45 and 47°. of north latitude, and forms with the iſland of Newfoundland, from whence it is diſtant only about fifteen leagues, the entrance of the gulph of St. Laurence; the ſtreight which ſeparates Cape Breton from Nova Scotia is about five leagues in length, one in breadth, and is called the paſſage of Fronſac. The length of the iſland from the north-eaſt to the ſouth-weſt is not quite fifty leagues. It is of a very irregular figure, and in ſuch a manner cut through by lakes and rivers, that its two principal parts are held together, only by an iſthmus of about 800 paces in breadth; this neck of land ſeparates the bottom of Port Touloufe from ſeveral lakes, which are called Labrador. The lakes empty themſelves into the ſea to the eaſt, by two channels formed by the iſlands of Verderronne and la Boularderie.

All its ports open to the eaſt, turning a little to the ſouth, and are within the ſpace of 55 leagues, beginning at Port Dauphin and continuing to Port Touloufe, which is almoſt at the entrance of the paſſage of Fronſac. In all other parts it is difficult to find anchorage for ſmall veſſels in little creeks or among the iſlands. The northern coaſts are very high and almoſt innaceſſible, and it is difficult to land on the weſtern coaſt, till you come to the paſſage of Fronſac, near which, as has been already obſerved, is Port Touloufe, formerly known by the name of St. Peter. This port is between a kind of gulph called little St. Peter's, and the iſland St. Peter oppoſite the iſlands Madame or Maurepas. From thence proceeding towards the ſouth-eaſt is the bay of Gaborie at twenty leagues diſtance from St. Peter's iſland. This bay is a league broad, between iſlands and rocks, and is two leagues deep, but it is not ſafe to come near the iſlands. The harbour of Louiſburgh, formerly called Engliſh Harbour, is not above a league from the above bay, and is perhaps one of the fineſt in America. It is near four leagues in circumference, and has every where ſix or ſeven fathoms water. The entrance is not above 200 fathoms wide, and lies between two ſmall iſlands. The town of Louiſburgh is ſituated on the ſouth-weſt ſide, and is pretty ſtrongly fortified with as much regularity as the ſituation will admit. It has a good rampart, with irregular baſtions, a dry ditch, a covert way, with an excellent glacis, and before two of the curtains is a ravelin, with a bridge to the ſally-ports ; but the chief ſtrength of the place conſiſts in the thickneſs of the walls, and the impaſſable moraſſes which extend from the foot of the glacis to a conſiderable diſtance. When Louiſburgh was taken from the French on the 26th of June, 1758, it was defended by 231 pieces of cannon. At that time the town conſiſted of only

ſeveral narrow lanes, and had hardly a tolerable houſe in it, except the governor's and intendant's, which were built with ſtone and brick, without the leaſt elegance; the beſt buildings in the place were the magazines, a convent, and an hoſpital; and few of the other houſes were much better than boarded cottages one ſtory high.

The ſea round the iſland is ſubject to violent ſtorms of wind, with ſnow and ſleet, and ſuch fogs that it is frequently impoſſible to ſee the length of a ſhip. But what is ſtill more extraordinary, theſe fogs will in the ſpace of one froſty night caſe over the rigging of ſhips with ſuch thick ice, as to render them impoſſible to be worked till it is beaten off: the quantity beat off from only one of the Engliſh ſhips employed in the laſt conqueſt of this iſland, was computed to amount to ſix or eight tons weight; yet this amazing quantity was all congealed on the night of the 5th of May, when warmer weather might have been expected. All theſe circumſtances ſhew the advantages of an iſland filled with ſuch a number of excellent ports ſituated in ſuch a tempeſtuous ſea.

The climate of the iſland is pretty much the ſame with that of Quebec, but miſts and fogs are more frequent. A great part of the land is but very indifferent, it however produce oaks of a prodigious ſize, pines for maſts, and all ſorts of timber fit for carpenters work. The moſt common ſorts are, beſides thoſe already mentioned, cedar, oak, aſh, maple, aſpin, wild cherry, beech, and plane tree. It produce ſome ſorts of fruits, particularly apples, with pulſe, herbs, and roots. They have wheat and all other kinds of grain, with ſome hemp and flax as good as any in Canada.

It is obſervable that the mountains may be cultivated up to the tops; that the good ſoil always inclines towards the ſouth, and that the iſland is covered from the north and north-weſt winds

by the mountains of Nova-Scotia, that border upon the river St. Laurence. Theſe mountains abound with coal, and there is alſo plaſter here in great abundance.

There are here great numbers of fowls, and particularly partridges, almoſt as large as pheaſants, which they reſemble in their feathers.

The iſland was full of deer, and had vaſt numbers of mooſe-deer, but they are now ſcarce; there are here alſo animals brought from Europe, as horſes, horned cattle, hogs, ſheep, goats and poultry. All the lakes, rivers and bays abound with excellent fiſh in the greateſt plenty, and what is got by hunting, ſhooting, and fiſhing, is ſufficient to maintain the inhabitants a good part of the year. It is ſaid that there is no part of the world where more cod fiſh is caught, nor ſuch good conveniency for drying it; and the fiſhery of the ſea-pike, porpoiſes, &c. is carried on with great eaſe.

CHAPTER. III.

An account of the ſettlement made by the French in the Leeward Iſlands, and their proceedings, in them.

WE have already given an account of the ſettlement of the iſland of St. Chriſtopher by the Engliſh and the French, who lived in the greateſt harmony together; of the French flying from that iſland, upon the landing of the Spaniards; and of the Engliſh being driven from their ſettlements, as well as of the return both of the Engliſh and French.

Mr. Deſnambue the French governor, obſerving that the Engliſh colony had made themſelves maſters of ſeveral of the adjacent iſlands, reſolved to ſend ſome of the principal perſons in his colony to

France to procure ſupplies, chiefly with a view of ſettling the iſland of Guadaloupe. Among thoſe ſent over, was one Mr. Olive, a bold enterprizing man, who had nothing in view but his own intereſt, and having ſome notice of the governor's deſign, he reſolved to ſupplant him. For that purpoſe he entered into a treaty with one Mr. Du-Pleſſis, and ſome other merchants of Dieppe; who forming a company for the ſupport of the ſcheme he had laid, theſe two were ſent over governors with joint authority to the iſland of Guadaloupe; where they arrived with about 500 men, on the 8th of June 1635.

However, theſe governors, in the very beginning of their enterprize, committed two miſtakes; they ſettled on the wrong ſide of the iſland, where the ſoil was very bad, and quarrelled with the natives, before the colony was well able to ſubſiſt without them. The bad conſequences with which theſe errors were attended, ſoon broke the heart of Mr. Du Pleſſis; when Mr. Olive being left ſole governor, his haughtineſs and pride had certainly brought the colony to ruin, if he had not fallen blind. Upon this, the company ſent over Mr. Aubert, a very diſcreet and prudent gentleman, who in a few years time, put the affairs of this colony into order, and ſo effectually eſtabliſhed it, that the Inhabitants have ſubſiſted very happily ever ſince. But notwithſtanding Mr. Deſnambue's having the misfortune to ſee Guadaloupe thus taken out of his hands; yet before his death he had the pleaſure of ſettling the iſland of Martinico, of which he by that means became proprietor, and of leaving it to his family by his laſt will.

In the mean time, cardinal Richelieu, being raiſed to the miniſtry, thought proper to ſend over a perſon of diſtinction, to take upon himſelf the government of the whole iſland; and accordingly made choice of Mr. De Poincy, a knight of Malta,

whom he ſent with the title of governor and lieutenant general of the iſlands in America.

This gentleman embarked at Dieppe on the 15th of January 1639, and after a ſhort paſſage arrived at Martinico, from whence he went to Guadaloupe, and afterwards to St. Chriſtopher's. He was very ſevere in the execution of his authority againſt thoſe who were for haſtily making eſtates at the public expence, but was extremely kind to the induſtrious part of the inhabitants, who were willing to let their private fortunes depend on the flouriſhing ſtate of the colonies. He cauſed churches to be built in all theſe iſlands, took care to have the prieſts well maintained, but would have no monaſteries or monks. He eſtabliſhed an excellent form of juſtice, granted commiſſions to privateers, and hanged up pirates with very little ceremony. His concern for the public good was ſo apparent, that he became in a manner abſolute; and the people being ſenſible that he had nothing in view but their intereſt, obeyed his orders with the utmoſt alacrity. In ſhort, he changed the whole face of affairs in that part of the world, ſettled deſert iſlands, and though he made hundreds of people rich and happy, contented himſelf with the pleaſure of doing it, without making any fortune of his own.

However, during the diſturbances that aroſe in France after the death of cardinal Richelieu, the colony ſunk by the ill management of the company; and in the year 1651, the chevalier De Poincy purchaſed the iſlands of St. Chriſtopher, St. Bartholemew, St. Martin, and Santa Cruz for the order of Malta; and in the ſame manner other iſlands were diſpoſed of to ſuch as would give any thing for them; which ſoon brought the affairs of the French in that part of the world into a very ſtrange ſituation. When the Dutch, taking notice of the condition things were in, eſtabliſhed maga-

zines at Fluſhing and Middleburgh for Weſt-India commodities, and annually employed in the trade of the French iſlands upwards of 100 ſhips.

This continued till about the year 1664, when a new company being ſet up in France, they, with the aſſiſtance of the government, purchaſed back from the nights of Malta and the other proprietors, the rights they had acquired; and having put an end to the Dutch trade, brought the commerce of the colonies once more into their own channel. But after poſſeſſing their grant ten years, they began to oppreſs the people, in ſuch a manner that the miniſtry thought proper to interpoſe, and in 1680 every thing was ſettled ſo as to render the diligent and induſtrious ſecure of reaping the fruits of their labours.

After this general veiw of the manner in which the French iſlands were ſettled, we ſhall proceed to a very conciſe account of the iſlands themſelves.

Martinico is ſituated in 14°. 30'. north latitude and in 61°. weſt longitude. It is about thirteen leagues in length and ſeven in breadth. From the inland parts which are mountainous, fall numerous rivulets, which after watering the country, flow into the ſea. It has ſeveral bays well fortified; the chief of which is the great bay of Port-Royal, the capital of the iſland, and the bay of St. Pierre, a large town about ſeven leagues from it, to the north-weſt. This iſland was inhabited by Indians when the French firſt attempted a ſettlement, in the year 1635, and many battles were fought between them and the natives with various ſucceſs; but at laſt the French overpowered, and cruelly extirpated the ancient inhabitants. The governor of the Caribbee iſlands reſides there, and it is the ſeat of the ſovereign council, whoſe juriſdiction extends not only throughout the Antilles, but

over the French ſettlements in St. Domingo and Tortuga.

This iſland was on the 19th of January 1759, attacked by a ſquadron of ten men of war beſides frigates, &c. under the command of Commodore Moore, and a body of land forces, commanded by General Hopſon; but after obtaining ſome advantages, the troops and ſailors re-embarked and ſailed to Guadaloupe. It was however, taken by the Engliſh on the 13th of February 1762.

Guadaloupe the largeſt of the Caribbee iſlands, is ſituated in 16°. north latitude and 61°. weſt longitude, about thirty leagues from Martinico. It is remarkable for the height of its clifts and mountains. It is about fifteen leagues in length and twelve in breadth, divided into two parts by a ſmall arm of the ſea or narrow paſſage, through which no ſhip can venture, and the inhabitants croſs over in a ferry from one part to the other. The country to the weſt is called Baſſe Terre, where ſtands the metropolis of the ſame name, and where the citadel and chief ſtrength of the iſland lies; the part to the eaſt is called Grande Terre. The French began to ſettle this iſland about the year 1632, but being unacquainted with the nature of the ſoil, they were in danger of ſtarving, and afterwards the planters were almoſt ruined by their diviſions; but ſince the beginning of the preſent century, the inhabitants have flouriſhed ſo much, that they make more ſugar than any of the Britiſh iſlands except Jamaica. The ſoil is rich, and eſpecially at Grande Terre ſo fertile, that the canes are cut ſix times without replanting. The far greateſt part of what are called Martinico ſugars, are the real produce of Guadaloupe, the inhabitants of which are obliged to ſend them to Martinico, before they could be tranſported to France. On this account the French fortified it with ſeveral forts and redoubts, which

were in ſo good a condition in 1702, when Admiral Bembo made a deſcent upon it with a conſiderable body of land forces, that he did not think proper to attack them, but was ſatisfied with deſtroying many of their plantations and open villages.

We have already obſerved that in 1759, a fleet of ten men of war beſides frigates and bomb-ketches, under the command of Commodore Moore, with a body of land forces commanded by General Hopſon, after making an unſucceſsful attack on Martinico, ſailed for Guadaloupe. This ſquadron began to bombard the town and citadel of Baſſe Terre on the 23d of January; the officers and ſailors behaved with the utmoſt intrepidity, and notwithſtanding many batteries erected on the ſhore, the houſes and churches were that night every where in flames, and the powder of the magazines blown about the enemies ears. The next day the Engliſh landed, and found both the town and citadel abandoned, but the iſland was far from being taken. The French with their armed negroes threw up intrenchments on the mountains, and bravely reſolved to defend themſelves as long as poſſible. Soon after General Hopſon dying, the command devolved on Major General Barrington. The Engliſh were harraſſed by perpetual alarms and fatigued with conſtant duty; they however, gained one paſs after another, and ſtill advanced alert in the hour of caution, and invincible whenever they attacked. They frequently ſuffered from concealed fires out of the woods, and from lurking parties of armed negroes, that could not be diſcovered. At length the French Governor finding all reſiſtance in vain, ſent a flag of truce; and the articles of capitulation, by which Guadaloupe was ſurrendered to the Engliſh, were ſigned on the firſt of May 1759.

Within the ſame month Marigalante, four little iſlands called the Santos, Deſeada, and Petit Terre

alſo ſurrendered to the Engliſh. Marigalante is about twenty leagues in length and about fifteen in breadth, and is ſituated in 16°. north latitude, a little to the ſouth-weſt of Guadaloupe. The French began to ſend colonies thither about the year 1647, and after having ſeveral wars, expelled the natives, and remained in the peaceable poſſeſſion of this iſland, till May 19, 1759.

Granada is twenty-five leagues in circumference and has ſeveral good bays and harbours, ſome of which are fortified. It is ſituated in 11°. 51'. north latitude, about thirty leagues ſouth-weſt of Barbadoes, and about the ſame diſtance north of Andaluſia.

The ſmaller Caribbee Iſlands belonging to the French, are St. Bartholomew's, which is about ten leagues north of St. Chriſtopher's, and was taken in the year 1689, by the Engliſh under the command of Sir Timothy Thornhill; but reſtored to the French at the peace of Ryſwick. By the late peace in 1763, Martinico, Guadaloupe, Marigalante, St. Bartholomew, and Deſeada, were reſtored to France; but Granada, and ſome ſmall iſlands near it, called the Granadillas, or Granadines, were ceded to Great-Britain.

As ſugar is the ſtaple commodity of theſe iſlands, it is proper to give a ſhort account of the quantities raiſed in them. In Martinico it is computed, that the inhabitants make one year with another, 10,000 hogſheads of about 600 weight each: In Guadaloupe are made about 40,000 hogſheads, and in the other iſlands about 1000 hogſheads altogether. Theſe iſlands alſo draw a conſiderable profit from cacao or the chocolate nut, and from ginger, caſſia, and pimento, which is what is called Jamaica pepper or all-ſpice, of which they export conſiderable quantities. The inhabitants alſo ſend home rocou for the uſe of dyers, and a variety of medicinal gums, and wet ſweetmeats of ſeveral

kinds. Theſe iſlands likewiſe produce ſeveral ſorts of valuable woods uſed in dying, in-laying, and cabinet-work; as roſe-wood, which when wrought and poliſhed, has a very beautiful appearance, as well as a fine ſmell. The Indian wood is alſo of the ſame nature, and the iron-wood, ſo called from its exceſſive hardneſs, is preferable either to cedar or cypreſs. They have great quantities of Braſil wood, braſiletto, fuſtic or yellow wood, and green ebony, which is uſed both by the cabinet-makers and dyers. To theſe commodities may be added, tortoiſe-ſhell and raw hides.

But though theſe iſlands produce ſo many rich and valuable commodities, yet they ſtand in need of very large ſupplies of various kinds of neceſſaries, without which they could not poſſibly ſubſiſt, ſuch as horſes and cattle of all kinds; dry fiſh, corn, roots, and all ſorts of lumber, of which they receive conſiderable quantities from North America. Mr. Savary obſerves, that the goods exported from France to theſe iſlands, annually, amounted to about four millions of livres, or near 200,000l. ſterling; for which they brought home nearly double the value in Weſt-India commodities.

CHAPTER IV.

The manner in which the French firſt formed ſettlements in the iſlands of Tortuga and Hiſpaniola or St. Domingo, &c.

WE ſhall now proceed to the iſland of St. Domingo, which was diſcovered by Columbus in his firſt voyage in 1492, and called by him Hiſpaniola; but he afterwards building a city to which he gave the name of St. Domingo, in honour of his father Dominic, the name was firſt extended to

that quarter, and at length the whole iſland was called St. Domingo; by which it is as well known as by that of Hiſpaniola. Though this iſland is reckoned only 400 leagues in circumference, yet if all the creeks, bays and inlets be meaſured, it will be found to amount to at leaſt 600. It is at preſent the moſt fruitful, and much the pleaſanteſt iſland in the Weſt-Indies; for the foreſts are of vaſt extent, and the trees are taller and larger, the fruit more beautiful and better taſted than in the other iſlands: the ſavannahs or meadows are alſo vaſtly extenſive, and contain innumerable herds of black cattle that belong to the country, as alſo wild horſes and wild hogs produced from thoſe animals brought over by the Spaniards. Scarce is there any place in the world better watered, by ſmall brooks and navigable rivers, all of which are full of fiſh; add to this, that there were at firſt found great quantities of gold, ſilver, and copper, which have failed ſince the deſtruction of the natives. This with many other reaſons concured at length to induce many of the Spaniards to leave the iſland, particularly the ſeverity of the government; for the ſovereign council of the Indies being eſtabliſhed at St. Domingo, the inhabitants were kept within ſtricter bounds than in other places: the immenſe riches gained by their countrymen, induced numbers to forſake this iſland, in hopes of coming in for a ſhare of thoſe treaſures: the great demands for people to maintain the Spaniſh conqueſts on the continent; their cruelly deſtroying the Indians, which rendered them unable without fatigue to cultivate their lands; for as yet the uſe of negroes had not reached the Spaniſh ſettlements; and the deſcents of the Engliſh and French on the weſtern part of the iſland; theſe ſeveral circumſtances by degrees induced the Spaniards to abandon all the country between Monte Chriſto and Cape Mongou.

The manner in which the French ſettled themſelves being very ſingular, we ſhall give it our readers. The Buccaneers who were originally no more than hunters, fixed themſelves upon the coaſt of Hiſpaniola, to enjoy the advantage of killing black cattle, and ſelling their ſkins. Theſe having built ſome villages, erected ſeveral fortifications for their defence, while others laid out plantations, in which they raiſed tobacco and other valuable commodities Mean while the privateers furniſhed by commiſſions from the French governor of Petit Guaves, to cruize upon the Spaniards, with perſons on board of all nations, frequently entered the ports, in order to careen and victual their ſhips; and theſe three ſorts of people became extremely uſeful to each other; for while the hunters and other ſettlers furniſhed proviſions and hides in vaſt quantities, the privateers brought in prizes of great value, and ſpent their money freely, and by enriching, increaſed the number of the Inhabitants; ſo that in a ſhort time, the French extended their ſettlements all along the ſouth-weſt coaſt of St. Domingo. In the mean time Tortuga became thorougly planted, and the tobacco raiſed there being very good, was moſt eſteemed. With reſpect to this laſt iſland, it is to be obſeved, that the Buccaneers had formed a ſettlement there, which had been deſtroyed by the Spaniards with inexorable cruelty in the year 1638. However the Buccaneers returned, and were re-ſettled by the Engliſh under Capt. Willis, by whoſe courage and conduct they were ſoon in no fear of being diſturbed by the Spaniards. But they did not continue long in this ſituation, for Mr. De Poincy ſending thither Mr. Vaſſeur, to ſecure that ſmall iſland for the French, the Buccaneers of that nation, ſettled in the iſland, joined him, and Capt. Willis was obliged to abandon the place, with the troops under his command; but though this put the French

in poſſeſſion, they were for many years haraſſed by the Spaniards, who more than once drove them out of the iſland; but being conſtantly ſupported from their own iſlands, and joined by the adventurers of all nations, they not only effectually fixed themſelves there, but made the above ſettlements at St. Domingo, and in 20 years time became ſo ſtrong that the Spaniards were glad to live upon good terms with them.

But to proceed; both the Spaniards and the Engliſh complained loudly of the conduct of the French governors, under colour of whoſe commiſſions, the Buccaneers committed great diſorders, and in time of peace, took ſhips of all nations; but the French gave good words, promiſed redreſs, and ſuffered the governors to go on after their own manner, as they found it drew numbers of people to their ſettlements, and was likely to ſecure them the weſtern part of St. Domingo: They however did not gain a legal poſſeſſion of that part of Hiſpaniola, till the year 1697, when the Spaniards yielded to them one half of the iſland by the treaty of Ryſwick, by which the boundaries were fixed by a line drawn acroſs the country from north to ſouth; ſo that the French enjoy all the weſtern half of St. Domingo.

For many years the principal trade of this iſland conſiſted in tobacco, in which it is ſaid there have been employed from 60 to 100 ſhips; but upon the eſtabliſhment of an excluſive farm of this commodity in France, the trade began to decline, and at laſt ſunk to nothing. They then fell to planting of ſugar, and though they at firſt met with ſome difficulties, yet in a ſhort time it became the ſtaple commodity of the iſland. This is ſaid to be the beſt ſugar made in the Weſt-Indies, and generally ſells for three or four ſhillings a hundred more than the ſugar brought from any of their other iſlands; which has occaſioned a ſurpriſing progreſs in the

cultivation of that valuable commodity. The principal place the French poſſeſs on the north ſide of the iſland is Cape Francois, which is happily ſituated and has a very good port. The town is large and well peopled, and is ſuppoſed to contain 4000 white, and as many negroe inhabitants. On the weſt ſide, they have the town and port Leogane, which is the ſeat of the government, beſides which they have ſeveral other conſiderable towns and good ports. The number of people are computed at 30,000 whites, and 100,000 mulattoes.

Sugar had been ſo greatly cultivated by the French, that in the year 1726 they had 200 ſugar works in the iſland, which were computed to yield one with another 400 hogſheads of ſugar every year, each hogſhead containing about 500 weight; ſo that it appears from this computation, that the ſugar of this iſland is annually worth near 200,000l. and the French indigo brought from thence, is ſaid to produce near half as much. They alſo raiſe cacaos, ginger and cotton; coffee grows there very well, and ſome maintain that cinnamon, clove, and nutmeg trees, might be raiſed there; but the great profit the inhabitants at preſent make of their ſugar and indigo prevents their attempting new improvements.

On the ſouth ſide of the French part of St. Domingo is Avache, a little iſland at about twelve leagues diſtance from the continent. It is only about eight leagues in compaſs, but it has a very good ſoil, and two or three tolerable ports, one of which is capable of receiving ſhips of 300 tons. It lies very conveniently for carrying on a trade with the Spaniſh colonies on the continent of America.

Cayenne, an iſland ſituated in 5° north latitude and in 53° weſt longitude, was ſettled by the French, in the year 1625. It lies cloſe to the continent of Guiana, from whence it is only ſepa-

rated by the rivers Ovia on the eaſt, and the Cayenne on the weſt, from which laſt it takes its name. It is 18 or 20 leagues in circumference, and is about ſeven leagues long and three broad. As it ſtands high on the coaſt, it at a diſtance ſeems part of the continent. It has three principal capes, thoſe of Fort St. Lewis, Seperon, and Matiuri, and its banks are moſtly covered with man-groves, which grow in ſalt water, and from the roots other trees riſe up without end, ſo cloſe and interwoven with each other, that, in ſome parts of the iſland, a man may walk ſeveral miles on them without touching the ground. In ſeveral parts there is much meadow and paſture ground, but the reſt is low and marſhy, eſpecially in the middle, ſo as to be almoſt impaſſable.

The iſland is rendered uncomfortable by the long rainy ſeaſon which happens every year; by the ſcorching cloſe air, both by day and night, and by the vapours exhaled from the ſwampy grounds, which occaſion many diſorders. The inhabitants are alſo continually tormented with gnats, flies, worms, ants, bugs and other vermin, which altogether render the place very diſagreeable. The ſoil produces plenty of ſugar canes, which, though ſmall and ſhort-jointed, yield very plentifully. It alſo abounds in ananas, or pine-apples, oranges, lemons, figs, papaias, ebony, and violet wood, and alſo in indigo and cotton, as well as in ſeveral ſorts of American and European grain. The principal four-footed animals for food are, hogs, wild boars, deer, and hares; for large cattle can ſcarce live there. The fowl are, carion turkeys, cocks and hens, flamingos, which are an exceeding tall bird, and appear in flocks like wild geeſe; large wild ducks with red tufts on their heads; pigeons, ring-doves, wood-cocks, ortolans, nightingales, parrots, paroquets, and other birds; but the inhabitants chiefly ſubſiſt on turtle. Among

the reptiles there are lizards, camelions, and ſerpents of a monſtrous ſize, ſome of which are ſaid to be above 25 feet long. There are alſo many ſmall ones.

The principal town is alſo called Cayenne, and ſtands on the weſt part of the iſland in an advantageous ſituation, nature and art having equally contributed to forify it. The fortifications are an irregular hexagon, and conſiſt of a dry ditch, and a rampart with ſeveral batteries mounted with cannon, within which ſtands above 200 houſes, formed into two ſtreets. On the north eaſt part of the town, the jeſuits have a little chapel that ſtands in an open place, and has before it a grove of lemon trees. On a a pretty ſteep eminence is the fort of St. Lewis de Caperoux on the ſea ſide, mounted with 42 iron guns, and commonly defended by four companies of regular troops. The weakeſt places of the iſland are alſo defended by batteries.

The next town in the iſland is Armire, which is about three leagues diſtant to the eaſt-ward, but is ſmall and thinly peopled: the jeſuits have however a chapel there. Theſe are the moſt remarkable towns in the iſland.

The poorer ſort, beſides turtle, eat the fleſh of the manatee or ſea-cow, which is brought ready ſalted from the river of the Amazons, whither ſeveral of the principal inhabitants ſends barks, to buy it of the Indians for beads, knives, linen, toys, and iron tools. The men in theſe barks take ſalt with them, and on their entering the river of the Amazons, the Indians employed in the manatee fiſhery go on board, and having taken the ſalt, run up the river in canoes, to catch the manatees, which they cut in pieces, and having ſalted them, return to their barks.

The trade carried on with France, chiefly conſiſts in proviſions, as ſalt-meat, flour, wine, brandy,

linen, ſtuffs, ſhoes, and other wearing apparel, tools, and ſmall wares; in return for which they export ſugar, dying-woods, and for the moſt part the ſame kind of commodities as the leeward iſlands. The number of whites excluſive of the ſoldiers, are ſaid to amount to about 1500, and the whole number of people, including the ſoldiers and ſlaves, is ſaid to be about 3000.

CHAPTER V.

Mr. De la Salle attempts to diſcover the great river Miſſiſſipi, and is murdered by his own ſoldiers; its being afterwards ſettled by M. d'Ibberville, and the affair turned into a bubble, &c.

SOME of the French had already proceeded from the rivers and lakes of Canada, to the river Miſſiſſipi, when Mr. Robert Cavaler de la Salle, conceived the deſign of finding out a paſſage from the gulph of Mexico to the South-Sea, by means of the river Miſſiſſipi; for though this great river does not run that way, he was in hopes that by ſailing up it, he ſhould diſcover one that did. In purſuance of this plan he laid his propoſals before the French king; when his project being approved, he was ſupplied with four veſſels, a man of war of 56 guns, a large fly-boat, a ſmall frigate, and a ketch. This ſquadron was commanded by Mr. Beaujeau, who was victualled for a year, and Mr. de la Salle had under his command 150 landmen, who were to ſettle in the country, and twelve gentlemen volunteers; it being propoſed to plant a colony and build a good fort in the gulph of Mexico, which was to ſerve both as a magazine, and as a place of retreat, in caſe of misfortunes either by ſea or land.

With this ſquadron Mr. de la Salle ſailed from Rochelle on the 5th of Auguſt 1684, and paſſing by Martinico and Guadaloupe, took in freſh proviſions and water, with ſeveral volunteers. The ketch being ſeparated by a ſtorm, was taken by the Spaniards, but the other three veſſels arrived about the middle of February 1685, in the bay of Spirito Santo, and at about the diſtance of ten leagues found a large bay, which Mr. de la Salle miſtook for the right arm of the Miſſiſſippi, and called it St. Lewis. Having ſounded this bay, he found it deep but narrow, and therefore expreſsly forbid the captain of the fly-boat's attempting to enter it, without his having on board the pilot of the frigate, who was an experienced mariner, and to unlade his guns into the pinnace; but the captain neglecting theſe orders, ran the fly-boat upon the ſands, where ſhe ſtuck faſt.

Mr. de la Salle was at this time on ſhore, and being in pain for the ſafety of the veſſel, was going on board in order to ſave her, when he was prevented by the appearance of about 120 of the natives advancing to attack him. He immediately put his men in a poſture of defence, but the noiſe alone of his drums put the Indians to flight. Mr. de la Salle then following them, preſented the calumet of peace, which they accepted, and went along with him to his camp; where having entertained them, he ſent them back with ſome preſents. With this treatment they were ſo well pleaſed, that the next day they returned his civility, by bringing proviſions and concluding an alliance with him, which might have proved of great advantage, had it not been interrupted by an accident. For as they were unlading the fly-boat in order to endeavour to get her off the ſands, a pack of blankets fell into the ſea, and was driven on ſhore by the waves. This being found by the Indians, Mr. de la Salle ſent to demand it in a very civil

manner; but they ſhewing ſome reluctance at parting with it, the officer raſhly threatened to kill them, unleſs they reſtored it immediately. At this they were both frightened and incenſed, and reſolving to be revenged for the affront, aſſembled in the night in order to attack the camp. The centinel being aſleep, they advanced as near as they pleaſed, and diſcharging their arrows, killed four officers, and wounded two of the gentlemen volunteers; upon which the French running to their arms fired upon them and put them to flight, though none of them were wounded; but the next day they killed two of Mr. de la Salle's men, whom they found aſleep.

In the mean time the fly-boat was unloaded, but was too far ſunk to be got off. At length Mr. Beaujeau ſeeing all the goods and merchandize landed, and the fort almoſt finiſhed, ſailed for France, and Mr. de la Salle having left 100 men under the command of Mr. de Moranger his nephew, marched with the remainder, who amounted to fifty perſons, into the country in order to the diſcover the Miſſiſſippi.

In the mean time, a new fort was built in a very advantageous poſt, defended by twelve pieces of cannon, and the old fort deſtroyed; but the Indians ſtill killing the French, whenever they got them in their power, and Mr. de la Salle, ſeeing no method of concluding an alliance with them, reſolved to make war upon them in order to oblige them to come to an accommodation. He therefore ſet out again from the fort on the 13th of October, with 60 ſtout men, armed with pieces of wood on their breaſts to defend them from the arrows of the Indians. He had not advanced far, before he found them encamped, and after ſeveral ſkirmiſhes, in which he killed and wounded a great number of them, he returned with many priſoners. He then found that though he had ordered

the captain of the frigate to ſuffer none of his men to land, yet pleaſed with the delightful appearance of the country, he had gone on ſhore with ſix of his beſt men, in a canoe, in which leaving their arms, they went into a meadow, where falling aſleep, they were killed by the Indians, who broke the canoe in pieces, and this accident had put the whole colony into great conſternation.

However, at length, Mr. de la Salle ſet out again with 20 men, in order to diſcover the mouth of the river Miſſiſſippi: continual rains now rendered the ways very bad; but at length finding what he imagined to be that river, he fortified a poſt on its bank, and leaving part of his men, returned to the fort, delighted with his diſcovery. He had there the mortification to find that the frigate, the only veſſel he had left, and in which he intended to ſail to St. Domingo for freſh ſupplies, had, by the negligence of the pilot, run a-ground, and was daſhed to pieces, by which all his men were drowned, except the Sieur Chefdeville, the captain, and four ſailors, and all the goods, proviſions and tools loſt.

Their affairs being thus ruined, they had no other way to return to Europe than by that of Canada. Mr. de la Salle therefore reſolved to undertake that dangerous journey with 20 men, and an Indian called Nicana, who had formerly attended him into France, and had given him the greateſt proofs of his affection. Mr. Cavalier, Mr. de Moranger, and father Anaſtaſius, alſo deſired to be of the company. They took with them powder and ſhot, a quantity of glaſs beads, and two kettles for boiling their meat, and then ſet out in order to find the Illenois river.

Having marched for three days to the north-eaſt, they entered a fine champaign country, and were met by ſeveral men on horſeback, with boots, ſpurs and ſaddles, which ſhewed they had ſome commu-

nication with the Spaniards. They then marched two days over vaſt meadows, where they ſaw ſuch numbers of wild cows, that the ſmalleſt herds conſiſted of about 400. Ten of theſe cattle they killed, and ſtopping to reſt themſelves for two days dreſſed their meat, that it might ſerve them for the remainder of their journey. Mr. de la Salle here altered his courſe, and marched directly to the eaſtward. One day Nicana the Indian crying out that he was bit by a rattle-ſnake, and was a dead man, they immediately gave him ſome Orvietan, and having ſcarified the wound, applied to it the ſalt of vipers, by which he was recovered; but this accident made him ſtop for ſeveral days.

At length paſſing through a delightful country, they came to the ſettlements of the Cenis, one of the largeſt and moſt populous nations in America. Theſe extended twenty leagues in length, and all that ſpace was interſperſed with hamlets. Among theſe people they found ſeveral things which they muſt have obtained from the Spaniards, as pieces of eight, ſilver ſpoons, clothes and horſes, particularly a bull from the Pope, exempting the Spaniards of New-Mexico, from faſting in ſummer; horſes were ſo common among them that they exchanged one for an axe, and from theſe people they learned that the Spaniards reſided at the diſtance of ſix days journey.

Having ſtaid ſeveral days among the Cenis, they continued their march through the country of the Naſſonis, where Mr. de la Salle, and Mr. Moranger his nephew, being ſeized with a violent fever, they were obliged to ſtay two months; which diſappointed all their meaſures. Though they had not advanced above 150 leagues in a direct line, their powder was almoſt ſpent, ſome of the men had deſerted to the Indians, and others were ready to follow them; which Mr. de la Salle conſidering, reſolved to return back to Fort Lewis, and this

reſolution being approved by the whole body, they marched back to their camp, where they arrived on the 17th of October 1686, and were received with the greateſt joy by their companions.

Mr. de la Salle having ſtaid two months at the fort, during which he cauſed new entrenchments to be made, and took all poſſible precautions for the ſecurity of the colony, ſet out again with 20 men, his brother, his two nephews, father Anaſtaſius, and the Sieur Joutel, with a reſolution not to return till he had found the Illenois river. He began his march on the 11th of January 1687, and having croſſed ſeveral rivers that were much ſwelled with rains, came into a fine hunting country where he and his company ſtaid ſeveral days to refreſh themſelves. He there ſent out Mr. de Moranger his nephew, his valet, and ſeven or eight men to a place where Nicana, the faithful Indian, had laid up a ſtock of beef, in order to get it ſmoked and dryed, that they might carry it along with them to prevent their being obliged to retard their journey by frequently hunting for proviſions; but Mr. de Moranger, the valet, and Nicana, never returned, they being murdered by ſome of the Frenchmen, who had plotted their deſtruction.

Mr. de la Salle being at two leagues diſtance from the place where theſe murders were committed, was ſurprized at his nephew's not returning, and apprehending his being ſeized by the Indians, deſired father Anaſtaſius to go with him in ſearch of his nephew, taking two Indians along with them. When they had got about two leagues, they obſerved ſome of the French by the waterſide, and going up to them, enquired for Mr. de Moranger, on which they pointed to the place where he lay; and two of the villains lying hid in the graſs, one of them ſhot Mr. de la Salle through the head. Thus died this gentleman,

who was diſtinguiſhed by his bravery and conduct, and deſerved a much better fate.

Father Anaſtaſius having performed the laſt offices for this unhappy gentleman, went in ſearch of Mr. Cavalier, Mr. de la Salle's brother, whom he found in a hut, and was ſoon after followed by the murderers, who rudely entered, and having ſeized all they could find, were ſoon after joined by the reſt of thoſe who had engaged in the conſpiracy. It was agreed to ſave the lives of theſe gentlemen on account of their being eccleſiaſtics, and to proceed to the nation of the Cenis. The murderer of Mr. de la Salle was choſen their leader, but ſoon after a conteſt ariſing between him, and one Hans, a German, the party divided, and Hans taking his opportunity, ſhot the murderer to the heart.

Upon their arrival among the Cenis, they found them ready to march againſt their enemies; upon which Hans and ſeveral others joined them, while the reſt ſtaid in the country: but they were no ſooner gone than father Anaſtaſius, the Sieur Joutel, and ſome others having procured horſes and two Indians for their guides, ſet out and proceeding to the north-eaſt, on the 5th of September, reached the mouth of the river Illenois, diſtant 100 leagues from Fort Crevecoeur, to which they proceeded, and were received at the fort with the greateſt reſpect by the commander; whence being conducted to Quebec, they ſailed for France on the 20th of Auguſt 1688.

About ſeven years after, Mr. d'Ibberville, who had already performed great things, undertook to execute what Mr. de la Salle had promiſed, and being encouraged by the court, carried over a number of people to the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi, where he founded the firſt colony the French ever had on that river. He provided the men with every thing neceſſary for their ſubſiſtence, and having erected a ſtrong fort for their protection

againſt the Indians, returned to France, in order to obtain ſupplies. The king being extremely pleaſed with his ſucceſs, promiſed him all the aſſiſtance he could deſire, and he was ſoon in a condition to put to ſea again. His ſecond voyage was as fortunate as the firſt; but he fell ſick, and died as he was preparing for the third, which might have proved of fatal conſequence to the colony, had it not been for the generoſity and public ſpirit of a private gentleman, who having received from the government authority to act, undertook to ſupport it at his own expence.

In the grant of Louiſiana made to Mr. Crouzat by Lewis XIV. in the year 1712, it is ſaid to be bounded by the river and lake of Illenois on the north; by New Mexico on the weſt; by the gulph of Mexico on the ſouth; and by Carolina on the eaſt; though indeed the weſt part of this country belongs to the Spaniards, and the eaſt to the Engliſh, and by patents the latter have obtained from the crown, are empowered to extend the plantations of Carolina as far to the weſtward as they think proper.

Mr Crouzat's grant did not ſubſiſt long; for there being a neceſſity of having ſome plauſible pretence for changing the face of public affairs in France, the ſettlement of this country was thought the moſt convenient, and all imaginable pains were taken to repreſent it as a paradiſe, and a place from whence inexhauſtible treaſures might be drawn, provided due encouragement could be obtained from the government. For this purpoſe it was neceſſary to erect a new company, to make way for which Mr. Crouzat was prevailed upon to reſign his grant. Hence aroſe the noiſe that was made about the Miſſiſſipi, and the romantic ſtories of the fertility of the banks of that great river, and the incredible wealth that would flow from thence. This bubble ſhook the credit of France, and made

way for the bubbles formed for the ſouth ſea company in England.

The Miſſiſſippi, or river St. Lewis, as it is ſometimes called, is ſaid by the French to riſe in the north-weſt part of Canada, taking its courſe to the ſouth-eaſt, but in 45°. turns almoſt due ſouth, and in that direction continues its courſe till it falls into the gulph of Mexico in 30°. north latitude, and 95°. of weſt longitude. It is ſwelled into a very large deep river by the ſtreams of four or five conſiderable rivers that fall into it, both from the eaſt and weſt; and ſome French authors maintain, that it has a gentle ſtream and is navigable for large veſſels, almoſt up to its ſource; but other French writers as well as ſome Engliſh ſeamen, affirm, that it has a very rapid ſtream, that in ſeveral parts it has cataracts which obſtruct its navigation, and that there are ſuch ſhoals at its mouth, that large ſhips cannot approach it. In ſhort this river is full of iſlands, which being filled with trees, look like groves riſing out of the water, and afford a very agreeable proſpect. And on its banks are woods, meadows, and hills.

The ſoil in the neighbourhood of the Miſſiſſippi is extremely various, being in ſome places barren, and in others extraordinary fruitful, and naturally abounds with the ſame plants and animals as Georgia, Carolina and Virginia. Much noiſe has been made about the ſilver mines in this country, and the probability of finding thoſe of gold; but ſome perſons who have been ſent from France to make trial of the mines, reported that they are far from being valuable, and that it would be very difficult, if not impracticable, to work them. The principal produce of this country exported to Europe are furs, raw hides, and tobacco.

The French divided this extenſive country into nine provinces, in each of which they had ſome ſmall poſts; but the only place they poſſeſſed of

any conſequence was New-Orleans, ſeated in a very fruitful part of the country, about 120 miles from the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi, where the inhabitants raiſe corn enough for their own ſubſiſtence, and a ſmall quantity of tobacco. The number of people ſettled in this extenſive country is computed by ſome French authors to amount to 12,000.

Since the laſt peace, the French reſigned this country, to which they had given the name of Louiſiana, to the Spaniards.

THE

Diſcoveries and Settlements

OF THE

DUTCH IN AMERICA.

CHAPTER I.

The manner in which Surinam was taken by the Dutch. The commodities brought from thence, with a deſcription of the country, and manners of the Indian inhabitants.

THE moſt conſiderable of the Dutch ſettlements on the continent is that of Surinam, which they took from the Engliſh. We have already given an account of the expeditions of Sir Walter Raleigh, and other perſons to Guiana, and it muſt here be obſerved, that after the reſtoration, the Lord Willoughby, who was governor of Barbadoes, obtained a grant of this country from King Charles II. and actually made a conſiderable ſettlement on the river of Surinam, which they might have poſſeſſed much longer than they did, had it not been for their own indiſcretion. About that time the coaſt of Guiana was poſſeſſed by three European nations, from Cape Orange almoſt to the river Oroonoko. The Engliſh had a ſmall colony and redoubt on the river Moronny, but their chief ſettlement was at Surinam river, which was ſo deep that ſhips of 300 tons might run 20 leagues up. The French had the iſland of Cayenne, and the rivers of Ovia, Corrou, and Sinemary, which laſt

is about 53 leagues eaſt of Surinam; and the Dutch were ſettled about the river Aproague, while the Zealanders poſſeſſed the river Berbiche, and had repulſed the Engliſh, who had attacked them there, witth conſiderable loſs. When the firſt Dutch war broke out, in which the French took part with the Republic, both thoſe nations deſired a neutrality in thoſe parts, but the Engliſh would not conſent to it.

In the year 1666, the ſtates of Zealand being provoked at the Engliſh having invaded and taken from them all the lands they poſſeſſed in America, except about the river Berbiche, ſent Commodore Creiſſen with four ſhips of war and 300 men, to attack Surinam. He ſailed from Zealand the latter end of January, arrived at Cayenne in March, and from thence ſteered for Surinam. He ſailed three leagues up the river under Engliſh colours, to the fort of Paramorbo, without being taken for an enemy: when being diſcovered for want of ſignals, the fort began to fire on his ſhips, which he anſwered with broadſides from all the veſſels, and immediately landed his forces. The Engliſh who had lived for a long time in profound ſecurity, found themſelves too weak to make a defence on the land ſide, and the ſettlements being diſperſed along the river for thirty leagues up, the fort could receive no ſuccours but by water, where the Zealanders were maſters. The Engliſh therefore capitulated, that all the inhabitants of the river Surinam and Kamomioque, who ſhould take an oath of fidelity to the ſtates of Zealand, ſhould enjoy the peaceable poſſeſſion of their eſtates. But the houſes, &c. belonging to the lord Willoughby, and to thoſe who abſented themſelves, were to be forfeited; that all foreigners who had no eſtates ſhould remain priſoners of war, and all the Engliſh deliver up their arms.

This capitulation being executed, Commodore Creiſſen put the moſt valuable part of the plunder on board a fly boat, took the priſoners on board a man of war, then after cauſing the fort to be repaired and put in a poſture of defence, left it in the poſſeſſion of the Sieur de Rome, and then ſailed for the iſlands. Afterwards when the peace was concluded at Breda, it was agreed that the Dutch ſhould keep Surinam; and in return, the Engliſh ſhould keep the poſſeſſion of New-York, which was then called the New Netherlands.

While this ſettlement of Surinam was in the poſſeſſion of the Engliſh, they made but very little advantage of it, however, it was attended with very ſmall expence, as they were upon very good terms with the natives, with whom the Dutch were and ſtill are upon ſo bad a footing, that they are obliged to keep up a ſtrong fort ſecured by a good garriſon; and if any Dutchmen venture out of the limits of their ſettlements, the Indians are ſure to give them no quarter.

The commodities raiſed by the Dutch at Surinam, are ſugar, indigo, ginger, tobacco, and cotton, for the cultivation of which, they have negroes from their colonies in Africa, where a part of their goods is alſo taken off.

Beſides this ſettlement, they have Boron, Berbiche, and Approwack, ſituated at a ſmall diſtance from each other, which for the moſt part raiſe the ſame commodities as at Surinam. At Berbiche however, beſides an extraordinary quantity of cotton, they prepare a rich dye called orlane, from an herb of the ſame name; and being there upon good terms with the Indians, trade with them for proviſions, hides, and other kinds of merchandize.

Surrinam, the capital of theſe ſettlements, is ſituated in 6°. 30'. north latitude, and in 56°. weſt longitude from London. The country is in many parts thinly peopled, eſpecially the low lands,

which are often overflowed by the rivers; but the upper hilly countries are very populous. The ſoil is well watered; the air cooler than towards the coaſt, and the hills rich in mines of ſeveral ſorts. All kinds of grain grow there all the year round, (except wheat) coming up in a ſhort time, and with little or no diſtinction of ſeaſons; for there being no winter, the trees are always green and full of leaves, bloſſoms, and fruit, which is very plentiful and good. Though this country lies within the torrid zone, the climate is pretty temperate, and the air wholeſome; the heats being generally allayed by a freſh eaſterly wind, which reigns in the day during the greateſt part of the year; and at night the land breezes prevail, but do not reach above two or three leagues out at ſea. The waters are alſo excellent, and are found by experience to keep ſweet during the longeſt voyages. On the ſea coaſts, which are generally low, are many large iſlands fit for feeding of cattle.

Among the fruits of this country, are the bread fruit, tamarinds, papayas, accajou apples, and many other tropical fruits.

The papaya is produced on a tall ſlender tree or ſhrub with large leaves, ſomewhat reſembling thoſe of the vine; the tree is hollow and grows fifteen feet high in one year. The fruit is thick and round, and in taſte has ſome reſemblance to a cucumber.

The accajou apple is long, thick, and of an orange red; it has a ſharp taſte and is commonly eaten baked. At the end of the fruit is a green nut, much in ſhape of a little ſheep's kidney, the kernel has the taſte of a filbert, the ſhell is oily, and on the ſkin being touched with this oil, it is ſtained black, ſo as not to rub off in a long time.

This country alſo produces vanillas, tobacco, pete and rocou, Indian wheat, mandioka, cotton, indigo, and ſeveral other uſeful plants, among

which cotton is moſt cultivated by the Indians, whoſe women ſpin it as fine as they pleaſe in order to adorn themſelves.

The vanilla is a weed that creeps up trees in the ſame manner as ivy, the leaves are of a bright green, long, thick, and pointed at the end; when it has been ſeven years ſet in the ground, it begins to bear a kind of huſks full of an oily matter, and a ſeed ſmaller than that of a poppy, which is uſed in Europe in perfuming chocolate, liquors, and tobacco.

This country likewiſe produces ſeveral kinds of phyſical gums, woods, and roots, as alſo various ſorts of woods for dying, and making of cabinet work, and, in particular, ſeveral different kinds of ebony.

Here are incredible numbers of monkeys of various kinds, among which is one called by the Indians Sapajous, a little yellowiſh ape with large eyes, a white face, and black chin. They are of a low ſtature, and very lively and diverting, but ſo tender, that it is with great difficulty they can be taken over alive to Europe. The woods alſo abound with ſmall tygers, deer, hogs, porcupines, camelions, monſtrous ſerpents, and many other animals and reptiles.

Tame and wild fowl are alſo very plentiful, and with theſe they ſupply the European ſettlements, on the ſea coaſt. They conſiſt of parrots, toncans, flamingos, large wild ducks, with red feathers on their heads, and ſeveral other birds chiefly remarkable for their feathers.

The ſea, near the coaſt, abounds with fiſh, the moſt common is the cat-fiſh, which is yellow and very large, mullets, thornbacks, lamentines and turtle.

The natives are of a reddiſh complexion, of a low ſtature, and of a robuſt ſtrong conſtitution. They have long black and lank hair, and have no

other covering than a little cotton wool, which hangs from their waiſt down to their legs, except ſeveral folds of cotton cloth, wherewith they cover their arms and faces, and a ſort of crown of feathers of various colours, which they wear on their heads by way of ornament. They alſo bore a hole between their noſtrils, and hang to it a ſmall piece of money, or a large green ſtone, or rather cryſtal, brought from the river of the Amazons, and on this ſtone they ſet a great value. They alſo cut off their beards and dye their faces with rocou.

The women are generally ſhorter than the men, but though they appear of a red complexion, they are tolerably handſome, for their eyes are uſually blue, and their features well formed. They faſten to their waiſts a piece of cloth about ſix inches ſquare, of the ſame ſort as that worn by the men on their arms and faces, and woven in ſtripes of ſeveral colours.

Theſe Indians generally live to above 100 years of age. They are endued with good ſenſe, and are judicious, ingenious, patient and ſkilful in fiſhing and hunting. They ſpend the greateſt part of their time in theſe exerciſes, and ſpare no pains in procuring proviſions. They are more inclined to peace than war, but will engage in the latter, either upon a juſt quarrel or for the ſake of revenge. Their wars are ſeldom concluded till they have made forty or fifty of their enemies priſoners, whom they either kill, or ſell to the Europeans on the coaſt, for ſlaves. This barbarity ſeems rather the effect of an ancient cuſtom, than proceeding from their natural diſpoſitions; for when the Europeans repreſent to them, that by the laws of God, men are forbid to kill an enemy whom they have taken priſoner, they make no reply; and ſome of the Aſoquas have appeared full of indignation, on being told, that ſome of the Galibis

inſinuated to the Europeans, that they would be roaſted by them, if they ſhould travel through their country. They are generally great eaters. Their common food is cakes made of the mandiaca root, baked on the embers, as alſo Indian wheat, fiſh, and fruit. They do not drink at their ordinary meals till they have done, and then only one draught; but when they aſſemble together for warlike enterprizes, or to admit one into their council, after they have expoſed him to ſeveral trials, they make extraordinary rejoicings, which frequently hold three or four days, continuing till they have drank up all their liquors; for upon theſe occaſions they make three or four different kinds of drink, ſome of which are rendered ſtrong by fermentation.

CHAPTER. II.

An account of the iſland of Tobago, St. Euſtatia, Saba, St. Martin, Curacao, Bonairo, and Aruba, poſſeſſed by the Dutch in the Weſt-Indies.

IN the year 1628, king Charles I. granted Tobago, Trinity iſland, Barbuda, and St. Bernard, to Philip, earl of Pembroke and Montgomery; but it does not appear that any ſettlement was made on theſe iſlands in conſequence of this grant; and therefore about the year 1642, the Dutch from Fluſhing, ſent a conſiderable colony to the iſland of Tobago where they fixed themſelves very commodiouſly; and though they at firſt found the climate ſickly and unhealthy, yet in proportion as they cleared the land, the air agreed with them better, and they began to extend their ſettlements: but while they were in this ſituation, the Spaniards from the iſland of Trinity, in conjunction with the

Indians from St. Vincent, fell upon them, murdered them to a man, and deſtroyed their plantations; after which the iſland was deſerted for ſeveral years.

About the year 1664, Mr. Adrian Lampſin, a Dutch Eaſt-India director, and his brother Mr. Cornelius Lampſin, burgomaſter of Fluſhing, formed the deſign of reſettling this iſland, entirely at their own expence. Mr. Cornelius Lampſin, having obtained a licence for that purpoſe of the ſtates, applied to the crown of France, in order to prevent if poſſible, any danger to his new colony, from the ſubjects of that kingdom; upon which Lewis XIV. reſolving to oblige the Dutch, created Mr. Lampſin baron of Tobago, with all the privileges of a baron of France. Upon theſe encouragemens the two brothers proceeded, and by their prudent managenent, in the ſpace of eleven years, rendered this waſte and deſert country, the moſt flouriſhing for its ſize of any of the leeward iſlands.

This iſland, which lies in 11°. 15. north latitude, is the moſt eaſterly of all the iſlands called the Antilles; it is about 12 leagues in length, four in breadth, and 30 in circumference. From one of the largeſt iſles in the province of Zealand they called it New Walcheren, raiſed a very ſtrong fortreſs called Lampſinberg, and two other good forts named Beveren and Belleviſte; and, what is very ſurprizing, ſettled at their own expence, during their adminiſtration, 1200 white people in that iſland; who ſucceeded in raiſing all the commodities brought from the Weſt-Indies, as tobacco, ſugar, ginger, cotton, indigo, cacao, caſſia, fuſtic, rocou, ananas, citrons, oranges, &c. and had beſides ſome very valuable commodities, not to be found in the other iſlands, as a great quantity of gum Copal, wild mace and nutmegs, and an excellent kind of ſaſſafras: beſides which they raiſed all ſorts of grain and proviſions, ſufficient not only

for their own uſe, but to export ſome to the other iſlands.

However in 1674, marſhal d'Eſtrees, by the expreſs orders of Lewis XIV. ſailed with a large fleet to deſtroy this very ſettlement, notwithſtanding its being made under his protection, and by his encouragement. The Dutch defended themſelves obſtinately; but after two hard-fought battles they were defeated, being overpowered by numbers; and, to the entire ruin of the induſtrious planters, and the eternal infamy of that perfidious prince, the colony was totally deſtroyed.

The iſland was however reſtored to the Dutch by the treaty of Nimeguen; but on the 27th of December, 1677, it was taken by the count d'Etrees, vice-admiral of France; after which Tobago was one of the four iſlands, which, at the peace of Aix-la Chapelle, were declared neutral; notwithſtanding which, the marquis de Caylis, governor of the French iſlands, ſoon after began to fortify and ſettle it; but the court of Great-Britain warmly remonſtrating againſt this violation of the peace, the French court diſavowed his proceedings, ordered him home, and the ſettlement to be diſcontinued. In this ſtate it remained till the definitive treaty of Fountainbleau in 1703, by which Tobago was ceded to Great-Britain.

In 1635, the Dutch took poſſeſſion of the iſland of St. Euſtatia, and the ſtates granted the property of it to Mr. Vanre, and ſome other merchants of Fluſhing, who ſoon ſettled a colony upon it, conſiſting of about 600 families. But in the year 1665 the Dutch were diſpoſſeſſed by the Engliſh, and colonel Morgan was ſent with 300 buccaneers to keep poſſeſſion of the place; however this gentlemen ſoon after making an attempt upon the French part of the iſland of St. Chriſtopher's was killed; and the next year the Dutch and French engaging in a war againſt Great-Britain, attacked and made

themſelves maſters of this iſland, which was afterwards reſtored to the Dutch by the treaty of Breda. The French, however, took it from them in 1689, but it was reſtored to them again by the treaty of Ryſwick; ſince which time they have remained in the peaceable and quiet poſſeſſion of it.

St. Euſtatia, is ſituated to the north-weſt of St. Chriſtopher's in 17°. 40. north latitude. This iſland which is only five leagues in compaſs, appears to the ſouthward like a high mountain riſing out of the ſea, but ſtretches out to the northward into a pretty good country. The number of plantations upon it, and the comfortable ſituation of its inhabitants do great honour to the induſtry of the Dutch. All the ſides of the mountains are laid out into ſmall well cultivated ſettlements; the houſes are well built and well furniſhed, moſt of the inhabitants are in good circumſtances, and have warehouſes filled with European commodities, with which they furniſh their neighbours at a high price, whenever they happen to be diſappointed of ſupplies from England and France. They alſo raiſe beſides ſome other commodities, great quantities of excellent tobacco, which comes to a good market in Holland; and yet there is not a drop of water in the iſland but what they are ſupplied with from the clouds, which they preſerve ſo carefully in ciſterns, that they are very ſeldom diſtreſſed. The top of the mountain is covered with a vaſt wood, in the middle of which, inſtead of the point that might be expected, as it riſes in the form of a ſugar loaf, there is a wide and deep cavern, which was probably once a volcano.

To the north-weſt of this iſland, lies that of Saba, in 17°. 35, north latitude. It at firſt ſight appears to be a rock, but the Dutch governors of St. Euſtatia have ſettled a ſmall colony there, in a valley where they raiſe tobacco and other things. Both of theſe iſlands have the misfortune of not

having a ſingle port; St. Euſtatia however has a good road where all the ſhips ride, and the Dutch have erected a pretty ſtrong fort to command it.

We now come to the iſland of St. Martin, ſituated in 18°. 15. north lat. a little inconſiderable iſland, about ſeven leagues in length, and four in breadth, and yet inhabited by two powerful nations; though its ſmallneſs is not its only diſadvantage, for the climate is far from being wholeſome, and the ſoil cannot be very fertile, as there are no rivers, and very few ſprings, and even theſe are dried up in the hot ſeaſons, ſo that the inhabitants are obliged to have recourſe to their ciſterns of rain water; yet as inſignificant as this place may appear, it has been contended for, by the Spaniards, French, and Dutch. The French were the firſt European nation who attempted to ſettle this iſland; but allowing the Dutch to trade with them, they ſeized a favourable opportunity, ſurpriſing the French, drove them out, and then built a fort for their own ſecurity; but the Spaniards not liking their neighbourhood, drove out the Dutch in their turn and erected a ſtrong fortreſs, to prevent any other nation ſettling upon it: however at length perceiving that the Engliſh, French, and Dutch had ſeized the more valuable iſlands, they thought it ridiculous to be any longer at the expence of keeping this, and therefore reſolved to quit it. This reſolution was taken in the year 1648, and was ſoon after executed; for having deſtroyed their ciſterns, burned their houſes, and blown up their fort, they retired to Porto Rico.

In this Spaniſh garriſon were four Frenchmen, five Dutchmen, and a mullato, who being unwilling to go, hid themſelves in a wood till the Spaniards were embarked, and then boldly ſallied out to take poſſeſſion of the whole iſland. They however ſoon divided, and made choice of different places to ſettle in, and even by a formal treaty,

theſe ten perſons agreed to divide the country, between the French and Dutch nations. The Dutch making a little canoe, ſent one of their number to St. Euſtatia, to inform the governor of their ſituation, and promiſed the French to ſend the like notice to the governor of St. Chriſtopher's: the former being their own affair was exactly performed, but the latter concerning only their neighbours, was entirely neglected.

The governor of St. Euſtatia being willing to ſeize this new acquiſition, ſent one Martin Thomas with a conſiderable number of planters to take poſſeſſion of that part of the iſland, which belonged to the Dutch. After this they began to treat the French but very indifferently, who receiving no news from their countrymen began to ſuſpect the cauſe, and therefore with ſome difficulty ſent a perſon to St. Chriſtopher's to inform M. de Poincy of the agreement they had made, and the hardſhips under which they laboured; whereupon he diſpatched an officer with thirty men, to take poſſeſſion for the crown of France; but the Dutch would not ſuffer them to land, declaring that they conſidered themſelves as the legal poſſeſſors of that iſland.

The French officer no ſooner returned to St. Chriſtopher's, than M. de Poincy ſent his nephew to put an end to the diſpute; and this commiſſion he performed ſo effectually, that the Dutch governor was glad to ſettle the diviſion of the iſland, according to the firſt agreement; by which all that part of it towards Anguilla, was to belong to the French, while the other ſide, in which the Spaniſh fort before ſtood, remained in the poſſeſſion of the Dutch; the former was indeed in every reſpect, the better half, only the Dutch had on their ſide the advantage of ſome ſalt pits. This contract was ſettled on the top of the higheſt hill in the iſland,

which was from thence called la Montagne des Accordes, the mountain of agreement.

From this time the two nations lived together in ſtrict friendſhip; the French ſettlement however is of very little conſequence, though that of the Dutch is in a flouriſhing condition, for they have large warehouſes and carry on a conſiderable trade, particularly in tobacco. This iſland would be ſtill more conſiderable if the Dutch had a tolerable port, but they have only a road where ſhips are much expoſed, and it beſides lies too much to the leeward. In the iſland of St. Martin there is great plenty of a kind of tree, which both the Dutch and French call candle-wood, for the ſmall ſticks ſerve for candles, and at the ſame time they light the room, yield a very agreeable ſcent. We are now to proceed to their other iſlands which lie nearer the Spaniſh coaſt, and from which they receive greater advantages.

Curacao, or as it is pronounced and ſometimes written by the Dutch, Curraſſaw, is an iſland about nine or ten leagues long, and five broad, ſituated in 12°. 40'. north latitude; but though the ſoil is far from being fruitful, and the climate ſtill farther from being either agreeable or healthy, yet ſuch has been the care and induſtry of the Dutch, that they receive great advantages from this ſmall and to appearance, inconſiderable country, in which there was formerly a great quantity of cattle; but they have turned their extenſive paſtures into ſugar and tobacco plantations, ſo that the proviſions of all ſorts that are raiſed in this iſland, it is thought would ſcarce maintain its inhabitants for one day; yet theſe inhabitants are ſo far from being expoſed to want, that there is not a more plentiful or better provided place in the Weſt-Indies; every thing however, fetches a high price, but this is ſo far from being a diſadvantage, that

it is the principal ſource of the great wealth of the inhabitants.

The harbour of Santa Barbara is on the ſouth ſide of the eaſt end of the iſland, but the chief harbour is about three leagues from the ſouth-eaſt end of the ſouth ſide, where the Dutch have a very good town and a ſtrong fort; there is no anchoring at its entrance, but being got in it is a place of great ſecurity. The Dutch town is for its ſize one of the fineſt in America, and it has every thing requiſite to render it commodious and agreeable, as far as the climate and ſoil will permit. The public buildings are very neat; the port is rendered ſafe as poſſible, and though the entry is dangerous, yet the precautions taken by the government for the ſervice of ſtrangers, not only free them from all difficulties, but render them alſo in a great meaſure inſenſible of any hazard; by which means it is become one of the moſt frequented ports in the Weſt-Indies. All kinds of labour is here performed by engines, with ſuch dexterity that ſhips are lifted at once into the dock, where they are carefully and effectually careened; and all nations are with equal readineſs furniſhed with proviſions, naval ſtores, ammunition, and even artillery.

Bonaira and Aruba are alſo two iſlands in the poſſeſſion of the Dutch, dependent upon the iſland of Curacoa. The former lies ten leagues to the eaſtward of that iſland, and is about ſeventeen leagues in compaſs. The Dutch have a deputy governor, a guard of ſoldiers, and a conſiderable number of Indians, with a fort for the protection and ſecurity of the place.

The Indians are huſbandmen, and plant yams, potatoes, maize, and Guinea corn, but they are chiefly employed about cattle, particularly in ſending great quantities of goats fleſh to Curacoa. There are alſo ſome horſes, bulls, and cows, though they are not ſo numerous as the goats;

but in all the iſland there are no ſheep or hogs, or any other animals except thoſe already mentioned. The ſouth ſide is a plain low land, and there are ſeveral ſorts of trees, but none very large. There is a ſmall ſpring of water by the houſes, which ſerves the inhabitants, notwithſtanding its being brackiſh; however, at the weſt end of the iſland is a good ſpring of freſh water, and three or four Indian families live there; theſe ſprings afford all the freſh water found in the place; near the eaſt end is a good ſalt pond, where Dutch ſloops go for ſalt, which is now become a very conſiderable commodity there.

The iſland of Aruba lies ſeven leagues weſt of Curacoa; but though it is not very conſiderable, the inhabitants breed ſome cattle and a great many horſes, this renders it of ſervice to the chief colony, which it alſo furniſhes with a great quantity of garden ſtuff, without which the people at Curacoa could not ſubſiſt; for, among their other methods of getting money, one is, allowing ſtrangers to erect hoſpitals on ſhore, for their ſick, wherein they conſume a great many greens and roots, for which they pay a very high price, as they do for all other conveniences.

But to return to Curacoa; as this iſland is not above ſeven leagues from the Spaniſh coaſt, it is commodiouſly ſituated for carrying on a clandeſtine trade. This was firſt begun by the ſale of Negroes, brought thither by the Dutch from their numerous ſettlements on the coaſt of Guinea, who were brought openly by the Spaniards, and tranſported 1500 at a time, in their own veſſels. But ſince the Engliſh at Jamaica have interfered in this trade, it has ſunk conſiderably. However the dealers at Curacoa, and their correſpondents in Holland were too converſent in buſineſs to let the declenſion of the ſlave trade rob them of the benefit of this iſland, they therefore built vaſt magazines, which

they ſtored with European goods; and this not only preſerved the remainder of their ſlave trade, which was winked at by the Spaniſh governors, but the Spaniards under the pretence of buying ſlaves, run all hazards to purchaſe the European commodities they wanted, by which means vaſt ſums are annually traded for in this way.

It has been computed that in time of peace, the trade of this iſland did not produce leſs to the Dutch than five millions of florins per annum, which is about half a million ſterling.

A

Daniſh Settlement in America.

A ſhort deſcription of the iſlands of St. Thomas and St. Croix, in the poſſeſſion of the Danes.

THE only remaining iſlands in this part of the world, that we ſhall now mention, are thoſe of St. Thomas and St. Croix, which belong to the Danes; the former is ſituated in 18°. north latitude, and is one of that cluſter of iſlands called the Virgins. Though it is not above ſeven leagues in circumference, it is in a commodious ſituation, and has an excellent port of an oval form, in a manner ſurrounded by two promontories which defend the ſhips that lie within from almoſt all winds. In the bottom of this port is a ſmall fortreſs which ſtands in a plain, and is a regular ſquare with four ſmall baſtions, but it has neither outworks nor a ditch, it being only ſurrounded with a palliſade. On the right and left of the fort are two ſmall eminences which in other countries would be called bluffs; but though they ſeem deſigned for batteries that would command the whole harbour, no ſuch uſe is made of them. The king of Denmark has here a governor and a garriſon; notwithſtanding which, there is a large factory on the iſland belonging to the Brandenburghers, the ſubjects of the king of Pruſſia.

The neighbourhood of the Spaniſh iſland of Porto Rico is only at ſeventeen leagues diſtance, and ſecures the inhabitants from the danger of

wanting proviſions, to which they would otherwiſe be expoſed ; for though the ſoil is tolerably good and every foot of it cultivated, yet it would not produce ſufficient for the maintenance of the inhabitants, who are very numerous.

The town of St. Thomas conſiſts of one long ſtreet, at the end of which is the Daniſh magazine, a large magnificent and convenient building. The Brandenburgh factory is alſo very conſiderable, and the perſons belonging to it are chiefly French refugees, who fled thither when the proteſtants were expelled from the French iſlands. The chief produce of their plantations is ſugar, which is very fine grained, but made in ſmall quantities; yet the Daniſh governor, who is uſually a man of ſome rank, lives in a manner ſuitable to his character, and generally acquires a good fortune in that ſtation. The director of the Daniſh trade alſo becomes rich in a few years, and the inhabitants in general are in very eaſy circumſtances.

To this iſland the Spaniards are continually ſending large veſſels to purchaſe ſlaves. This is the chief ſupport of the Daniſh and Brandenburgh commerce, as theſe ſlaves are drawn from their ſettlements upon the coaſt of Africa, which, if they had not this trade, would have long ago become uſeleſs, and conſequently deſerted. The Spaniards alſo buy here, as well as at Curacoa, all ſorts of European goods, of which there is always a vaſt ſtock in the magazine, belonging chiefly to the Dutch. There is likewiſe a great reſort of Engliſh, Dutch, and French veſſels to this port, where they can always depend upon the ſale of ſuperfluous, and the purchaſe of neceſſary commodities. But though a prodigious deal of buſineſs is tranſacted in time of peace, in time of war it is vaſtly increaſed, for being a neutral port, the privateers of all nations reſort thither to ſell their prizes.

St. Croix is ſeated about five leagues eaſt of St. Thomas's, and about thirty weſt of St. Chriſtopher's, in 18°. north latitude and in 65°. weſt longitude. It is about ten or twelve leagues in length, but not above three broad. The air is very unhealthy but the ſoil is eaſily cultivated; very fertile and produces ſugar canes, citrons, oranges, lemons, pomegranates, and other fruits, and has ſeveral fine trees whoſe wood is very beautiful, and proper for inlaying.

This iſland has had ſeveral maſters; but the French abandoning it in 1696, it was purchaſed by his late Daniſh Majeſty. It was then a perfect deſert, but was ſettled with great expedition, many perſons from the Engliſh iſlands, and among them ſome of great wealth, having removed thither.

THE

VOYAGE

OF

SIR FRANCIS DRAKE

ROUND THE WORLD:

CONTAINING

An Account of what happened after his ſailing from Plymouth until his Return to England.

ADMIRAL DRAKE, who had before diſtinguiſhed himſelf in ſeveral voyages by his integrity, bravery and conduct, ſailed out of Plymouth Sound on the 15th of November, 1573, with the reſolution to chaſtiſe the Spaniards, for the ill treatment both he and the Engliſh nation had received from that people. He had five ſhips under his command; the Pelican, which he afterwards called the Hind; burthen about 100 tons; the Elizabeth of 80 tons, commanded by Captain John Winter; the Marygold, a bark of 30 tons burthen, commanded by John Thomas; the Swan, a fly-boat of 50 tons, under the command of John Cheſter; and a pinnace of 15 tons, Thomas Moon commander. Theſe ſhips were manned with 164 able men; furniſhed with a large ſtock of proviſions, and had four pinnaces on board ſtowed in pieces, to be ſet up as occaſion required. But this fleet meeting with a violent ſtorm, in which ſeveral of the ſhips were much damaged, and the Pelican in particular, loſing her main maſt, they were

obliged to put back to Plymouth; where having refitted, they ſet ſail on the 13th of December, with a favourable wind, on the 25th paſſed Cape Cantin in Morocco, and on the 27th arrived at the iſland of Mogador, eighteen leagues more to the ſouthward, which had been appointed the place of general rendezvous in caſe of a ſeparation.

Magador is ſituated about a mile from the main land, between which and that iſland, they found a very ſafe and convenient harbour. Here Mr. Drake ordered one of the pinnaces to be put together, and while they were thus embloyed, ſome of the inhabitants approached the ſhore, making ſigns of peace, and two of them ventured on board in the admiral's boat, which was ſent to fetch them; one of the Engliſh being left by way of hoſtage till their return. Theſe told them by ſigns, that the reaſon of their coming was to make an offer of their friendſhip, and that the next day they would furniſh his ſhips with proviſions; whereupon Mr. Drake returned their civility by giving them ſome linen cloth, ſhoes, and a javelin; upon which thoſe on ſhore, on receiving their companions, freely releaſed the hoſtage.

The next day a conſiderable body of the natives appeared near the ſea ſide: when it being imagined that they came laden with proviſions, the boat was ſent to receive them; but one of the men, entertaining no diſtruſt, and haſtily leaping out, as imagining himſelf among friends, was immediately ſeized, and others of the natives quitting an ambuſcade, the ſailors who were going to attempt to reſcue their companion, were glad to recover their boat, and put off with great precipitation. The admiral being extremely exaſperated at this piece of treachery, landed a body of men, and marched a conſiderable way into the country to no purpoſe, for the Moors every where avoided him; he therefore returned to his ſhip, and the

Seymour Sc.

Beavers, building their Hutts.

pinnace being finiſhed in four days, they ſet ſail from the coaſt of Morocco on the 30th of December.

The perſon who had been thus made priſoner was named John Fry. He was carried up into the country, and examined with reſpect to his nation, and the deſtination of the fleet, and having declared that they were Engliſh ſhips bound to the Streights under the command of admiral Drake; who to conceal his real deſign, had artfully cauſed this report to be ſpread, he was ſent back with aſſurances of friendſhip, and ſome preſents for the admiral; but he being gone before Fry's return, he was afterwards ſent back to England in a merchant ſhip.

On the 17th of January, the admiral arrived at Cape Blanco, where he found a ſhip at anchor, with only two men left to guard her. Of this ſhip he made a prize, and ordering her to be taken into the harbour, ſtaid there four days, both to lay in a ſtock of freſh proviſions, of which he found great plenty, and to exerciſe the men, on ſhore, in order to fit them as well for the land, as the ſea ſervice. The inhabitants would have ſold him ſome ſlaves, and offered him a woman with a ſucking child at her breaſt, but Mr. Drake did not chuſe to engage in this traffic. He however ſupplied them with freſh water, of which they were then in great want, and in return they gave him ambergriſe and ſome precious gums.

The admiral left this harbour on the 22d of January, taking with him a Portugueſe caraval, bound to the Cape de Verd Iſlands, for ſalt, and leaving behind him a ſmall bark of his own. The maſter of the Portugeſe veſſel informed the admiral that in one of the Cape de Verd Iſlands, called Mayo, there was a conſiderable quantity of dried goats, which were annually prepared for ſuch of the king's ſhips as called there. At this iſland,

on which were ſome Portugueſe, they arrived on the 27th, but found the villages on the coaſt abandoned, and the wells of freſh water ſtopped up. A body of men commanded by capt. Winter, were ordered to march into the country to take a view of it, which they did, and found the ſoil extremely fertile, and producing great plenty of fruit, particularly fine cocoas, figs, and grapes of a moſt delicious flavour; and notwithſtanding its being in the midſt of winter the air was temperate and pleaſant. They ſaw many goats and kids, but they were too ſwift to be eaſily caught, though they might have brought off many that were old, dead, and dried, that were laid in their way; from which they juſtly inferred, that the inhabitants had been forbid to trade with them; and this was indeed the caſe. They alſo ſaw large quantities of wild hens, and ſalt made by the heat of the ſun, and at length diſcovered plenty of water, but at too great a diſtance from the ſhips for them to think of bringing any on board.

On the 31ſt of January they paſſed by the iſland of St. Jago, the vallies of which were inhabited by the Portugueſe, while the mountains were poſſeſſed by the Moors. Near this iſland they ſaw two Portugueſe ſhips under ſail, and as Portugal was then annexed to the crown of Spain, he took one of them, which proved to be a good prize, laden with wine. Mr. Drake detained the pilot, but ſet at liberty the maſter and all the crew, giving them one of his own pinnaces, and reſtoring them their clothes, ſome proviſions and a butt of wine. On their leaving the iſland, ſeveral pieces of cannon were fired at them, but without doing them any harm.

The ſame night they came to the iſland Del Fuego or the burning iſland, ſo called from the volcano on its north ſide. On the ſouth ſide of Del Fuego they ſaw a very delightful iſland, nam-

ed Brava, which produced oranges, lemons, cocoas, and innumerable vegetables, while the cooling ſtreams with which it is watered, in their progreſs to the ſea, contribute to its fertility, and improve the landſkip; but the ſea around it being unfathomable, and conſequently there being no poſſibility of anchoring, it is avoided by ſhips, and to this may be attributed its want of inhabitants, for ſome of the admiral's people travelling up into the country, met with no ſign of a human being, except a poor hermit, who fled from them, and in whoſe cell they found ſcarcely any thing beſides a crucifix, ſome images of rude workmanſhip, and and ill-contrived altar.

Having taken in a freſh ſupply of water at Brava, they quitted the Cape de Verd Iſlands, and proceeded towards the line; in their approach to which they met with very changeable weather, being ſometimes becalmed for a conſiderable time together, and at others toſſed about by tempeſts. They ſaw all the way great numbers of dolphins, bonetos, and flying fiſhes, ſome of which dropped into their ſhips; for theſe being purſued by ſharks and other fiſhes of prey, uſe their fins as wings, ſpringing up to a great height out of the water, and dropping down when their fins loſe their moiſture.

On the 17th of February they paſſed the line, and on the 5th of April ſaw land for the firſt time, after a run of fifty-four days. This proved to be the coaſt of Braſil, and they no ſooner came within ſight of the ſhore than large fires were lighted up in ſeveral parts, which were ſuppoſed to be the uſual ſacrifices made by the inhabitants on the appearance of ſhips to implore the aſſiſtance of their gods, to prevent their landing, or to put the people on their guard for fear of a foreign invaſion from ſome unknown enemy.

Two days after, they parted from the Chriſtopher, in a ſtorm of rain, thunder, and lightening, but on the 11th they came up with her at a cape, to which the admiral gave the name of Cape Joy. They here found a ſmall harbour, where the ſhips rode in great ſafety, the force of the ſea being broken by a large rock, on which they killed ſeveral ſeals; theſe they kept for food, and found them wholeſome, though they did not think them very palatable. They here alſo took in freſh water; but though the air was mild and the ſoil of the country rich and fertile, they could diſcern no other inhabitants than herds of wild deer; ſome of the ſailors however diſcovered the print of human feet in the ſand.

They now ſteered to the great river of Plate, which they entered, but finding no good harbour, they put to ſea again, and on the night of the 27th came to a bay, when Mr. Drake took his boat to go on ſhore and examine the coaſt; but was overtaken by ſo thick a fog, that he thought proper to return to his ſhip, which he could not have found without great difficulty, if captain Thomas had not ſteered in ſearch of him. He however ſome time after went on ſhore, and found plenty of water and proviſions. The inhabitants leaped and danced with all the ſigns of mirth and good humour, and were not averſe to traffic, though they would receive nothing out of any man's hand, but would have what they purchaſed laid on the ground for their examination.

The next day the fleet were joined by the Swan, which had been miſſing; and the Marygold and Chriſtopher, that had been ſent out in ſearch of a ſafer harbour, returned with the agreeable news that they had found one, and thither the whole fleet ſailed; where being arrived, the admiral ordered the Swan to be burnt as a ſuperfluous veſſel, which was done, after they had divided the pro-

viſions and iron work among the reſt of the fleet. Here they found ſuch multitudes of ſeals, that they killed above 200 in an hour. While they were employed on ſhore, the natives appeared at a diſtance upon a riſing ground. They were ſtrong, well proportioned, and had agreeable features; but their faces were painted. They were ſomething wreathed about their heads, and their other covering was only the ſkins of beaſts wrapped about their waiſts. They had bows of an ell long, and every one of them bore two arrows, and indeed they ſeemed to be not altogether deſtitute of military diſcipline, as appeared from the method obſerved by their commander in ordering and ranging them. Some of theſe people paint their bodies all over black, except their necks, which they coloured white; others paint one ſhoulder black, and the other white; and many of them had their legs tinged black, and adorned with white moons. This continual daubing cloſes up the pores, and renders theſe people leſs ſuſceptible of cold and heat. They were at firſt extremely ſhy of coming near the Engliſh, but the admiral having cauſed ſome baubles to be tied to a pole ſtuck in the ground, and left for them to take when they pleaſed, they ſoon after came and removed them, leaving oſtrich feathers and other toys in exchange. Upon this the admiral and ſome of his men came again, and approached nearer the hill, but retreated on his ſeeing them give ſigns of fear, and prepare to retire. This convincing the natives that he had no ill deſigns againſt them, they boldly advanced towards the Engliſh, and two of them, attracted by the lace on the admiral's hat, ſlyly came behind him, and ſnatching it off his head, ran away with it, and then divided the ſpoil, one keeping the hat, and the other the lace. To this place the admiral gave the name of Seal Bay, from the great number of thoſe animals that frequent it.

Here is alſo a bird called a booby, ſo ſtupid as to ſtand ſtill while it is knocked on the head, and many oſtriches, the thigh of which bird is as large as the leg of a ſizeable ſheep; but though they cannot fly they are not eaſily taken; for being aſſiſted by the fluttering of their wings, they run faſt, and fling ſtones behind them at their purſuers with a pretty good aim.

Having left this place, they proceeded on their voyage to the ſouthward, and on the 20th of June anchored in Fort St Julian, ſo called by Magellan, where the admiral accompanied by ſix men, going on ſhore with his boat to take a view of the country, was in ſome danger from the natives who ſlew the gunner, a man for whom he had a ſincere regard; he however revenged his death by killing the murderer with his own hand. Here he found a gibbet which had been erected by Magellan for the execution of ſome of his mutinous company, who had conſpired his death, and here alſo admiral Drake cauſed Mr. Doughty to be tried and hanged for the ſame crime againſt himſelf.

Leaving Port St. Julian on the 17th of Auguſt, they fell in with the ſtreights of Magellan on the 20th, and the next day entering them, found the paſſage ſo intricate and winding, that the wind, though ſometimes favourable, was without its changing, frequently againſt them; this gave them much fatigue and trouble, eſpecially as they had many ſudden ſqualls which rendered this paſſage very dangerous, for though they found ſeveral good harbours, and plenty of freſh water, yet the ſea is ſo deep, that there is no anchoring, except in ſome very narrow river or between the rocks. On both ſides the ſtreights are vaſt ranges of mountains that riſe far above the clouds, and are covered with perpetual ſnow, where they found the air extremely cold, and the men were benumbed with froſt and ſnow. At the ſouth-eaſt part of the

ſtreights are ſeveral iſlands, between which the ſea breaks in, as it does into the main entrance. It had been imagined that the current always ſet one way, but they now found from the ebb and flood that this was a miſtake, and that the water roſe five fathoms all along the coaſt. Theſe ſtreights are never narrower than one league, or broader than four. On the 24th of Auguſt they made an iſland in the ſtreights, where there were ſuch multitudes of penguins, that they killed 3000 in leſs than one day.

On the 16th of September they entered the South Sea, but the next day they were driven to the ſouthward by a ſtorm, and were obliged to anchor among ſome iſlands, where they found freſh water and excellent herbs, and not far from thence entered another bay, where they ſaw people ranging from one iſland to another, in their canoes in ſearch of proviſions, who traded with them for ſome commodities. Steering northward from hence, they on the 3d of October, found three iſlands, in one of which was an incredible number of birds.

On the 8th of October they loſt the Elizabeth commanded by captain Winter, which they imagined was forced back by a ſtorm into the ſtreights; a conjecture that proved true, though they were miſtaken in ſuppoſing her loſt, for the captain, after having taken poſſeſſion of the ſtreights and the adjacent territories, in the name of queen Elizabeth, was ſo happy as to return to England.

They now ſteered for the coaſt of Chili, and on the 29th of November caſt anchor at the iſle of Mocha, where the Admiral with ten men going on ſhore, were met by ſome of the natives, who behaved with great civility, gave them two fat ſheep and ſome potatoes in return for a few trifles, and alſo promiſed to bring them water, for which they received ſome preſents beforehand. Theſe

people had been driven thither by the cruelty of the Spaniards, who had forced them to leave their habitations and retire to this iſland, in order to preſerve their lives and liberties. The next day therefore, two of the men being ſent on ſhore with barrels for water, the natives ſeeing that they had them at an advantage, and taking them for Spaniards, whom they had reſolved never to ſpare, inſtantly ſeized them, and knocked them on the head.

The Admiral now continuing his courſe, met an Indian in his canoe, who miſtaking his people for Spaniards, told them that there was at Valparaiſo, a large ſhip laden for Peru. The Admiral rewarded him for his intelligence, and he readily agreed to conduct them to the place where the ſhip lay at anchor. Upon their coming up to this veſſel, they found that ſhe had no more men than eight Spaniards and three negroes, who ſuppoſing them friends, welcomed them by beat of drum, and invited them on board to drink ſome Chili wine. With this invitation they immediately complied, and driving the Spaniards under the hatches took poſſeſſion, when one of the Spaniards ſeeing how the others were ſerved, leaped overboard and ſwam to Valparaiſo, upon which the inhabitants immediately quitted the town. The Admiral then having ſecured his new prize, in which were found to the value of 30,000 Spaniſh piſtoles of pure gold of Baldivia, he manned her boat and his own, landed and rifled both the town and the chapel, whence he took a ſilver chalice, the altar cloth and two cruets, of which he made a preſent to his chaplain; and having alſo found a conſiderable quantity of Chili wine, he ſent that on board; then he ſet all his priſoners on ſhore except one, whom he kept for his pilot, and directly ſteered towards Lima, the capital of Peru.

The fleet continuing their courſe, put into the haven of Coquimbo, and here fourteen men were ſent on ſhore to fetch water, when being diſcovered by the town, the Spaniards reſolved to recover the glory of their nation, by being revenged on ſo daring an enemy, and therefore, ordered out a body of 300 horſe and 200 foot to attack them. The Engliſh however retreated, and after ſome diſpute, reached their ſhips with the loſs only of one man, who was ſhot, and whom this formidable army beheaded, while the Indians ſtuck his body full of arrows. The Admiral however, ordered a party of men the next day on ſhore to bury him, to whom the Spaniards in vain diſplayed a flag of truce, as if to invite them to a parley; but the Engliſh believing that their fidelity was no greater than their courage, did not care to truſt them, and having interred their companion returned to their ſhips.

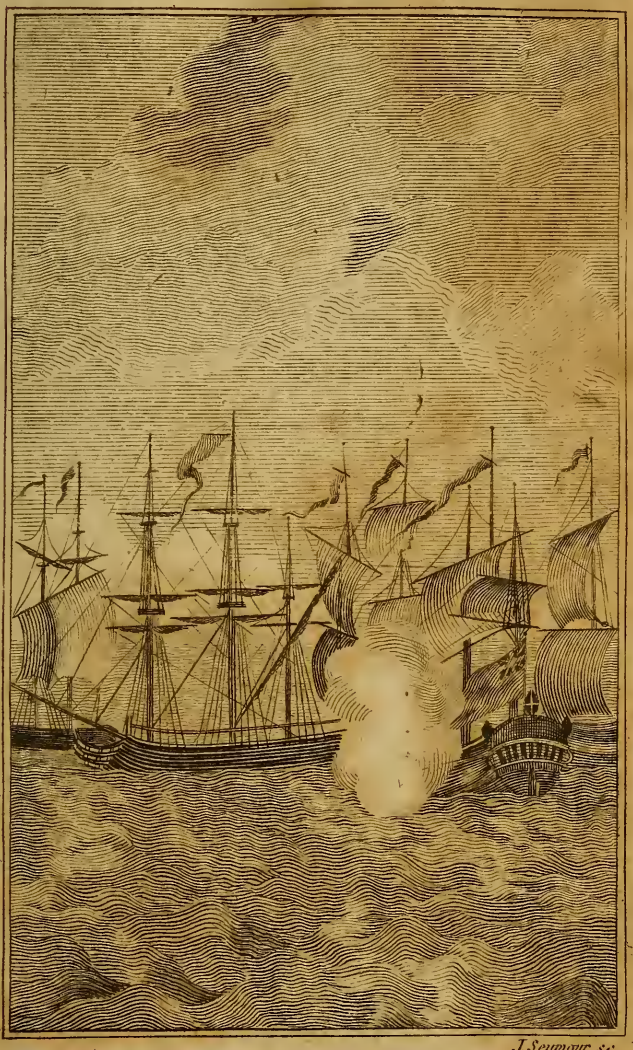
Mr. Drake then weighing anchor proceeded to a port called Tarapaxa, where landing ſome of his men, they found a Spaniard aſleep, with eighteen bars of ſilver lying by him, worth about 4000 Spaniſh ducats, which they took without diſturbing the Spaniard's repoſe. Soon after landing again, in order to take in water, they met a Spaniard and an Indian driving eight Peruvian ſheep laden with very fine ſilver, each of the ſheep having two leathern bags on his back, in which were 100 weight of that metal, when delivering the poor animals from their burdens, they lodged the bags in the ſhips, and then ſuffered the Spaniard and Indian to drive away their beaſts.

From hence they ſailed to the port of Arica, where they found three ſmall barks, in which were 57 wedges of ſilver, each weighing about twenty pounds; the men who belonged to them, fearing no danger, were all on ſhore, by which means they took no priſoners. However not being ſtrong

enough to attack the town, they again put to ſea, and ſoon after fell in with a ſmall bark, when finding nothing in it but linen cloth, they took a ſmall part of it, and then let her go.

On the 13th of February they entered the port of Lima, where they found a fleet of twelve ſhips lying at anchor, with ſcarce any perſons left to guard them; the commanders and their crews being all on ſhore. On their examining the cargoes of theſe ſhips they found a cheſt filled with rials of plate, which they took on board, with ſome ſilks and linens; but being informed that another very rich ſhip called the Cacafuego, had lately left that harbour, in order to ſail to Paita, the admiral reſolved to follow her; but on his arrival at Paita, found ſhe had left that port and was gone to Panama; he however fell in with another, that in ſome meaſure atoned for his diſappointment, ſhe having on board 80 pounds weight of fine gold, beſides a large golden crucifix adorned with emeralds, which he ſeized, together with ſome uſeful cordage.

The admiral ſtill reſolving to continue the purſuit of the Cacafuego, promiſed that whoever firſt ſaw her ſhould have the gold chain he himſelf wore about his neck; which fell to the ſhare of Mr. John Drake, who firſt deſcried her at about three o'clock in the afternoon. and about ſix they came up with and boarded her, after having in three ſhots brought her mizen maſt by the board. They found her cargo full as valuable as it had been repreſented, ſhe having thirteen cheſts full of rials of plate, 80 pounds weight of gold, 26 tons of ſilver bars, and a large quantity of jewels. Among the many rich pieces of plate were two very large ſilver bowls gilt, which belonged to the pilot, one of which the admiral told him he hoped he would allow him to keep by way of remembrance, to which the pilot who was one of the moſt conſiderable perſons on board the Spaniſh ſhips, readily



J.Seymour sc.

Admiral Drake, seizes eight Peruvian Ships, laden with Silver.

conſented, and immediately preſented the other to the admiral's ſteward.

Having taken this valuble treaſure on board, they diſmiſſed the veſſel, and allowed her to purſue her courſe to Panama, after having ſupplied the captain and his crew with linen, and other neceſſaries.

The admiral ſtill continuing his courſe to the weſtward, came up with a ſhip laden with china ware, ſilks of the ſame country, and linen cloth; and having taken out of it what was thought moſt valuable, and among the reſt a falcon of maſſy gold, which had a very valuable emerald ſet in its breaſt, he ſet the ſhip and her people at liberty, keeping only the pilot to aſſiſt in navigating his own veſſel.

The pilot ſteered them into the harbour of Guatulco, and informed them, that there were only ſeventeen Spaniards in the town. Having therefore put to ſhore, the admiral and ſome of his people landed, entered the place, and marched directly to the public hall, where they found the court ſitting, and the judge ready to paſs ſentence on a number of poor negroes who were accuſed of conſpiring to burn the town. But the admiral's coming ſoon changed the ſcene of affairs, for without ſhewing any reverence to the authority of the court, he cauſed the judges, witneſſes, and priſoners, to be carried on board his own ſhip, where he obliged the chief judge to write to the townſmen to keep at a diſtance, and permit the Engliſh to water in quiet. This being done, the town was ranſacked for plunder, but none found, except about a buſhel of rials of plate, only one of the ſailors purſuing a rich Spaniard, who fled from the town, took from him a gold chain, and ſome jewels. Here the admiral ſet on ſhore his Spaniſh priſoners, and an old Portugueſe pilot, whom he had brought from the Cape de Verd iſlands, and then ſet ſail for the iſland Canno, where they anchored on the

16th of March, in a freſh water river. While they lay here they ſeized a Spaniſh veſſel bound for the Philippine iſlands, which put in here for refreſhment, and having taken a part of her cargo, diſcharged her.

The admiral now thinking he had in ſome meaſure taken revenge on the Spaniards, both for the wrongs his country had ſuffered from them, as well as from his own private injuries, began to deliberate on the beſt way of returning home. He reflected that to return by the ſtreights of Magellan, the only paſſage that had been yet diſcovered, would be throwing himſelf into the hands of the Spaniards, who might probably wait for him there with more force than he could reſiſt, as he had but one ſhip left, and that not ſtrong, though it was very rich. All things therefore conſidered, he reſoved to proceed to the Eaſt-Indies, by ſailing to the weſt, and then to follow the Portugueſe courſe, by paſſing the Cape of Good Hope; but being becalmed, he found it neceſſary to ſteer farther to the north, in hopes of obtaining a good wind, upon which he ſailed at leaſt 600 leagues till he came into 43°. of north latitude, where he found the air exceſſive cold, and on his proceeding farther, the ſeverity of the weather became more intolerable; he therefore ſteered back towards the ſouth, till he came into 38°. north latitude, where he found a very good bay, which he entered with a favourable gale.

This country, on account of its white cliffs, which are ſeen at a good diſtance at ſea, he in honour of his native ſoil, called Nova Albion, though it has been ſince known by the name of California. There were ſeveral huts near the water-ſide, well fenced from the ſeverity of the weather; a fire was in the middle of each, and round it the people lay upon ruſhes, with nothing elſe between them and the earth. The men were entirely naked; but the women wore a covering of bullruſhes, dreſſed after

the manner of hemp, and faſtened about their waiſts, with a deer-ſkin flung over their ſhoulders. Theſe people ſoon ſent the admiral a preſent of ſome feathers and cawls of net work, and he entertained the perſons who brought them with ſuch kindneſs and liberality, that they were highly delighted. They ſoon after ſent him another preſent, that conſiſted of feathers and bags of tobacco: a conſiderable body of them waited upon him to deliver them, while the reſt were gathered together at the top of a ſmall hill, at the bottom of which the admiral had pitched ſome tents; and from this eminence, one of them harangued the admiral; and having ended his ſpeech, they all laid down their arms, and coming down, offered their own preſents, and civilly returned thoſe the admiral had made them; while the women who remained above ſeemed, by their tearing their hair and howlings, to be engaged in offering ſacrifices, upon which the admiral ordered divine ſervice to be celebrated in his tent, and theſe innocent people attended with great decency, attention, and amazement.

The news of the arrival of theſe ſtrangers being ſpread through the country, there came two perſons, one of whom made a long ſpeech; from which, and the geſtures of both, it was underſtood that the king himſelf intended to pay the admiral a viſit, provided they would give ſome token of his receiving a peaceful welcome. Which being readily granted, their ſovereign ſoon after made his appearance, attended by a conſiderable train. In the front came a very comely perſon, bearing a ſtaff before the king, upon which hung two crowns made of net-work, artificially wrought with feathers of many colours, and three chains made of bones. The king, who immediately followed, had a very agreeable perſon, and approached with an air of dignity. He was ſurrounded by a guard

of tall well-looking men, clothed in ſkins; then followed the common people, who to make the finer ſhew, had painted their faces with different colours, and all of them had their arms full of preſents, the very children not excepted.

The admiral drew up all his men in a line of battle, and ſtood within the fences of his tent, ready to receive them: at ſome diſtance from him the whole train halted, and obſerved a profound ſilence, when the perſon who marched firſt with the ſtaff, began a ſpeech, which laſted half an hour; and that being ended, the ſame officer began a ſong, and ſtruck up a dance, wherein he was followed by the king and his ſubjects, who came up ſinging and dancing to the fences, which the admiral had made to ſecure his tent from treachery; then all of them ſitting down, the king is ſaid to have made a ſolemn offer of his whole kingdom to the admiral; and, with the conſent of his ſubjects, took off the crown of feathers he wore on his head, and placed it upon the admiral's, at the ſame time inveſting him with other enſigns of royalty. All which the admiral received, hoping that this ſurrender might one time or other add to the glory of his ſovereign, and the advantage of England. But it is moſt probable theſe Indians had no ſuch deſign: they ſeemed to conſider the Engliſh as a ſuperior order of beings; and theſe actions might be no more than the higheſt compliment they could pay them. The common people now diſperſed themſelves among the admiral's tents, expreſſing ſuch an high admiration and love for the Engliſh, that they ſeemed to think them more than mortal, and even came before them with ſacrifices, which they attempted to offer, with the profoundeſt devotion; but the Engliſh kept them back, and endeavoured by their ſigns to render them ſenſible, that there was an omnipotent Being to whom alone theſe honours were due.

Some time after, the admiral and his people travelled to ſome diſtance up into the country, which they found to be extremely full of large fat deer, that were very often near 1000 in a herd. There was alſo ſuch vaſt plenty of a kind of rabbits, that the whole country ſeemed one entire warren; but though their heads were like thoſe of our rabbits, they had a bag on each ſide of their jaws, in which they preſerved ſuch proviſions as they could not immediately devour; their feet reſembled thoſe of a mole, and their tail was like that of a rat. Their fleſh was much eſteemed by the natives, and their ſkins afforded clothing for the king and his principal ſubjects.

The Spaniards had never been upon this ſhore, and it is certain Mr. Drake had the honour of firſt diſcovering it. He therefore at his departure erected a pillar, and affixed to it a large plate, upon which were engraven her majeſty's name and picture, her arms, and title to the country, with the day and year in which the admiral, whoſe name was alſo inſcribed, had arrived on that coaſt.

Having taken in a freſh ſupply of proviſions, and a ſufficient ſtock of water, the admiral left Nova Albion on the 23d of July, the inhabitants appearing extremely concerned at his departure, and lighting fires on the higheſt hills, as was ſuppoſed to make ſacrifices to procure the ſafety of theſe ſtrangers, till the ſhip was out of ſight. Mean while the admiral ſtretched forward to the weſtward, for the Molucco iſlands, and on the 13th of October came up with the Landrones, whence a great number of ſmall veſſels came off, bringing fiſh, fruit, and other proviſions to ſell. Theſe veſſels looked ſmooth and ſhining like burniſhed horn, and on each ſide of them lay out two pieces of wood, and the inſide was adorned with white ſhells. The people in theſe veſſels had the lower part of their ears pared round, and ſtretched with

the heavy pendants that hung in them. Their teeth was as black as jet, occaſioned by their chewing an herb with a ſort of powder, which they carried about with them for that purpoſe, and were eſteemed of great ſervice in preſerving them. And their nails ſeemed deſigned for defenſive weapons, by their ſuffering them to grow at leaſt a full inch in length. Theſe people ſeemed at firſt to deal very fairly, but ſoon began to ſteal every thing they could lay their hands on; and it was impoſſible to make them part with any thing on which they had once ſeized. This uſage made the Engliſh refuſe to deal with them, and hinder their going on board their ſhip, at which they were ſo exaſperated, that they flung ſtones; but on firing a ſingle gun, they were ſo intimidated, that they leaped into the water, and ſkulked for ſhelter under their veſſels, till the ſhip was at ſome diſtance, when nimbly recovering them, they ſteered to the ſhore, but not without frequently caſting their eyes behind them.

On the 18th they came to ſeveral other iſlands, ſome of which appeared to be very populous; and, continuing their courſe, paſſed by the iſlands of Tagulada, Zelon, and Zewarra; the firſt of which produces great quantities of cinnamon, and the inhabitants of moſt of them were friends to the Portugueze.

On the 14th of November they fell in with the Moluccas, and intending to ſail to Tydore, coaſted along the iſland of Mutyr, ſubject to the king of Ternate; but were prevented by meeting his viceroy, who, ſeeing the admiral's ſhip, boldly ventured on board, and adviſed him by ſigns not to proſecute his voyage to Tydore, but to ſail directly for Ternate, becauſe his maſter was a great enemy to the Portugueze, and would have nothing to do with him, if he was at all concerned with Tydore, or the Portugueze ſettled there.

This intimation induced Mr. Drake to alter his firſt reſolution, and reſolving to ſtay at Ternate, he early the next morning came to an anchor before the town, when he ſent the king a preſent of a velvet cloak; and the meſſenger was ordered to make him ſenſible, that his intentions were entirely peaceable, and that he came with no other deſign but to procure proviſions and other neceſſaries in exchange for merchandize. In anſwer to which the king let him know that he was much pleaſed with the thoughts of carrying on a friendly correſpondence with the Engliſh, who ſhould be welcome to whatever his country afforded. The author of this voyage adds, that this ſovereign profeſſed himſelf ready to lay himſelf and his kingdom at the feet of ſo glorious a princeſs as the queen of England, and to make her his ſovereign, as well as theirs; but it muſt be allowed that this monarch could have no motive for ſo high ſtrained a compliment; and that it is more natural to ſuppoſe, that this was inſerted by the author, with no other view but that of pleaſing queen Elizabeth. However, the meſſenger was received with much pomp and ceremony.

The king having a curioſity to ſee the ſhip, reſolved to pay the admiral a viſit on board, and therefore ſent four large veſſels filled with the moſt conſiderable perſons of his court. They were all dreſſed in white lawn or calico. They had a large canopy of very fine perfumed mats, ſupported by a frame made of reeds, which ſpread over their heads from one end of the veſſel to the other. They were ſurrounded by ſervants, who were alſo clothed in white, and theſe were encompaſſed by ranks of ſoldiers, on both ſides of whom were placed the rowers, in three galleries raiſed above each other. Theſe veſſels rowed by the admiral in great order, each paying him their reſpects in turn, and then acquainted him by ſigns that they

were ſent by the king to conduct him into a ſafer road. Soon after came the king himſelf, attended by ſix grave ancient perſons. He ſeemed much pleaſed with the Engliſh muſic, and ſtill more with the admiral's generoſity, who made him and his nobles ſome conſiderable preſents that were highly acceptable. He promiſed to return again the following day, and to ſend them in the mean time ſuch proviſions as they might ſtand in need of. In this laſt particular he kept his word, and they received a conſiderable quantity of fowls, rice, cloves, ſugar, a kind of fruit called frigo and ſagoe.

The next morning the king ſent his brother and the viceroy on board, to excuſe his not viſiting the admiral, to invite him on ſhore, and to ſtay behind by way of hoſtage for the admiral's return. This invitation Mr. Drake declined, but however, ſent ſome of his retinue with the king's brother, and detained only the viceroy as a pledge of their ſafety.

On their landing they were received by another of the king's brothers, accompanied by ſeveral of the nobles, who conducted them with great ſolemnity to the caſtle, where they found at leaſt 1000 perſons, the principal of whom were the council, which conſiſted of ſixty very grave men. Soon after the king himſelf entered, guarded by twelve men armed with lances, the points inverted. A looſe robe of gold tiſſue hung over his ſhoulders, ſeveral gold rings were faſtened about his hair by way of ornament, and he had a chain of the ſame metal about his neck. He had ſeveral rings ſet with fine jewels on his fingers. His legs were bare, and his ſhoes were made of red leather, and over him was borne an umbrella richly embroidered with gold. On the right hand of the chair on which he ſeated himſelf, ſtood a page with a fan two feet in length and one broad, adorned

with ſaphires and faſtened to a ſtaff three feet long; the page with this fan ſtrove to allay the heat occaſioned by the warmth of the ſun, and the throng of the people. His majeſty gave the Engliſh gentlemen a very kind reception; and having underſtood their meſſage, ſent one of his council to conduct them back to the ſhip. The king of Ternate is a very powerful prince, he having ſeventy iſlands under his juriſdiction. His religion as well as that of his ſubjects, is Mahometaniſm.

While the admiral ſtaid here, he was viſited by a perſon well attended, who was of the blood royal of China, but baniſhed for a term of years, on ſuſpicion of his being guilty of ſome crimes againſt the ſtate; during which time he propoſed to travel, in order that he might reap ſome advantage from his misfortunes. He ſeemed to be a man of ſound ſenſe, of a ſtrong judgment and a good memory, and having probably acquired the knowledge of ſome European language, proved an entertaining companion. He was highly pleaſed with the admiral's behaviour, and ſtrove to perſuade him to touch at China, but in vain; for having accompliſhed what induced him to undertake his voyage, his thoughts were now ſolely bent on returning home.

The admiral therefore having procured what he wanted at Ternate, ſet ſail from thence, and five days after caſt anchor at a ſmall uninhabited iſland to the ſouthward of Celebes, where he ordered forges to be ſet up, to repair the iron-work of the ſhip, in which the ſmiths were obliged to make uſe of charcoal, as all their ſeacoal was now conſumed. This iſland was extremely woody, the trees were large and very lofty, ſtrait and without boughs except towards the top, where the leaves ſomewhat reſembled thoſe of the Engliſh broom. Here they obſerved in the night, great multitudes

of ſhining flies no bigger than the common fly in England, which ſkimming up and down in the air between the trees and buſhes, made them appear as if on fire: they alſo found bats as big as hens, and a ſort of cray-fiſh, which live upon land and are of ſo extraordinary a ſize, that one of them is ſufficient to ſatisfy the hunger of four perſons; theſe burrow in the ground like rabbits.

After ſtaying twenty-ſix days at this iſland, they weighed and again ſet ſail; but were ſoon entangled among ſeveral ſmall iſlands, and the wind ſuddenly ſhifting, they on the 9th of January 1579, ran upon a rock, on which they ſtuck faſt, from eight at night till four in the afternoon of the next day. In this diſtreſs they lightened the ſhip, by taking out three tons of clothes, eight pieces of ordnance and ſome proviſions, and ſoon after the wind chopping about happily diſengaged them.

Some time after, having ſeverely ſuffered by the winds and ſhoals, they fell in with the fertile iſlands of Baratene, where they found great plenty of proviſions of all ſorts, excellent ſpices, as nutmegs, long pepper and ginger, with lemons, oranges, cocoas, plaintains, cucumbers, and particularly a fruit of the ſize of a bayberry, which is hard but has a pleaſant taſte, and when boiled is ſoft and eaſy of digeſtion. This iſland alſo produces gold, ſilver, copper, and ſulphur. The natives are far from being diſagreeable, but their humanity and integrity render them moſt amiable. They are courteous to ſtrangers, and trade with an honeſty and punctuality that ought to put chriſtians to the bluſh. The men have only a covering for their heads, and a piece of linen round their waiſt; the women have a garment which reaches from the waiſt to the feet, and have eight or ten bracelets on their arms, made of braſs, horn, or bone, the leaſt of which weighed two ounces each.

Weighing anchor, they left Baratene, and ſailed for Java Major, where they were alſo honourably entertained. The iſland was governed by five kings, who preſerved a perfect good underſtanding between each other. Four of whom came at once on board, and the admiral had very often the company of two or three of them at a time.

The Javans, who are a ſtout and warlike people, go well armed with ſwords, targets, and daggers, which they temper very ſkilfully. They wear turbans on their heads, and a piece of ſilk from the waiſt downwards, which trails on the ground. Their behaviour, with reſpect to their women, is very different from that of the inhabitants of the Molucco iſlands, who will ſcarcely ſuffer them to be ſeen by a ſtranger, while theſe run ſo far into the other extreme, that they very civilly offer them as bedfellows. They are alſo extremely ſociable among themſelves, for in every village they have a public houſe where they meet and bring their ſhares of proviſions, and joining their ſtocks together, form one great feaſt, for keeping up good fellowſhip among the king's ſubjects. They have a peculiar way of boiling rice, which they put into an earthen pot of a conical figure, open at the greater end, and perforated all over, and this is fixed in a large earthen pot full of boiling water, and ſet over the fire, when the rice ſwelling and filling the holes of the pot, but a ſmall quantity of the water can enter, by which means the rice is brought to a very firm conſiſtence; of this they make ſeveral agreeable diſhes, by mixing it with ſugar, ſpices, butter, oil, or whatever elſe is moſt agreeable to their palate. The venereal diſeaſe at this time prevailed much among the inhabitants, but inſtead of ſalivation, they cured it by expoſing the body quite naked for ſome hours to the ſcorching heat of the ſun; by which means the noxious matter was diſcharged by natural perſpiration.

The admiral having cauſed the hull of the ſhip to be cleared from the barnacle ſhells ſhe had gathered in her long voyage, and her bottom new payed, weighed anchor on the 26th of March for the Cape of Good Hope, which he doubled on the 18th of June; when the few obſtructions he met with in this part of the voyage fully convinced him, that the Portugueze had groſly miſrepreſented the paſſage, and abuſed the world with falſe repreſentations of the horrors and dangers with which it is attended.

On the 22d of July, the admiral arrived at Sierra Leona, where he and the crew ſaw many elephants, and ſome trees, which hanging over the ſea were covered with oyſters, that lived and multiplied among them. With theſe, and the lemons, which were very plentiful, the crew after this long run, were much refreſhed.

After ſtaying two days, which they ſpent in wooding, watering, and taking in refreſhments, they weighed anchor, and on the 26th were off the Canaries, but being ſufficiently ſtocked with neceſſaries they continued their voyage to Plymouth, where they arrived on Monday the 26th of September 1580, and according to their own account Sunday the 25th, after having ſpent in encompaſſing the globe, two years, ten months and a few days.

No private ſubject was ever more applauded than admiral Drake for this voyage, which gave England the glory of having produced the firſt commander that ever ſailed round the world; a commander whoſe valour made the Engliſh feared, while his humanity ſhewed that they were worthy of being beloved.

THE

VOYAGE

OF

SCHOVTEN AND LE MAIRE,

ROUND THE WORLD.

Giving an account of the riſe and deſign of this voyage, and the particulars that took place after their ſailing from the Texel, until their return to Holland.

THE States General of the United Provinces having granted an excluſive charter to the Eaſt-India company, prohibiting all their other ſubjects from carrying on any trade to the eaſtward beyond the Cape of Good Hope, or to the weſtward through the ſtreights of Magellen, this prohibition gave great offence to many rich merchants who were deſirous of making diſcoveries at their own expence, and could not help thinking it a little unjuſt, that the government ſhould thus, againſt the laws of nature, bar thoſe paſſages which Providence had left free. Among the reſt was Mr. Le Maire, a rich merchant of Amſterdam, who earneſtly deſired to employ a part of that wealth he had acquired by trade, in obtaining fame as a diſcoverer. With this view he made application to Mr. William Corneliſon Schovten, of Horn, a perſon in eaſy circumſtances, who had been three times to the Eaſt-Indies, and aſked his opinion, whether it might not be poſſible to find another paſſage into the South Seas than by the ſtreights of Magellan,

and whether it was not likely that the countries to the ſouth of that paſſage might afford as rich commodities as either the Eaſt or Weſt-Indies. Mr. Schovten anſwered that there was great reaſon to believe that ſuch a paſſage might be diſcovered, and ſtill ſtronger reaſons to confirm what he conjectured as to the riches of the ſouthern countries.

After many converſations upon the ſame ſubject, they at laſt reſolved to attempt ſuch a diſcovery, from a perſuaſion that the States General could not intend by the above excluſive charter to preclude their ſubjects from diſcovering countries on the ſouth, by a new paſſage diſtinct from thoſe mentioned in the charter; and it was agreed that Le Maire and his friends ſhould advance one half towards the neceſſary expence of the voyage, and Schovten and his friends the other.

For this voyage ſuch preparations were made, that every thing was ready in the ſpace of two months, and the ſeamen entering into general articles to go wherever their maſters and ſupercargoes ſhould require; they, in conſideration of ſo unuſual a condition, were to receive extraordinary wages, and the eagerneſs of the ſailors to engage in it, gave them an opportunity of chuſing none but the moſt experienced mariners, on whoſe ſkill and fidelity they could depend.

Theſe extraordinary preparations, with the ſecrecy that was obſerved, cauſed a great noiſe not only at Amſterdam, but all over Holland, where people reaſoned on the intention of this voyage according to their ſeveral capacities, the common people giving them the name of the Gold-finders, while the merchants, with greater propriety, called all who contributed to it the South-Company.

Two ſhips were fitted out on this expedition, the largeſt of which was called the Unity; ſhe was 360 tons burden, carried 19 guns, with 12 ſwivels,

and 65 men. She had alſo on board a pinnace with ſails, another to row, a launch for landing of men, and a ſmall boat. William Corneliſon Schovten was maſter and pilot, and James Le Maire, the ſon of the gentleman who propoſed the expedition, was ſupercargo. The other was the Horn of only 110 tons burden, carrying eight guns, four ſwivels, and 22 men, commanded by John Corneliſon Schovten.

On the 4th of June, 1615, they ſailed out of the Texel, and on the 17th anchored in the Downs, took in freſh water at Dover, and hired an Engliſh gunner. They afterwards hired an Engliſh carpenter at Plymouth, and on the 28th ſailed from that port. On the 13th of July they ſteered between the iſland Teneriff and Grand Canaria, and on the 20th in the morning fell in with Cape Verd, where they took in freſh water. On the 21ſt of Auguſt, they ſaw the high land of Sierra Leona, and the iſlands of Madrabomba, which lie on its ſouth-point. They attempted to land by running to the point over the ſhallows of St. Ann, but finding that impracticable, ſteered to the above iſlands, which are three in number, very high, and lie in a row, half a league from Sierra Leona.

They anchored a league from one of theſe iſlands, which appeared to be full of bogs and marſhes, and one entire waſte, like a wilderneſs, ſcarce fit to entertain any inhabitants but wild beaſts, and indeed not ſeeming to have any other. Going on ſhore on the 23d, they found a river, the mouth of which was ſo ſtopped up with ſand and cliffs of rocks, that no ſhip could enter it; yet within the water was ſufficiently deep, and broad enough for ſhips to turn about. Here they ſaw monkeys, wild oxen, a ſort of birds that made a noiſe not unlike the barking of a dog, crocodiles and turtle, but met with no fruit except lemons.

On the 30th they arrived before a village that looks upon the road of Sierra Leona, where they anchored in eight fathoms of water. This village conſiſted of about eight or nine poor houſes covered with ſtraw, but the Moors who dwelt in them were unwilling to come on board, without having pledges left on ſhore to ſecure their ſafe return. However, Aris Olawſon, the ſupercargo of the Horn, landed, and ſtaid among them, purchaſing lemons and bananas with glaſs beads; and in the mean time, ſome of the natives came on board. The ſhips had here a good opportunity of taking in a ſufficent ſupply of freſh water, which pouring down in great quantities from a very high mountain, the ſailors had nothing to do but to place their barrels to receive it under the fall of the water. There were alſo vaſt woods of lemon trees, which made that fruit ſo cheap, that for a few beads and knives, they might have had ten thouſand. On the firſt of September, they anchored before a ſmall river, and landing got ſome lemons and palmettos, took an antelope in the woods, and had good ſucceſs in fiſhing. On the 3d, the maſter brought in a great ſhoal of fiſh ſhaped like a ſhoemaker's knife, and as many lemons as came to 150 for every man's ſhare.

Early on the 4th they ſailed from Sierra Leona, and the next day were extremely ſurprized with a violent ſtroke given the lower part of one of the ſhips, though there was no rock for them to run upon; but while they were amuſed with this phenomenon, the ſea about them began to change its colour, and looked as if ſome great fountain of blood had been opened into it. The cauſe of theſe events they were entirely ignorant of, till they came to Port Deſire, and ſet the ſhip upon the ſtrand to make her clean, when they found a large horn both in form and magnitude reſembling an elephant's tooth, ſticking faſt in the bottom of

the ſhip. It was a firm and ſolid body, without any cavity or ſpungy matter in the middle: it had pierced through three very ſtout planks of the ſhip, and raiſed one of her ribs, ſo that it ſtuck at leaſt half a foot deep in the planks, and about as much appeared without the hole, up to the place where it was broken off. And now the riddle was completely ſolved, this horn being the ſpoil of a fiſh that had thus rudely aſſaulted the ſhip with this piercing weapon; and after the firſt thruſt, not being able to draw it out again, had there broken it, which was attended with ſuch a plentiful effuſion of blood, that it had diſcoloured the ſea.

Having now ſailed ſo far that none on board, except the maſter, knew where they were, or whither they intended, they, upon the 25th, made known their deſign, of diſcovering a new ſouthern paſſage into the great Pacific Ocean; upon which all the ſailors ſeemed highly pleaſed, hoping to find ſome golden country, to make them amends for all their trouble and danger.

On the 7th of November keeping a ſouth courſe, they came before the haven of Port Deſire, but ſailing too far to the ſouthward, miſſed the right channel, and entered a crooked bay, where at high tide they had but four fathoms and a half water; by which means the Unity lay with her ſtern faſt a-ground, and if a briſk gale had not blown from the north-eaſt, ſhe would have been infallibly loſt. Here they found plenty of eggs among the cliffs, and the bay afforded them muſcles and ſmelts of ſixteen inches in length, whence they gave it the name of Smelt Bay; and the ſhallop being ſent to the Penguin Iſlands, returned with 150 penguins, and two ſea lions.

On the 8th they ſailed out of Smelt Bay, and entered Port Deſire, which lies in 47°. 40. ſouth latitude; but after a little more than a league's ſailing in this bay, the wind beginning to veer about,

they anchored in twenty fathoms water; but the bottom being only ſlippery ſtones, and the wind blowing hard at north-weſt, their anchors could not preſerve them from driving upon the ſouthern ſhore; ſo that both the ſhips were in danger of being wrecked. The Unity lay with her ſides upon the cliffs, but the Horn ſtuck ſo that her keel was above a fathom out of the water. For ſome time the north-weſt wind by blowing hard upon her ſide, kept her from falling over, but that ſupport being gone, ſhe ſunk down upon that ſide at leaſt three feet lower than her keel, and yet to the ſurprize of every one, the ſucceeding flood which came on with ſtill weather, ſet her upright again, and both ſhe and her companion got clear of the danger.

On the 9th, they went farther into the river, and came to King's Iſland, which they found full of black ſea mews, and almoſt covered with their eggs; a man without ſtraining to reach might have taken between fifty and ſixty neſts with his hand, in each of which were three or four eggs; ſo that they were ſoon furniſhed with ſome thouſands of them. Two days after the boat went in ſearch of good water to the ſouth ſide of the river, but all they found was of a brackiſh diſagreeable taſte. They here ſaw oſtriches, and beaſts reſembling harts that were extremely wild, and had remarkable long necks, and upon the hills they found great heaps of ſtones, under which ſome bodies of a monſtrous ſize had been interred, as they judged from the length of the bones they found.

Some days after, they careened the Unity upon King's Iſland, which being performed very ſucceſsfully, they hauled the Horn on ſhore, for the ſame purpoſe, placing her about 200 yards from the other ſhip; but while they were buſy in cleaning both ſhips, a fire of dry reeds being placed under the Horn, the flame got into that veſſel, and

ſet her on fire, and ſhe being fifty feet from the water ſide, the men were unable to do any thing towards extinguiſhing it, by which means ſhe was conſumed. However on the 20th, at high water they launched the Unity, and the next day carried on board her every thing they had been able to ſave out of the Horn.

On the 13th of January, they ſet ſail from Port Deſire, and on the 24th ſaw land, ſtretching from the eaſt to the ſouth, with very high hills covered with ice, and ſoon after other land, bearing caſt from it, as high and rugged as the former. Theſe lands they imagined lay near eight leagues aſunder, and from there being a briſk current, that ran by them to the ſouthward, imagined there might be a good paſſage between them, they therefore made up to this opening, when they ſaw an incredible number of penguins, and ſuch ſhoals of whales, that they were forced to proceed with great caution for fear of running the ſhip upon them.

The next day they got up cloſe by the eaſt land, which upon the north ſide extends eaſt ſouth-eaſt as far as the eye can follow it. This they called Staten Land or States Land, and to that which lay to the weſt, they gave the name of Maurice Land. They obſerved that there were good roads, and ſandy bays, plenty of fiſh, porpoiſes, penguins, and ſome ſorts of fowl, but the adjacent land ſeemed quite bare of trees and woods. At their entrance into this paſſage, having a north wind, they briſkly ſailed to the ſouthward, and afterwards to the ſouth-weſt, meeting with prodigious waves, that came rolling along before the wind. This, with the depth of the water, gave them full aſſurance that the great South Sea, was now before them, into which they had almoſt made their way by a paſſage of their own diſcovery. The ſea mews were here larger than ſwans, and their

wings when extended to their full length, ſpread about the compaſs of a fathom. They would come and tamely ſit down upon the ſhip and ſuffer themſelves to be taken with the hand, without any endeavours to fly away.

On the 29th, they had the proſpect of two iſlands ſet round with cliffs lying to the weſt-ward, to which they gave the name of Barnevelt's Iſland, and taking a north-weſt courſe from thence, ſaw land again, which was high, and covered with ſnow, and ended in a ſharp point, which they called Cape Horn. They now held their courſe to the weſtward, with a ſtrong current, yet great billows rolled upon them from the weſt. On the 31ſt, they paſſed Cape Horn, and on the 12th of February, plainly diſcovered the ſtreights of Magellan, lying to the eaſt-ward, and being now certain of their having made a new and happy diſcovery, their general joy was expreſſed by every perſon on board having a cup of wine, which went three times round the company; and at the ſame time they gave to the new found paſſage the name of Streights le Maire. It is obſervable that all the time of their ſailing through theſe ſtreights, and about the ſouthern land now firſt diſcovered, they had a ſettled courſe of bad weather, a thick and foggy air and ſtrong currents. All which added together, made their ſailing in theſe ſtreights very tedious. But the joy of this diſcovery, the hopes of farther improvements, with the comforts of the bottle, helped to remove the ſenſe of that tedious run, and the dangers they had entertained.

On the 28th, they reſolved to ſail for the iſlands of Juan Fernandes, in order to give thoſe who were ſick and weary proper refreſhments; they ſaw theſe iſlands on the firſt of March. The road of the larger lies on the eaſt point, and they ſhaped their courſe to the weſtern ſide of it, by which means they were reduced to the inconvenience of

not being able to get near enough the land to anchor. This made them diſpatch their boat to ſound the depth, which returned with an account of there being good anchoring, and of their having ſeen a very lovely valley full of trees and thickets, refreſhed with ſtreams of water running down from the hills, and variety of animals grazing. They brought great plenty of fiſh along with them, the greateſt number of which were lobſters and crabs, and obſerved that they had ſeen a great many ſeals. The two following days, they repeated their attempt to anchor cloſe by the land; but all their endeavours were ineffectual. The men however ſtill continued fiſhing, in which they had ſuch ſucceſs that they took almoſt two tons of fiſh with only hooks, in the ſmall time in which ſome of the company went to fetch water. At laſt finding the iſland thus inacceſſible, they reſolved to purſue their voyage.

On the 3d of April, when they got into 15°. 12. the men from having a good ſtate of health were ſeized with the flux, but at the ſame time they ſaw a little low iſland at three leagues diſtance, which they got up to about noon, but could find no bottom, and therefore ſent out the ſhallop. The men who went on ſhore found no other refreſhment but ſome herbs that taſted like ſcurvy graſs; they obſerved a very ſilent ſort of dogs on the iſland, that could neither bark, ſnarl, or make any other noiſe, for which reaſon they called it Dog Iſland. It lies in 15° 12. and they judged it to be 925 leagues diſtant from the coaſt of Peru.

On the 14th, ſailing to the weſtward they ſaw a large low iſland, and at ſun-ſet being about a league from it, an Indian canoe advanced to meet them. The men who were naked, had long black hair, and their bodies were of a reddiſh colour. They made ſigns to the Dutch to come on ſhore, and

called to them in their language, and though the Dutch anſwered them in their own, the Spaniſh, Moluccan, and Javan tongues, yet the Indians could not underſtand them. When they got up to the iſland, they ſtill found no bottom, and no change of water, though they were within a muſket ſhot of the ſhore. Here the Indians and they had another unintelligible conference; but not all the ſigns made by the Dutch could prevail on them to come on board, nor would the Dutch go on ſhore to them, though they ſtill kept talking and pointing to one another. Therefore leaving theſe people they ſteered to the ſouthward, and having made ten leagues that night, ſailed in the morning cloſe along by the ſhore, on which many of theſe naked people were ſtanding, and ſeemed calling to them to land. Soon after, one of the canoes put off towards the ſhip, but though the men would not come near it, they ventured up to the ſhallop, when the Dutch gave them beads and knives, and ſeveral other things, with which they were highly pleaſed; and this at laſt emboldened them to come a little nearer the ſhip, though they would not go on board, but got back into the ſhallop. Indeed they did not ſeem to have any great reaſon for deſiring their company, for they appeared to be entirely void of honeſty, and were ſo fond of iron, that they ſtole ſome nails that lay in the cabbin window. When the Dutch gave them wine, they drank the liquor and kept the cup, and when they threw a rope to bring them to the ſhip, they would neither uſe the rope nor return it. In ſhort, whatever they laid their hands on they conſidered as their own, nor was there any way of recovering it, without making uſe of force. Theſe people were entirely naked, except wearing a ſmall mat round the waiſt; and what ſeemed very ſingular, and gave them a very odd appearance, their ſkins were

all over painted with the repreſentation of ſnakes, dragons, and the like reptiles.

The Dutch being diſpoſed to try if any thing was to be got on the iſland, ſent the ſhallop with eight muſketeers, and others of the ſhip's company on ſhore, but they were no ſooner landed, than 30 of the natives ruſhed out of a wood, armed with great clubs, long ſtaves, and ſlings, and attempted to ſeize the ſhallop, but the muſketeers firing among them they fled. This iſland they called The iſland without Ground, from their not being able to anchor near it. It is not broad, but ſomething long and full of trees, which they ſuppoſed to be cocoas and palmettos. It lies in 15°. ſouth latitude, and about 100 leagues from Dog iſland.

Finding that nothing was to be done here, they ſteered to the weſtward, and on the 16th came to another iſland at 15°. diſtance. It was very low land, with many trees growing on its ſides, but they here found no food except a few herbs like thoſe in Dog Iſland, with ſome crabs and other ſhell fiſh. It however afforded them good freſh water, which they found in a pit near the ſhore, and the pottage they made of the herbs gathered there, was of great ſervice to thoſe who were troubled with the flux. This they called Water Iſland, from its furniſhing them with a ſupply of water.

On the 18th, they reached another iſland ſituated to the ſouth weſt, at above 20 leagues diſtance from Water Iſland, and the boat being ſent to ſound the depth, found a bottom by a point of land, near which was a gentle ſtream of water. Upon this the empty caſks were ſent in the boat, but after the men had taken great pains in landing, they were frightened away at the ſight of one of the natives; when getting into their boat there appeared five or ſix more of the Indians upon the ſhore, who finding they were gone off, ſoon returned into the woods. But though they eſcaped

from the natives, of whom they were under great apprehenſions, they had other very troubleſome enemies, that ſtuck very cloſe to them, of which they brought many millions along with them out of the woods: Theſe were a ſort of black flies, of which there were ſuch prodigious ſwarms, that the men returned covered with them from head to foot. Their hands and feet were ſo beſet with them, that it was impoſſible to form a judgment of their complexion, and their clothes were ſo entirely hidden by the multitudes of theſe inſects, that they compoſed a kind of living apparel. Beſides, their very boat and oars were all over in the ſame dreſs as themſelves; ſo that when they came back, the plague of flies began to rage in the ſhip, and every man was employed in defending his face and eyes as well as he could; for it was difficult for any of them to open their mouths either to ſpeak or eat, without taking in a mouthful of them. This dreadful perſecution laſted about three or four days, during which the men were employed in killing them with fly-flaps, which did ſuch execution, that within this time their ſufferings were at an end, and few of the flies left to torment them. To this place they gave the name of Fly Iſland, and by the help of a good gale left it as faſt as they could.

On the 9th of May, they were in 15°. 20. ſouth latitude, and gueſſed they were 1510 leagues from the coaſt of Peru, when they perceived a bark ſailing towards them, which they went to meet, and gave her a gun or two to make her ſtrike; but thoſe in the bark not underſtanding the language of the guns, the Dutch ſent their ſhallop with ten muſqueteers, to take her; upon which ſhe endeavoured to make her eſcape, but the ſhallop intercepting her, ſome of her men threw themſelves and their goods overboard; but when the ſhallop boarded her, thoſe who were left made not the leaſt reſiſtance, but quietly ſurrendered to the con-

querors, who uſed them very kindly, dreſſed their wounds, ſaved the lives of ſome who had leaped into the ſea, and entertained all of them in the ſhip. There were about twenty-three of theſe people, among whom were eight women and ſeveral children. They were of a reddiſh complexion, and had no other covering except round the waiſt. The men had long curled black hair, while that of the women was ſhort, and they all appeared remarkable for their neatneſs and cleanlineſs. Their bark was of a peculiar figure and ſtructure, it conſiſting only of two canoes faſtened together, with ſeveral planks laid acroſs from one canoe to the other, hanging over a good way on both ſides, and being made very faſt and cloſe above. At the end of one of the canoes was a maſt, with a ſail made of mats. They had no compaſs nor charts, nor any other furniture for the ſea, but a few fiſhing hooks, the upper part of which was ſtone, and the other black bone, tortoiſeſhell, or mother of pearl. They had no occaſion for a lading of freſh water, for they quenched their thirſt with the liquor of a few cocoa nuts. The Dutch ſent them all back to their veſſel, where the women expreſſed their joy by embracing their huſbands, and then they ſailed away to the ſouth eaſt.

On the 11th, they came up with a very high iſland, and about two leagues farther to the ſouthward, found another which was much lower. About this time another of the ſame kind of barks came up to them, which had a looſe canoe on board to put out upon occaſion, and this veſſel ſailed ſo faſt, that few Dutch ſhips could outſtrip her. Sending their ſhallop to ſound by one of the iſlands, they caſt anchor at about a cannon ſhot from the ſhore, though the natives by their ſigns directed them to go to the other iſland, and ſailed thither before them.

The firſt of theſe iſlands, which is ſituated in 16°. 10. is one entire mountain; it reſembles the Moluccas, and being covered with cocoa trees, they gave it the name of Cocoa Iſland. The other is much lower, but of greater length. While they were at anchor, there came three large veſſels, and nine or ten canoes with three or four men in each, ſome of them hanging out white flags; in which they were imitated by the Dutch. Theſe canoes were flat at one end and ſharp at the other. They were each of them hewn out of a ſolid piece of red wood, and were remarkable for the ſwiftneſs with which they ſailed. Many of the natives on their approaching the Dutch ſhip, leaped into the water with their hands full of cocoas, and ubes roots, which they bartered for nails and beads, giving four or five cocoas for a nail, or a ſmall ſtring of beads. But this trade inducing ſo many of the natives to come on board that the Dutch ſcarcely knew how to ſtir in the ſhip, they ſent the ſhallop to the other iſland in ſearch of a more convenient ſtation. But the ſhallop was ſcarcely out when ſhe was ſurrounded by a vaſt number of canoes, filled with a mad ſort of people armed with great clubs, who immediately boarded her and attacked the men, when firing upon theſe ſavages, they laughed without ſhewing the leaſt apprehenſion; but one of them being ſhot through the breaſt at the next diſcharge, they took care for the future to keep at a greater diſtance. Theſe men were luſty and well proportioned. They were excellent ſwimmers, yet were not only thieviſh, but appeared very fantaſtical in dreſſing their hair, which ſome wore ſhort, and others long; ſome had it curled, and others platted and folded up in ſeveral faſhions.

The next day they came again with their canoes laden with cocoas, bananas, ubes roots, hogs and freſh water, when there was a great contention among them who ſhould get firſt to the ſhip, and

thoſe who were behind being ſhut out by thoſe who got before them, jumped into the water with bunches of cocoas in their mouths, and diving under their canoes, climbed up the ſides of the ſhip like ſo many rats, in ſuch ſwarms, that they were forced to keep them off with ſtaves; however, the Dutch bartered with them that day for 1200 cocoas. The natives were much ſurpriſed at the ſtrength of the ſhip, and to try it ſome of them crept under it, and beat upon its bottom with ſtones.

Mean while the king ſent the commander a preſent of a black hog, charging the meſſenger to take no reward, and ſoon after came himſelf in a large veſſel, attended with 35 canoes: being come near the Dutch ſhip, he began to call aloud, and his example was followed by all who accompanied him, this being their manner of bidding ſtrangers welcome. The Dutch received them with trumpets and drums, with which they were both pleaſed and ſurpriſed, when to ſhew their ſenſe of the honour done them, they bowed and clapped their hands over their heads. The king then ſent the Dutch a preſent, which they returned with a gift of an old hatchet, ſome ruſty nails, glaſs beads, and a piece of linen cloth, which his majeſty received with a low bow, and ſeemed much pleaſed with them. He was only to be diſtinguiſhed from his ſubjects, by the reverence they ſhewed him, for both he and they being entirely naked, he had no enſign of dignity. He however would not be perſuaded to go on board, though his ſon did, and was well entertained.

On the 13th at noon, the Dutch veſſel was ſurrounded with a fleet of 23 ſhips and 45 canoes, in which were no leſs than ſeven or 800 men. The king himſelf commanded the fleet. But though they at firſt pretended to come only with a view of trade, and attempted by their ſigns to make them ſail to the other iſland, where they would find

much better accommodations, yet the Dutch ſuſpecting ſome miſchief, put themſelves on their guard, and indeed not without juſt cauſe, for the Indians ſurrounding the ſhip on all ſides, gave a great cry, and began the attack. The king's ſhip was the foremoſt in the action, and ruſhed with ſuch force at the Dutch ſhip, that the heads of two canoes, which lay before it were daſhed to pieces with the violence of the ſhock, while the reſt came on as well as they could, throwing a ſhower of ſtones; but the Dutch diſcharging their muſkets, and three great guns loaded with muſket ſhot and nails, all in the canoes, who lay within reach of the guns, were glad to ſeek for ſafety, by leaping into the water, and the reſt endeavoured to eſcape as well as they could. From this inſtance of treachery, committed by the inhabitants of the lower of the two iſlands, they gave it the name of Traitors Iſland.

They ſet ſail the ſame day, and continuing their courſe to the weſtward, came on the 14th to another iſland, thirty leagues diſtance from the former. This they called Hope Iſland, from the hopes they entertained of its furniſhing them with ſome refreſhment; but finding no ground, they ſent their ſhallop to ſound along the ſhore, which returned with the news of their being a ſtony bottom at forty fathoms water, about a muſket ſhot from the ſhore. Hither the Indians came in ten or twelve canoes, with a ſmall number of flying fiſh, for which they had beads in exchange, and whatever the one gave or the other received, was conveyed by a rope let down by the ſtern of the ſhip. Mean while the ſhallop being employed in ſounding at ſome diſtance, others of the natives offered to board her, and carry her off; but the ſailors gave them ſo warm a reception, with their guns, pikes, and cutlaſſes, that having ſeen two of their companions killed, they were glad to hurry away

as faſt as they could. This iſland was full of black cliffs, whoſe tops were covered with vegetables, and was well ſtocked with cocoa trees. There were ſeveral houſes along the ſea ſide, and a great village cloſe by the ſtrand; but finding no convenient anchoring, Mr. Schovten left it, and ſailed to the ſouth-weſt.

Two days after their leaving Hope Iſland, Mr. Schovten obſerved to the officers, that they were now at leaſt 1600 leagues to the weſtward of the coaſt of Peru, and as they had not yet diſcovered any part of the ſouth land they had expected, there was no probability of their now doing it. That they had ſailed much farther to the weſtward than was firſt intended, and if they proceeded in the courſe they had hitherto purſued, they ſhould certainly fall to the ſouthward of New Guinea, where if they found no paſſage they muſt inevitably be loſt, ſince it would be impoſſible to ſail back to the eaſtward, on account of the eaſterly winds that blew continually, whence he propoſed that they ſhould ſail northward, ſo as to reach the north of New Guinea. This propoſal was immediately embraced, and it was determined to hold a north-weſt courſe.

On the 19th, they obſerved two iſlands at about eight leagues diſtance, which ſeemed to be a cannon ſhot from each other. On the 21ſt, being about a league from the land, they were viſited by two canoes, and though they gave them no manner of provocation, were rudely inſulted by ſome of the people, who began to ſhout, and threatened to dart their wooden aſſagayas at them, upon which the Dutch diſcharged two of their guns, and killing two of theſe Indians, the reſt fled with the utmoſt haſte and confuſion.

On the 22d, more of the Indians came to the ſhip, but behaved in a very friendly and peaceable manner, bringing cocoas, ubes roots, and roaſted

hogs, which they exchanged for knives, beads, and nails. Theſe people were as expert in ſwimming and diving as thoſe of Traitors Iſland, and as well verſed in ſtealing, which they always practiſed whenever they had an opportunity. Their houſes, which ſtood along the ſtrand, were covered on the top with leaves, and had a kind of penthouſe of the ſame materials, to carry off the water. Theſe edifices, which were ten or twelve feet high, and twenty-five in compaſs, were furniſhed with nothing but a bed of dry herbs, an angling rod or two, and a great club; and the houſe where the king himſelf reſided, had no other furniture.

On the 24th, Mr. Schouten ſent three of his principal officers to eſtabliſh a friendſhip with the Indians, and to ſtay on ſhore as hoſtages in the room of ſix Indians of diſtinction, who went on board, and were made very welcome; while the Dutch on ſhore were treated by the king with very great reſpect. He made them a preſent of four hogs, and if any of his people came near the Dutch boat to diſturb them, while they were taking in water, he would drive them away himſelf, or order ſome of his men to do it. For his ſubjects ſtood in very great awe of him, and were afraid of his being acquainted with any of their crimes: for one of them having ſtole a cutlaſs, and complaint being made to one of the king's officers, the thief was purſued and ſeverely drubbed, beſides being forced to make reſtitution. The officer ſignified that he came off very well too; for if the king had known it, he would certainly have loſt his head.

Theſe people were extremely frightened at the noiſe of the guns, and whenever they were diſcharged would fly with the utmoſt precipitation. The king however had a deſire to hear one of the great guns, and for that purpoſe was ſeated under a canopy, with ſome of his favourites about

him in great order; but upon the diſcharge of the gun, he leaped from his ſeat, and began running into the woods, with all his courtiers after him, while the Dutch were unable to ſtop them, by all the friendly ſigns they could make.

On the 25th and 26th, they again went on ſhore to barter for hogs, but could obtain none, for the Indians had only a few of them left. The king however continued to treat them with the ſame kindneſs and reſpect as before, and both he and his principal attendant pulled off their caps of feathers, and placed them upon the heads of two of the company. Theſe caps were made of white, red, and green feathers, furniſhed them by their parrots and doves, which laſt are white upon the back, and black every where elſe except upon the breaſt. Every one of the king's council had one of theſe doves ſitting by them upon a ſtick.

On the 28th, they had got all their water on board, when Mr. Schovten and ſome of the officers went on ſhore with the trumpets, the muſic of which afforded the king great delight. Though this prince treated them with great reſpect, he ſeemed afraid of their having entertained a deſign of ſtaying in his country, and let them know, that if they would go in two days time, he would give them ten hogs, and a conſiderable number of cocoas, yet notwithſtanding his ſuſpicions, he paid them a viſit on board. His men behaved with the utmoſt ſubmiſſion to the Dutch, and with all the tokens of awe and fear, frequently kiſſed their feet and placed them upon their necks.

On the 30th, the king had a viſit from the ſovereign of the other iſland, who came with a train of 300 naked Indians, who had bunches of green herbs ſtuck round their waiſts, and brought, to inſure his welcome, ſixteen hogs. When theſe two princes came in ſight of each other, they bowed, and muttered ſomething to themſelves;

and on their meeting, both fell with their faces flat upon the ground, and after uſing ſeveral ſtrange geſtures, walked to the ſeats prepared for them, where again muttering to themſelves, they bowed to each other, and then ſat down under a canopy. The prince of the iſland, in order to welcome the ſtranger, ſent a meſſenger to acquaint the Dutch that he wanted their muſic, which they underſtanding, came on ſhore with their drums and trumpets, with which the two kings were highly delighted. After this, preparations were made for a banquet, when a company of men came in with a good quantity of cana, an herb of which they make their drink, and each of them having taken a mouthful, they for ſome time chewed it together, and then put it into a wooden trough, poured water upon it, and having ſtirred and ſtrained it, preſented this ſtrange kind of liquor in cups to their two kings, and very civilly offered ſome of it to the Dutch, who declined taſting of it. The other part of the entertainment conſiſted of ubes roots roaſted, and hogs dreſſed after the following ſtrange manner: They had ripped up the bellies and taken out the entrails, and then putting in hot ſtones, and ſingeing off the outſide hair, they were without any further preparations fit for the king's table. Two of theſe hogs were alſo preſented to the Dutch with all the form and ceremony which they uſed to their kings, putting them firſt upon their heads, and then kneeling with much humility, they left them at their feet. They alſo gave them eleven more that were alive, for which they received a preſent of knives, old nails and beads.

Theſe people were of a dark yellow complexion, had ſtrong and well proportioned bodies, and were ſo tall that the largeſt among the Dutch was equal in ſtature only to the leaſt of them. Some of them wore their hair curled, others had it tied up in

knots, and others again had it ſtanding upright like briſtles. That of the king and ſome of his courtiers was very long, hanging down below their hips, but the women were cropped cloſe, and were very diſagreeable figures; they were ſhort and ill-ſhaped, with long hanging breaſts, and both ſexes were naked from the waiſt upwards. Theſe people live upon what the earth ſpontaneouſly produces, without the labour of agriculture, or the care of attending cattle. To this place the Dutch gave the name of Horn Iſland, and to the harbour where they anchored, they gave that of Unity Bay.

On the 1ſt of June they ſet ſail, but made no land until the 21ſt, when they came up to a very low iſland, in 4°. 47. ſouth latitude, near which were ſeveral ſand banks, and three or four ſmaller iſlands very full of trees. Here they were viſited by a canoe, the people in which were blacker than thoſe they had ſeen before, and armed with bows and arrows, which were the firſt they had obſerved among the Indians of the South Seas. Theſe people told them by ſigns, that there was more land and good conveniences for ſhipping to the weſtward, where their king dwelt; upon which they again held a weſterly courſe, and the next day ſaw twelve or thirteen iſlands cloſe to each other. On the 24th they ſaw three low iſlands, lying to the ſouth-weſt, one of which was very ſmall, and the others only two miles long. Theſe they called the Green Iſlands. They were ſurrounded with cliffs, and had no convenience for anchoring.

The next day they obſerved another iſland, upon which they ſaw ſeven or eight huts, and that being St. John the Baptiſt's day, they called it St. John's Iſland. At this time they obſerved a very high land to the ſouth-weſt, which they imagined was the point of New Guinea, this they reached by noon, and finding no anchoring ſent the ſhallop to ſound, but no bottom could be diſcovered. Here

two or three canoes filled with a barbarous ſort of people, aſſaulted the ſhallop with ſlings, but the Dutch firing upon them, they appeared greatly terrified and ſoon diſperſed. They were of a very dark complexion, entirely naked, and ſpoke a language quite different from the other. They kept fires upon the coaſt all that night, and ſome of them in their canoes came lurking about the ſhip, which the Dutch no ſooner diſcovered than they ſtrove to oblige them; yet they would underſtand none of the ſigns by which they endeavoured to let them know that they were in want of proviſions, but all the anſwer they made, conſiſted in horrible noiſes and outcries.

The Unity came to an anchor that night, in a bay which had 45 fathoms water, where the country was high and green, and afforded a pleaſant proſpect. This bay they ſuppoſed to be 1840 leagues diſtant from Peru

On the 26th in the morning, three canoes came up to the ſhip filled with theſe ſavages, who were all armed with clubs, wooden ſwords and ſlings; but though the Dutch ſtill treated them kindly, and gave them ſeveral toys to procure their favour, or at leaſt peace and freedom from any diſturbance, they ſoon found that they were not to be conquered by kindneſs, nor taught good manners by any thing but the great guns; for they aſſaulted the ſhip with all their force, and continued the attack until 10 or 12 of them were killed by the cannon ſhot, when they leaped into the water, and began to ſwim for their lives; but the Dutch purſuing them in the ſhallop, knocked ſome on the head, took three priſoners, and four canoes, which they broke in pieces, and uſed in the ſhip for fire wood. The ſeverity of this treatment made the natives of the iſland more attentive to the ſigns made by the Dutch, who therefore brought hogs and bananas to ranſom the priſoners, giving ten hogs for one

perſon. In this iſland were birds that were entirely red.

On the 28th in the evening, they again ſet ſail, and the next day ſaw three high iſlands to the north of the former. On the 30th in the morning, ſeveral canoes of very ſwarthy Indians, came up to the ſhip, and being allowed to go on board, broke ſtaves over the heads of the Dutch, as a ſign of peace. Their canoes were neater than the others, and the people appeared more civil and modeſt, wearing a covering about the waiſt, which the others did not. They alſo rubbed their black hair with chalk, which made it appear as if powdered. They pretended to be ſo poor that inſtead of bringing any thing to the ſhip, they came to beg, and yet the three iſlands from whence they came afforded great plenty of cocoas.

On the 1ſt of July, in the morning, the Unity caſt anchor between an iſland two miles long, and the main land of New Guinea, and was ſoon ſurrounded with 25 armed canoes, ſuppoſed to be filled with people of the ſame iſlands as thoſe, who the day before had, in token of peace, broken their ſtaves over their heads. Two of theſe fixing themſelves upon two anchors faſtened their girdles to them, and began to tug the ſhip, thinking to draw her on ſhore, while the reſt attacked her ſides with their ſlings and other weapons; but the Dutch firing upon them with their great guns, forced them to retire with the loſs of twelve or thirteen killed, and a much greater number wounded.

After this engagement, the Dutch again ſet ſail, and on the 4th paſſed by 23 other iſlands, ſome of them a league, and others not more than a cannon ſhot diſtant from each other. On the 6th they obſerved a very high mountain to the ſouth-weſt, which they ſuppoſed to be Greemenaſſi in Banda; but on a nearer approach diſcovered three more

lying to the north, at about ſix or ſeven leagues diſtance. The next day they found ſome of theſe mountains to be volcanoes, for which reaſon they named the iſland Vulcan's Iſle. It was well inhabited, and full of cocoas; but they had no conveniency for anchoring: the people were naked and extremely fearful of the Dutch, and their language ſo very different from that of the other of the neighbouring iſlands, that none of the Indians the Dutch had taken on board, could underſtand them. There ſoon after appeared more iſlands to the north and north-weſt, but they ſteered to a very low one to the weſtward, which they reached that evening. They here obſerved the water to be of ſeveral colours, as green, white, and yellow, which was probably occaſioned by the mixture of ſome rivers, for it was much ſweeter than the ſea-water, and full of leaves and boughs of trees, ſome of which had birds and crabs upon them.

On the 8th of July, they caſt anchor before an iſland in 3°. 40. ſouth lat. which ſeemed to be an unhealthy place, and yielded nothing of any value except a little ginger. It was inhabited by Papoos, a people whoſe ridiculous dreſs added to their natural deformity, made them appear little ſhort of monſters in human nature. There were ſcarcely any of them that had not ſomething odd and ſtrange either in the bigneſs or poſition of their limbs, which added to ſtrings of hog's teeth hung about their necks, and rings faſtened in their noſes, with their ſhort frizzled hair, and very bad faces, rendered them perfectly diſagreeable. Their houſes were entirely void of ornament, and fixed upon ſtakes eight or nine feet from the ground.

The next day they anchored in a more convenient bay, near two villages belonging to theſe Indians, when ſome of their canoes brought hogs

and cocoas, but held up both at ſo dear a rate that there was no bartering with them.

Though the Dutch had ſailed ſo long by an extenſive tract of land, they were unable to determine whether it was New Guinea, or not, their charts neither agreeing one with another, nor with the land they had in proſpect. On the 13th and 14th they kept ſailing by the coaſt, and on the 14th, purſuing the ſame courſe, reached two low iſlands, about half a league from the main land, and in about 2°. 54. ſouth latitude; when ſeeing the country well ſtored with cocoas, they diſpatched the boat and ſhallop, which were well provided for an attack, with orders to land and get ſome, but the Indians having obſerved them, prepared to receive them at their landing, and gave them the warmeſt reception with their bows and ſlings, they had ever met with, wounding at leaſt 16 of them, and forcing them to retire, notwithſtanding their being armed with muſkets. However the next morning they ſailed in between the two iſlands, and having caſt anchor, landed upon the leſſer iſland, burnt ſome of the Indian houſes, and brought off as many cocoas as amounted to three to every man's ſhare, when the natives finding how little able they were to defend themſelves againſt theſe ſtrangers, came to make their peace, by bringing cocoas, bananas, and ginger, and going on board the ſhip, the quarrel was perfectly made up, and the hearts of the Indians won, by the Dutch giving them a few beads and nails. The next day they continued bartering for cocoas, bananas, caſſave, and papade, and obtained ſuch a number of the former as amounted to 50 nuts and two bunches of bananas a man.

This iſland, which is the moſt eaſterly, the natives called Moſa, the other over againſt it Juſan, and another which was a very high one and about five or ſix leagues from New Guinea, they called

Arimea. Theſe people had probably been viſited by ſome Europeans before, for they had Spaniſh jars and pots among them, were not ſurpriſed like others at the firing of the great guns, nor ſo curious in examining the ſhip as thoſe who had never ſeen one might be ſuppoſed to be.

On the 21ſt, they ſailed to the north-weſt along the main land, and anchored among a cluſter of iſlands, which they left on the 23d in the morning; ſoon after which they were overtaken by ſix great canoes bringing dried fiſh, cocoas, bananas, a ſmall ſort of fruit like prunes, and tobacco. From another iſland ſome Indians brought them proviſions and china porcelain: theſe people, like moſt of the others, were extremely fond of beads and iron-work, and were remarkably diſtinguiſhed from thoſe in the laſt iſland, by the largeneſs of their ſize, and their having more of an orange-coloured complexion. Their arms were bows and arrows, and their principal ornaments were glaſs ear-rings of ſeveral colours, by which it appeared, that theſe Dutchmen were not the firſt Europeans they had ſeen.

On the 24th they ſteered along by a very pleaſant iſland, to which they gave the name of Schovten, though it is diſtinguiſhed in the maps by the name of Horn Iſland, and the weſt point of it they called the Cape of Good Hope. On the 26th they perceived three iſlands more, and on the 29th at night felt ſo violent a ſhock of an earthquake, that the men ran frightened out of their cabbins, imagining that the ſhip had run a-ground or bulged againſt a rock; but upon trial they found that the depth of water was unfathomable, and plainly ſaw that they were clear of all danger of rocks and ſhelves. On the 30th, they put into a great bay, out of which finding no opening, they returned to a northern courſe again. Here the ſhip trembled, and they had loud and horrible claps of thunder,

while the ſhip would have been in danger of taking fire by the lightening, had it not been for prodigious ſhowers of rain.

On the 31ſt in the evening, they paſſed the Equator a ſecond time, and in the three following days came in ſight of ſeveral iſlands, and ſuppoſed that they reached the end of the continent of New Guinea, having ſailed 280 leagues along the coaſt.

On the 6th of Auguſt in the morning, ſeveral canoes came up to the ſhip, bringing Indian beans, rice, tobacco, and two birds of Paradiſe; when the Dutch purchaſed one of thoſe fine birds, which was white and yellow. Theſe Indians ſpoke the Ternate language, and ſome of them the Malayan and Spaniſh. They were all finely clothed about their waiſts, ſome with looſe ſilks, and others with breeches. Some of the company were Mahometans, and had ſilk turbans on their heads. They had all in general coal black hair, and many gold and ſilver rings upon their fingers. But though they bartered with the Dutch for beads and other toys, they had a much greater mind for linen cloth. Theſe people were ſo fearful and ſuſpicious, that they would not tell the Dutch the name of the country, though they imagined they were at one of the three eaſterly points of Gilolo, and that theſe were natives of Tydore, which they afterwards found to be true.

On the 6th in the morning, they weighed and ſtood to the northward, and on the 18th were ſaluted by two canoes of Ternateens, who ſhewed their peaceable diſpoſition by hanging out a white flag, and informed them that they came from the village of Soppy, where they had lately ſeen an Engliſh ſhip, and a pinnace from Amſterdam, which laid there three months for a lading of rice, and ſome of them offered to conduct them the next day into the road of Soppy, which they accordingly entered on the 19th, and bartered there for

poultry, ſagoe, rice, and turtle, when ſeveral of the natives coming on board, told them that an Engliſh and Dutch ſhip had been lately in thoſe parts, and had procured a ſufficient ſupply of proviſions for their voyage home. This news was extremely agreeable to theſe people, who had ſpent almoſt their whole ſtore, and there was a kind of public rejoicing among the whole crew, which now conſiſted of eighty-five men, all healthy and vigorous, who had no other apprehenſions than what aroſe from their ſcantineſs of proviſions, and the next day they had an account that there were no leſs than twenty Engliſh and Dutch ſhips at Ternate.

On the 25th they again ſet ſail, and on the firſt of September, the wind being contrary, entered into the bay, of what appeared a deſert iſland, when ſome of the officers going on ſhore in order to view the country, endeavoured to aſcend a very high mountain, but found it ſo very ſteep and rugged, that they ſoon abandoned the attempt. The name of this iſland is Moro.

On the 5th, they anchored off the coaſt of Gilolo, where ſome of the ſeamen going on ſhore unarmed to catch fiſh, four ſoldiers of Ternate ſuddenly ruſhed out of the woods, ſword in hand, intending to have killed them while they were drawing up their net, but the ſurgeon calling out Oran Hollanda, the Indian ſoldiers ſtopped, and throwing water on their heads, which in thoſe countries is a ſign of peace, approached them in a civil manner, aſſuring them that the reaſon of their attempt was their taking them for Spaniards. At the requeſt of the ſeamen, they were perſuaded to go on board, where having beads and other trifles given them, they promiſed to bring proviſions and refreſhments, which they accordingly did.

On the 14th, they ſet ſail; but the wind being ſlack for two or three days, they made no pro-

greſs in their voyage. However, on the 17th, they came to an anchor before Malaya in Ternate, and captain Schovten and James Le Maire going on ſhore, were entertained by the general, the governor of Amboyna, the admiral Verbaghen, and the whole council of India, and the next day ſold two of their ſhallops, with a great deal of what they had ſaved out of the Horn, which was burnt in the king's Iſland, for which they received in money 1350 rials, with part of which they purchaſed two laſts of rice, a ton of vinegar, the like quantity of Spaniſh wine, and about three tons of biſcuit.

On the 24th, eleven men and four boys deſired leave of the captain to enter into the company's ſervice, which, at the general's requeſt, Mr. Schovten readily granted, and two days after, took leave of the general, who treated him with the greateſt kindneſs and reſpect, and accompanied him and Mr. Le Maire on board with colours flying.

On the 27th, they ſailed for Bantam, and on the 28th of October, anchored at Jacatra, where they found three Dutch and as many Engliſh ſhips in the road. But on the laſt day of October, John Peterſon Koen, preſident of the Eaſt-India company at Bantam, arriving in that city, he the very next day ſent for the captain and both the ſupercargoes, before the council of the Indies, and after very little diſcourſe, required them, in virtue of his commiſſion from the Eaſt-India company, to deliver up the ſhip and cargo immediately. The captain and ſupercargoes inſiſted that this ſeizure was unlawful, ſince they entered the Indies by neither of the forbidden paſſages, the Cape of Good Hope or the Streights of Magellan, but by a paſſage they themſelves had diſcovered, which would be of great advantage to the commerce of their countrymen and to the whole trading world. But all their arguments were to no purpoſe, the preſident telling

them that they might ſeek for redreſs in Holland, This happened on Monday the firſt of November, according to the reckoning of thoſe who ſailed in the Unity, and upon Tueſday the ſecond of November, according to the reckoning of their countrymen, who had ſailed directly from Holland. For as the Unity had ſailed weſtward, and had with the ſun ſo far encompaſſed the globe, they had one night, or ſun ſetting, leſs than their countrymen who had ſailed to the eaſt.

Their ſhip being in this manner taken from them, ſome of the men entered into the Eaſt-India company's ſervice, and the reſt were put into two ſhips, that were returning to Holland; but Mr. James Le Maire, was ſo ſhocked at this diſaſtrous end of a voyage, which till that time had been ſo proſperous, that he died of grief and vexation, within a little more than a fortnight after the loſs of the veſſel. The reſt of the company had a proſperous voyage to Holland, and arrived at Amſterdam on the firſt of July. Their voyage round the world being performed in two years and eighteen days, which, conſidering the difficulties they met with, and the nature of their courſe, muſt appear extremely wonderful. But what renders it ſtill more ſurpriſing is, that they loſt only four men by ſickneſs in encompaſſing the whole earth, and that one of theſe died of grief.

THE

VOYAGE

OF

CAPTAIN WILLIAM DAMPIER,

ROUND THE WORLD.

Captain William Dampier ſets ſail from Virginia. An account of the many adventures from that time to his arrival in England, September 16th, 1691.

AFTER having diſtinguiſhed himſelf in ſeveral voyages, particularly in the South Seas, Mr. Dampier, while at Virginia, aſſociated himſelf with Capt. Cooke, with whom he had been formerly acquainted, in order to cruize on the Spaniards, and on the 23d of Auguſt, ſet ſail from Achamack in Virginia, for the Cape de Verd iſlands. In their paſſage they met with a violent ſtorm, which blew with prodigious fury for above a week. However they at length made the iſland of Salt, ſo called from its abounding in ſalt ponds, and the great quantities of congealed ſalt found there.

The iſland of Salt, is ſituated in 16°. north lat. and in 19°. 33'. weſt longitude from the Lizard, and is about nine leagues in length, and about two in breadth. The ſoil is extremely barren, without trees or graſs, and yet a few poor goats feed upon ſome low ſhrubs which grow near the ſea-ſide. There are alſo here a few wild fowl, eſpecially the flamingo, a reddiſh bird, reſembling a heron, but much larger, frequenting ponds or marſhes, and

being very ſhy, it is not eaſy to take them. They build their neſts in the ſhallow parts of ponds or ſtanding waters, by ſcraping the mud together into little hillocks, which taper up two feet above the ſurface of the water, where they leave a hole to lay their eggs in, which never exceed two, and theſe they hatch by covering them with their rumps, their long legs ſtanding in the water, a poſition which nature has wiſely made eaſy to them, ſince if they were to ſit upon them the weight of their bodies would break them. The young ones cannot fly, but run with ſuch ſwiftneſs that it is not eaſy to catch them, nor do they come to their true ſhape and colour, till they are ten or eleven months old. Their fleſh is lean and black, though not ill taſted, but their tongues which are very large are eſteemed great dainties. They generally ſtand in a row cloſe together by the ſide of a pond; and Mr. Dampier remarks, that as their feathers are of a reddiſh colour, they at a diſtance appear like a brick wall. Mr. Dampier and two others hiding themſelves in the evening, near a place where they reſorted, killed fourteen of them: the firſt ſhot being made whilſt they were ſtanding, and two others as they roſe.

The inhabitants of the iſland amounted to no more than five or ſix, and yet there is a governor, but he made a moſt diſmal figure, for he was covered with rags: However he came on board with a preſent of three or four lean goats, and in return captain Cooke gave him a coat. This governor alſo ſold them about twenty buſhels of ſalt for ſome old clothes, and then begging a little powder, went away extremely well ſatisfied. One of his followers unknown to him ſold a ſailor on board a piece of falſe ambergreaſe, which was of a dark colour like ſheep's dung, and was very ſoft, but had no ſmell.

From this iſland, they ſailed to St. Nicholas, another of the Cape de Verd Iſlands, twenty-two leagues ſouth-weſt from the former, and came to an anchor on the ſouth ſide. It is of a triangular form, the longeſt ſide to the eaſt, being thirty leagues in length, and the other two twenty leagues each. It is mountainous and barren, but about the middle, there are fruitful valleys inhabited by the Portugueze, who have good vineyards and plantations. The inhabitants are of a dark ſwarthy complexion, and by their dreſs appear in but indifferent circumſtances. However the governor and thirty-four gentlemen of his company, who viſited Captain Cooke, made a pretty good appearance, and were armed with ſwords and piſtols. The governor made them a preſent of ſeveral gallons of a pale thick wine, which in taſte reſembled Madeira.

They ſtaid here five or ſix days to ſcrub their ſhip's bottom, and in digging of wells for freſh water, and then ſailed to Mayo, another of the Cape de Verd Iſlands, where they intended to have purchaſed ſome cows and goats; but one Captain Bond, a Briſtol man, having a ſhort time before, ſeized the governor and ſome other gentlemen who came on board in order to trade, and, after being paid the ranſom demanded for them, villainouſly carried them off; the inhabitants were ſo juſtly exaſperated at this inſtance of perfidy, that they would not permit any of Captain Cooke's men to land.

From the Cape de Verd Iſlands they ſteered to the ſouth, directly to the Streights of Magellan, but at 10°. north, the wind blowing hard from the ſouthward, they ſtood over for the Guinea coaſt, and in a few days came to an anchor at the mouth of Sherborough river, to the ſouthward of Sierra Leona. On the ſhore a thick grove of trees concealed from their view a pretty large village, inhabited

by negroes. The houſes were low except one in the middle, where the captain and his crew were civilly entertained with palm wine and other refreſhments, and ſupplied with plantains, rice, fowls, honey, and ſugar-canes, at a ſmall price.

About the middle of November, they proſecuted their voyage to the Streights of Magellan, but had hardly got out to ſea, before they met with violent guſts of wind, of which there were three or four in a day, which together with calms made them advance but ſlowly. The wind veering at intervals to the ſouthward, till they had proceeded one degree to the ſouth of the line, when the wind turned to the eaſt, and on the 28th of January 1684, they touched at the three iſlands of Sebald de Weers, which are extremely barren and deſtitute of trees, except ſome dildo buſhes, which grow near the ſea-ſide, and afford nothing remarkable, except vaſt ſhoals of ſmall red lobſters, of the length of a man's finger.

As they could neither find ſafe anchoring nor freſh water at theſe iſlands, they proceeded towards the Streights of Magellan, and on the firſt of February, came in ſight of the Streights of Le Maire, which they found very narrow, with highlands on both ſides. But having ſailed with a briſk gale, till within four miles of the mouth, were becalmed, and though they found a ſtrong tide ſetting out of the Streights to the north, they were unable to diſtinguiſh whether it flowed or ebbed, the waves breaking on all ſides, and toſſing the ſhip in a ſurprizing manner.

On the 14th of February, they were ſurprized by a moſt violent ſtorm, at weſt ſouth-weſt, which laſted till the 3d of March, and on the 19th of the ſame month they perceived a ſail to the ſouth, which they ſuppoſed to be a Spaniſh merchantman bound from Baldivia to Lima, but it proved to be an Engliſh ſhip, commanded by Captain Eaton

from London ; who being bound to the South Seas as well as they, kept company with them, through the Streights, they ſupplying Mr. Eaton with bread and beef; in return for which he gave them water, of which they were in ſome want.

On the 23d, they came to an anchor in twenty-five fathom water, in a bay on the ſouth ſide of the fertile iſland of Juan Fernandez. when a canoe was immediately ſent on ſhore, with a Moſkito, and two or three ſailors, in ſearch of a Moſkito Indian, left there three years before, by Captain Watling; and notwithſtanding all the ſearch made after him by the Spaniards, had kept himſelf concealed in the woods ; but he now ſoon diſcovered himſelf, for having the day before perceived an Engliſh ſail, he had killed three goats to feaſt the crew, and now came running down from the woods to meet them.

The interview between him and the other Moſkito Indian, was extremely affecting ; and the joy he diſcovered at ſeeing ſo many of his old friends come on purpoſe to bring him off, is not to be expreſſed. He had built himſelf a ſmall hut about half a mile from the ſhore, which he had lined with goat ſkins, and of theſe he had alſo made his bed ; and a piece of one of them was faſtened round his waiſt, to ſupply the want of his cloaths, which had been for ſome time worn out. On his being left on ſhore, he had a knife, a gun, ſome powder and a ſmall quantity of ſhot, which being all ſpent, he made a ſaw of his knife, and then ſawed his gun-barrel into ſmall pieces, and ſtrengthening the iron when hot with a ſtone, and rubbing it to an edge, he made harpoons, a lance and fiſhing hooks, by imitating what he had remembered of the workmanſhip of the Engliſh ſmiths ; and indeed the Moſkito Indians make all their inſtruments without either forge or anvil, and with the above inſtruments he uſed to ſtrike goats and fiſh,

from the time that his powder was ſpent. This man's name was Will, and the other was called Robert, for though the Moſkito Indians do not diſtinguiſh themſelves by any names, yet they take it as a great favour if the Europeans beſtow one upon them.

After ſtaying 14 days at the iſland of Juan Fernandez, they ſet ſail on the 8th of April 1684, in company with Capt. Eaton, ſteering towards the line, off the mountains of Peru and Chili; but ſailed no nearer the ſhore than 12 or 16 leagues, to prevent their being diſcovered by the Spaniards.

On the 3d of May, Capt. Eaton took a prize laden with timber; and on the 19th they came to an anchor off the iſlands of Lobos de la Mar. Having reaſon to believe they were diſcovered by the Spaniards, and that they would conſequently keep all their richeſt ſhips in port, it was agreed to make a deſcent upon Truxillo, a populous city ſix miles from the port of Guanehagno; but the next day ſome of the men deſcrying two veſſels to the weſt without the iſlands, and one betwixt an iſland and the continent, they gave them chaſe, Capt. Cooke's ſhip purſued that towards the continent, and Capt. Eaton the other two. They were ſoon taken and found to be laden with flour from Guanehagno to Panama, one of them had a letter from the viceroy of Lima, to the preſident of Panama, informing him, that having notice of ſome enemies lately come into thoſe ſeas, he had immediately diſpatched theſe three ſhips to ſupply his wants. They were at the ſame time informed by the priſoners, that the people of Truxillo were erecting a fort near the harbour of Guanehagno, upon which they reſolved to lay aſide the deſign of attacking that place, and ſteered with their prizes to the iſlands of Gallipagos, and at night came to anchor on the eaſt ſide of one of the eaſtern moſt iſlands.

After a ſtay of twelve days among theſe iſlands, one of the Indian priſoners, a native of Rio Leja having given an ample account of the riches of that place, and offering his ſervice to conduct them thither, it was reſolved to take his advice, and they ſet ſail on the 12th of June; but the fair weather and ſmall winds led them by the beginning of June to Cape Blanco, on the continent of Mexico, ſo called from two white rocks, half a mile from the Cape, which are high, ſteep, and taper, and reſemble two lofty towers. The Cape itſelf juts out with ſteep rocks to the ſea; but having an eaſy deſcent on both ſides from the flat on the top, which is covered with tall trees, it affords a very agreeable proſpect. On the north-weſt ſide of the Cape is Caldera Bay, into which a rivulet of ſweet water diſcharges itſelf through the low-lands, theſe are very rich and abound in lofty trees, that extend a mile to the north-eaſt bay, where the ſavannas begin, and run ſeveral leagues into the country, being covered with a ſweet, thick, and long graſs, and beautified with ſmall groves, which are interſperſed through the plains. Deeper into the bay, the low-lands are ſtored with mangroves; but farther into the country, the land riſes higher, and conſiſts partly of woods and partly of hilly ſavannas. But in theſe woods the trees are much ſmaller than the others, and the graſs of the ſavannas is inferior to the former.

Before they reached the above Cape, Capt. Cooke, who had been very ill ever ſince his departure from Juan Fernandez, died, and as in a few hours after they came to an anchor near the mouth of the above-mentioned rivulet, he was immediately carried on ſhore under a guard of twelve armed men, but while they were buſy in digging his grave, three Spaniſh Indians came to them, aſking ſeveral impertinent queſtions, which the others anſwered as they thought proper, and

kept them in diſcourſe till they found an opportunity of ſeizing them all, but one of them eſcaped out of their hands, and the other two being carried on board, confeſſed that they were ſent thither as ſpies from Nicoya, a ſmall town at 12 or 14 leagues diſtance, ſeated on the banks of the river of the ſame name, which being a place very convenient for building and refitting of ſhips, the preſident of Panama had ſent advice thither of the Engliſh being in thoſe ſeas.

From theſe men they learned that the inhabitants of the country lived chiefly by tilling their grounds for corn, and feeding their cattle in the ſavannas or plains. That they ſent their ox hides to the North Sea by the lake of Nicaragua, and alſo a red kind of wood uſed for dying, which they exchanged there for linen and woollen commodities, brought thither from Europe. They added, that at a ſmall diſtance was a large pen of horned cattle, where they might provide themſelves with as many cows and bulls as they wanted.

Upon this agreeable intelligence, twenty-four of the ſhip's crew were immediately diſpatched in two boats, and under the conduct of one of the Indians, landed at a place a league from the ſhip, when hauling their boats upon the dry ſand, they were conducted by their guide until they came to the pen, which was in a large ſavanna, two miles from the boats, where finding a great number of bulls and cows feeding, ſome were for killing three of them immediately; but were oppoſed by the reſt, who alleged that they had better ſtay all night, and in the morning kill as many as they wanted. Upon which Mr. Dampier and eleven more, thought fit to return on board, which they did without the leaſt oppoſition; but thoſe who ſtaid had ſoon reaſon to repent their raſhneſs, for at break of day, when they were preparing to drive away as many cattle as they wanted, they found

J. Seymour Sculpsit.

The English coming to their Boat find it in flames, while the Spaniards at a distance mock at their distress.

themſelves beſet with fifty or ſixty Spaniards lying in ambuſh among the buſhes, who diſcharged ſeveral ſhot at them, they made a retreat, in expectation of getting to their boat; but when they at laſt came to the place where they had left it, they to their great confuſion found it in flames; while the Spaniards who kept at a diſtance, mocked at their diſtreſs. In this perplexing ſituation they waded to a rock, where they were pretty ſure of not being ſurrounded; and remained there ſeven or eight hours, in great danger of being ſwallowed up by the ſea, which flowed in upon them apace. Mean while thoſe on board every minute expected their return; but hearing nothing of them by four o'clock in the afternoon, ten men were ſent in a canoe in ſearch of them, who no ſooner reached the place where they had landed before, than they found their comrades ſtanding upon this rock, up to the middle in water, and as the tide was ſtill coming in, they muſt have infallibly periſhed had the canoe come but an hour later, but they were now brought ſafe on board.

In this bay they afterwards ſeized two canoes. The people here have no ſhips or barks, and as there is ſcarce any fiſh they have no inſtruments for fiſhing. The Engliſh alſo provided themſelves with a good quantity of lance-wood, which grows ſtraight like the aſh-tree, and being very hard and tough, they made them into ſcouring rods for their guns, and handles or ſtaves for oars.

On the 19th of July, Mr. Edward Davis was appointed captain, in the room of Capt. Cooke, deceaſed; and the next day ſailed in company with Capt. Eaton, towards Rio Leja, which is eaſily diſcovered at ſea, on account of a very high burning mountain, called Volcano Vejo, which may be ſeen at twenty leagues diſtance: Being in ſight of this volcano, they made towards the harbour, and then ſetting out their canoes, ſteered up to the

town, and by nine o'clock in the morning diſcovered a houſe, and ſoon after three men going into a canoe on the inſide of an iſland, which is a mile in length and encloſes the harbour; but though theſe Indians made what haſte they could in rowing to the continent, the Engliſh overtook them, and carried them back to the iſland; at the ſame time they obſerved a man on horſeback on the continent, riding full ſpeed towards the town. Theſe men frankly confeſſed, that they had been placed on the iſland by the governor of Rio Leja, to keep watch day and night in order to give notice if they could ſee the Engliſh, and that the horſeman was placed upon the ſame account upon the continent, within an hour's riding of the town. Therefore finding themſelves diſcovered, the horſeman being gone three hours before Eaton and his canoes reached the iſland; their deſign upon that town was for the preſent laid aſide, and the men returned on board.

A conſultation being now held, it was reſolved to ſteer for the gulph of Amapalla, and Capt. Davis entering it with two canoes, in order if poſſible to get ſome priſoners and obtain intelligence, he came in the night to Mangera; and as ſoon as it was morning, perceiving many canoes hauled up in a bay, he landed there, and fell into a path which ſoon led him to the town; but the inhabitants had no ſooner notice of his coming, than they all ran into the woods, except an old prieſt and two Indian boys, his attendants. Capt. Davis making them priſoners, brought them down to the ſea-ſide, and obliged them to conduct him to the iſland of Amapalla, where being landed, he marched to a town on the top of a hill, when the inhabitants ſeeing them advance, would have fled into the woods, had they not been prevented by the chief magiſtrate's ſecretary, who notwithſtanding his being an Indian, could read and write Spaniſh, and yet was an enemy to the Spaniards; this perſon

having perſuaded them that the Engliſh were friends who craved their aſſiſtance againſt their common oppreſſors, they bid Davis and his men welcome, who after the firſt ſalutations marched with them towards the church, with the prieſt brought by Capt. Davis at their head.

It is obſervable that in all the Indian towns in general, the church is the only place where matters of a public nature are tranſacted. The church ſerving both for their conſultations and diverſions, for there are laid up their maſks, antique habits, hautboys, ſtrumſtrums, and other muſical inſtruments. The ſtrumſtrum is an inſtrument formed of the half of a gourd, the hollow of which is covered with a thin board, over which are laid ſtrings, and it has ſome reſemblance to the ſound of a cittern. Here they meet to make merry on the night preceding any holiday or feſtival, whence they dance, ſing, and play with antique dreſſes and geſtures; but both their muſic and mirth have a melancholy air, which is not unſuitable to the yoke they groan under.

But to return to Capt Davis and his company, who intended, as ſoon as they were all got into the church, to prevail on the Indians to lend him their aſſiſtance againſt the Spaniards; even the prieſt had promiſed to contribute to this, by his good offices, and he was now upon ſuch good terms with the people, that it ſeemed impoſſible things ſhould take a wrong turn. But juſt as a few of the remaining Indians were entering the church, one of his men who was a little more haſty than the reſt, puſhing an Indian who went ſlowly before him in order to make him proceed faſter, the poor man was ſo frightened, that he ſprang away with all poſſible ſpeed, and the reſt taking the alarm followed him; ſo that Capt. Davis and the prieſt were left in the church by themſelves, and the captain being an entire ſtranger to the cauſe of this confuſion, raſhly

ordered his men to fire upon the fugitives, which entirely broke off his correſpondence with theſe people; his beſt friend the ſecretary being killed.

In the afternoon of the ſame day, the ſhips coming to an anchor near the iſland of Amapalla, Capt. Davis and his men took the prieſt on board, who told them that ſince the ſecretary was killed, they had no other way left than to ſend for the cacique; which the prieſt having done, he came attended by ſix other Indians, and coming on board was received in a very friendly manner, and as they ſtaid on board all the time the ſhips were in the gulph, proved extremely ſerviceable, both in piloting them to places where they had plenty of wood, water, and cattle, and in very cordially aſſiſting them to the utmoſt of their power, and in return they were preſented with ſome trifles, on which they ſet the higheſt value, and were fully ſatisfied at their departure.

The gulph of Amapalla is a large branch of the ſea, which enters eight or ten leagues deep into the country; on the ſouth ſide of it is Cape Caſwina, and on the north-weſt ſide St. Michael's mountain, at the foot of which is a low plain a mile in length; and between theſe low grounds, and Point Caſwina are two iſlands, at the diſtance of twelve miles from each other. The ſouthermoſt, called Mangera, is high and round, two leagues in circuit, and on all ſides encloſed with rocks, except to the north-eaſt, where there is a ſmall ſandy creek. It produces very lofty trees, and has a town in the middle, in which is a handſome Spaniſh church. The inhabitants, who are Indians, have a few plantations of maize and plaintains. Their only tame fowls are cocks and hens, and they have no other beaſts but cats and dogs. Amapalla is much larger than the other iſland, and has two towns that are two miles aſunder, the largeſt of which ſtands on a ſmall plain on the top

of a hill, and has a handſome church. The other town has alſo a new church. It is obſervable that in moſt of the Indian towns under the juriſdiction of the Spaniards, the images of their ſaints found in their churches, are repreſented with an Indian complexion, and partly in their dreſs; while in the towns inhabited by the Spaniards, they have the complexion and dreſs of Spaniards.

Amapalla produces great plenty of maize, large hog plums, and a few plaintains. They have alſo ſome fowls; and no Spaniard lives there except the prieſt, who takes care of the two villages, and of the town in the iſland of Mangera. As the people have little or no money, they pay their tribute in maize, to the governor of St. Michael's town, which is ſeated at the foot of St. Michael's mount, and the prieſt has his tenths in all the produce.

In this gulph there are many other iſlands which are uninhabited. One that is pretty large belonging to a monaſtry; and four or five Indians looked after the cattle that fed there in great numbers.

On the 3d of September, capt. Davis ſailed out of the gulph, through the channel betwixt Mangera and the iſland of Amapalla, after having ſet the prieſt on ſhore, and left the Cacique and his attendants in poſſeſſion of one of the prizes, half full of flour. And on the 20th of the ſame month, came to an anchor near the iſland of Plata.

This iſland, which is ſituated in 1°. 10'. ſouth latitude, is about four miles in length, and one and a half in breadth. It is pretty high, and ſurrounded with rocky cliffs, except in one place on the eaſt ſide, where a freſh water torrent falls down from the rocks. The top is flat and plain, and produces three or four ſorts of ſmall trees unknown to Europe, that are overgrown with moſs. But though in the beginning of the year it has pretty good graſs, it has no land animals to feed upon it;

the vaſt number of goats which uſed to be here formerly being all deſtroyed. However, there are here many boobies and men-of-war birds, and near the ſhore are great plenty of ſmall turtle. The place for anchorage is on the eaſt ſide cloſe to the ſhore, within two cable lengths of a ſandy bay. It is ſaid to have obtained the name of La Plata, from Sir Francis Drake's bringng thither the Cacafuego, and dividing among his men the plate found in that rich prize.

After continuing one day here, they ſteered to Point St. Helena, which appears high and flat, like an iſland, it being ſurrounded with low grounds and covered on the top with thiſtles. It forms a large and good bay on the north ſide; on the ſhore of which ſtands a wretched village, alſo called St. Helena, inhabited by Indians; but the ground being ſandy and barren, they have neither trees nor graſs, corn nor fruit, except water-melons, which are here very good. They are obliged to bring their freſh water from the river Calanche, which is at four leagues diſtance, at the bottom of the bay. They live chiefly upon fiſh, and are ſupplied with maize for algatrane, a bituminous ſubſtance, ſo called by the Spaniards, which iſſues out of the earth above the high-water mark, and by long boiling becomes hard, like pitch, and anſwers the ſame purpoſes. Some of the men being ſent in the night time to take the village, landed in the morning, and took ſome priſoners, and a ſmall bark which had been ſet on fire by the inhabitants, who alleged that they had done it by ſpecial order from the viceroy.

The men returned back the ſame evening, immediately ſteered again to the iſland of Plata, where they anchored on the 26th of September, and inſtantly ſome of them were ſent to Manta, a village on the continent, ſeven or eight leagues from the iſland of Plata, and two or three leagues weſt of

Cape Loronzo, inhabited by Indians. They landed at day-break, within a mile and a half of the village; but the inhabitants being already ſtirring, took the alarm, and all of them abandoned the town, except two old women, who being taken priſoners, declared that the viceroy, upon receiving the news that a great number of the enemy were got into the South Seas, had ordered the ſhips to be burnt, the goats in the iſland of Plata to be deſtroyed, and that no more proviſions ſhould be kept there than were neceſſary for their preſent uſe.

The village of Manta is ſituated on an eaſy aſcent, and though it conſiſts only of mean and ſcattered buildings, affords a very agreeable proſpect from the ſea. It was formerly inhabited by the Spaniards, and has a very handſome church, adorned with carved work. The ſoil is here dry and ſandy, producing neither corn nor roots, but only a few ſhrubs. The inhabitants are ſupplied with neceſſaries by the ſhips from Panama and Lima, this being the firſt place at which they touch; and between the town and the ſea there is an excellent ſpring of water. At the back of the village, at ſome diſtance in the country, is a very high mountain, which riſes up into the clouds, in the form of a ſugar-loaf. Oppoſite the village, about a mile and a half from the ſhore, there is a dangerous rock, which never appears above water; but a mile within it is ſafe anchorage, at ſix, eight, or ten fathoms.

They returned the next day to the iſland of Plata, and being undetermined what courſe to take, ſtayed there till the ſecond of October, when they were joined by Captain Swan, in the Cygnet of London, a rich ſhip which was deſigned to trade on that coaſt and now come to anchor in the ſame road. But Mr. Swan being diſappointed in his hopes of trade, his men had forced him to take on

board a party of buccaneers, who had travelled over the iſthmus of Darien, under the command of Captain Peter Harris. There were now three of them together, for Captain Harris had a ſmall bark given him, and the men wiſhed for nothing ſo much as to meet with Captain Eaton, as they juſtly imagined, that with ſuch a force they might be able to undertake an expedition of ſome conſequence. The bark was therefore diſpatched in queſt of him, with a letter inviting him to ſhare the fortune of theſe three adventurers, but he had lately quitted thoſe ſeas, and (as it was imagined) ſteered for the Eaſt-Indies; a deſign he had long intended to put in execution. They at this time took a prize of 400 tons, laden with timber, bound from Guaiaquil to Lima, and from the people on board, they learned that the Viceroy of Peru was fitting out ten frigates againſt them. Though this news gave them ſome concern, it did not prevent their making a deſcent upon Paita, where 110 men landed early in the morning of the third of October, four miles ſouth of Paita, where they took ſome priſoners, who were ſent for a watch, and who ſaid that the governor of Paita, with 100 men was coming to the aſſiſtance of the town; but notwithſtanding this intelligence, the Engliſh attacked the fort, and took it with little oppoſition. Upon which the governor and inhabitants quitted the town, when the Engliſh entered it, but found that they had carried off their money, goods, and proviſions. The ſame evening the ſhips came to an anchor a mile from the ſhore; but though the three captains offered to ſpare the town for 300 ſacks of flour, 3000 pounds of ſugar, 25 jars of wine, and 1000 jars of water; yet theſe moderate conditions were ſlighted, and therefore, after keeping poſſeſſion of it ſix days, they ſet it on fire.

On the 10th of November, at night, they weighed from Paita, and taking the benefit of a land

breeze, ſteered towards the iſland of Lobos de la Mare, and on the 14th touched at Lobos de la Terra, where they landed ſome men the following day, and the men killed a number of boobies, penguins, and ſeals, which were a ſeaſonable refreſhment, they having been without taking fleſh of any ſort for a long time. On the 19th they arrived at Lobos de la Mare, where the Moſkito men on board caught a great number of turtle; and having taken on board ſome planks which they had got out of a prize, and formerly left there, it was reſolved to attack Guaiaquil.

On the 29th, in the morning, they ſet ſail for the bay of Guaiaquil, which is ſituated betwixt Cape Blanco to the ſouth, and point Chandy to the north, and in the bottom of this bay lies a ſmall iſland, called St. Clara. As they had formerly a deſign againſt the town of Guaiaquil, they left their ſhips at Cape Blanco, and ſteered with a bark and ſome canoes to the iſland of St. Clara, in the bay of Guaiaquil, and thence proceeded in two canoes to Point Arena, where the next day they took ſome of the fiſhermen of Puna, and afterwards the town. The next ebb they took a bark laden with Quito cloth, coming from Guaiaquil, the maſter of which told him there were three barks full of negroes coming with the next tide. Having embarked all their men in canoes, except five left on board the bark, they rowed towards Guaiaquil, but their canoes being heavy laden, the day broke when they were within two leagues of the town. Upon which they concealed themſelves in an adjacent creek, ſending one of the canoes to the bark which was left near Puna, with orders not to fire till the next day: but before the canoe could reach the bark with this order, the two barks filled with negroes coming out of the harbour with the evening tide, came within ſight of the Engliſh bark, which fired three guns at them. The firing of

theſe guns threw the Engliſh in the canoes into great conſternation, who imagined that the townſmen had taken the alarm, whence ſome were for advancing immediately to the town, and others for returning to their ſhips; but as the ebb tide hindered them from going upwards, Captain Davis with fifty of his men reſolved to march to the place by land, but the reſt imagining the enterprize impracticable, remained in the creek to ſee the iſſue. When Captain Davis and his men had been gone about four hours, they were almoſt choaked among the mangrove woods which grow in the marſhes, and returned without being able to advance far on their way to the town. It was then reſolved to row up in ſight of Guaiaquil, and if they found themſelves diſcovered, to retire without making any attempt; therefore proceeding through the north-eaſt channel, they arrived in the night within ſight of the place, when at the diſcharge of a muſket they perceived the whole town filled with lights, and as there was but one ſeen before, this was taken almoſt as an infallible ſign of their being diſcovered; but it being alleged that theſe lights were uſed by the Spaniards in the nights before holidays, and that the next day was a feſtival, ſome of the people upbraided captain Swan and the reſt with cowardice. Upon this they landed at a place two miles from the town, but it being over-run with woods, they were unable to proceed in the dark, and therefore waited till daylight. They had an Indian guide, who was led by a cord by one of Captain Davis's men, who ſeemed the moſt forward, but perhaps beginning to repent his raſhneſs, cut the rope with which the guide was tied, and thus let him eſcape into the town, crying out, after he was gone, that ſomebody had cut the rope; ſo that after having ſearched in vain for the guide, it was unanimouſly reſolved to deſiſt. However they landed on the oppoſite

bank, after day-break, where there were ſeveral horned cattle, and killed a cow, without receiving the leaſt moleſtation from the town.

On the 9th of December, they returned to Puna, and in their way ſeized upon the two barks before mentioned, with about 1000 luſty negroes on board, out of which number they choſe about ſixty, and left the reſt behind with the barks; though Mr. Dampier ſuppoſes, that if they had carried them all to St. Maria, on the iſthmus of Darien, they might, with the aſſiſtance of the natives, and the Engliſh and French privateers that would have come to them from all parts of the Weſt-Indies, have not only maintained themſelves there in ſpite of all the power of Spain, but have extended their conqueſts to the rich gold mines of Quito.

On the 13th of December they ſet ſail, and in three days arrived at the iſland of Plata, meeting in their paſſage the bark they had diſpatched in ſearch of Captain Eaton, and having taken in freſh water on the continent, they directed their courſe to Lavelia, a town in the bay of Panama. The next morning they paſſed in ſight of Cape Paſſao, a round high point divided in the middle, bare towards the ſea, but covered with fruit trees to the land ſide. Betwixt this and Cape St. Franciſco, they obſerved abundance of ſmall points, full of trees of ſeveral kinds, which incloſe ſo many ſandy creeks. As their deſign was to look into ſome river unfrequented by the Spaniards, in ſearch of canoes, they endeavoured to make the river of St. Jago, on account of its nearneſs to the iſland of Gallo, in which there is much gold, and ſafe anchorage for ſhips. This river which is large and navigable, divides itſelf about ſeven leagues up in the country into two branches, which incloſe an iſland four leagues in circumference, and runs through a very rich ſoil that produces all ſorts of

tall trees, uſually found in this climate, eſpecially red and white cotton and cabbage trees, of the largeſt kind.

The white cotton tree is much taller than the oak, and the trunk ſtraight, without any branches, till near the top, where they are very ſtrong. The bark is extremely ſmooth, and the leaves, which are of the ſize of thoſe of a plumb-tree, are of a dark green, oval, ſmooth, and jagged at the ends. Theſe fall off in April, but in a week's time are ſupplied with freſh ones; and it is remarkable that the trunks are not always biggeſt near the roots. Theſe trees produce ſilk, cotton which falls to the ground in November and December, but is not ſo ſubſtantial as that of the cotton ſhrub, but rather like the down of thiſtles, whence the people in the Weſt-Indies do not think it worth gathering, though in the Eaſt-Indies it is uſed for ſtuffing pillows. The red cotton tree is ſomewhat leſs, but in other reſpects reſembles the former, only it produces no cotton, and its wood is hard, though both are ſomewhat ſpungy. They are found in fat grounds, not only on the coaſt of the South-Sea, but in the Eaſt and Weſt-Indies.

The cabbage tree is the talleſt in theſe woods, ſome being 120 feet high; it has branches no where but near the top, where they ſprout out to the length of twelve or fourteen feet; they are of the thickneſs of a man's arm, and are covered with long ſlender leaves, in ſuch regular order, that at a diſtance they appear only as one leaf. In the midſt of the higheſt branches ſhoots forth the cabbage, which is a foot in length, of the thickneſs of a man's leg, as white as milk, and is very ſweet and wholeſome. As this tree dies after its head is gone, they cut it down after they gather the fruit. Betwixt the cabbage and the large branches ſprout forth many ſmall twigs, two feet long, and very cloſe together; at the extremi-

ties of which grow hard round berries, of the ſize of a cherry, which once a year fall from the tree, and are excellent food for the hogs. The trunk of the tree from top to bottom is full of round rings, about half a foot aſunder, the bark is thin and brittle, the wood hard and black, with a white pith in the middle.

As the coaſt and country of Lima has continual dry weather, ſo this part of Peru is ſeldom without rain, which, and the thickneſs of the woods, have, in all probability, prevented the Spaniards making any conſiderable diſcoveries on this coaſt; beſides they may have been intimidated by the bravery of its inhabitants, who entertain a mortal hatred againſt the Spaniards; and whoever attempts to row up the river's mouth lies expoſed to their ambuſcades on each ſide, and they are ſuch markſmen with their arrows, that they ſeldom miſs their aim; the chief food of theſe people is maize and plaintains.

However, Mr. Dampier, with ſome others, in four canoes, ventured to row ſix leagues up the river, where they diſcovered two ſmall huts, thatched with palmetto trees, where they found only ſome fowls, a few plaintains, and a hog ſeemingly of European breed, which they dreſſed and fed upon very heartily; for the Indians ſeeing them approach, got into their canoes, with their wives, children, and goods, and paddled away, againſt the ſtream, much faſter than the Engliſh could row, on account of their keeping near the banks. On the oppoſite ſide, they ſaw many other huts, at the diſtance of a league; but the current being very rapid, they did not care to venture any farther up. They therefore returned the next morning to the river's mouth, in order to ſail to the iſland of Gallo, where their ſhips were ſtationed.

Gallo is a ſmall uninhabited iſland, ſeated in a ſpacious bay three leagues from the river Tomaco, and four leagues and a half from an Indian village

of the ſame name. It is indifferently high, well ſtored with timber trees, and at the north-eaſt end is a good ſandy bay, near which is a fine ſpring of freſh water. The river Tomaco, which is ſuppoſed to ariſe among the rich mountains of Quito, has its banks well peopled by the Indians, and ſome Spaniards, who traffic with them for gold, but is ſo ſhallow at the entrance that only barks can enter it. This river is five leagues from that of St. Jago, and leaving the latter, they ſailed thither. In their way they ſaw an Indian houſe, and ſeized the whole family, rowed forward, and came at twelve at night to Tomaco, where they ſeized upon all the inhabitants, among whom was Don Diego de Pinas, a Spaniſh knight, who came thither to lade timber; but they found nothing in the ſhip that brought him but 13 jars of wine, which they took out, and then ſet the veſſel adrift. The ſame day three Indians came on board in a canoe, who were ſtraight and well limbed, but of a low ſtature, with black hair, long viſages, and of a dark complexion, with ſmall eyes and noſes.

On the 21ſt of December, ſeveral of the men who had been ſeven or eight leagues up the river, returned with their canoes, and brought with them ſeveral ounces of gold they had found in a Spaniſh houſe, whence the people had fled.

On the 1ſt of January 1685, when they were going in their canoes from Tomaco towards Gallo they took a Spaniſh packet-boat, ſent with diſpatches from Panama to Lima, by which they learned that the Armada, being arrived from Spain at Porto Bello, waited for the Plate fleet from Lima, which ſoon made them alter their reſolution of going to Lavelia, inſtead of which it was reſolved to rendezvous among the King's or Pearl iſlands, by which all the ſhips bound to Panama from the coaſt of Lima muſt neceſſarily paſs. Accordingly they ſailed on the 7th of January, and the

next day took a ſhip of 90 tons, laden with flour, and continuing their voyage, with a gentle gale from the ſouth, anchored on the 9th on the weſt ſide of Gorgona.

On the 13th they purſued their voyage to the King's iſlands, and on the 25th this ſmall ſquadron, conſiſting of two ſtout ſhips, a fire-ſhip, the prize of 90 tons, and two tenders, came into a deep well incloſed channel, at the north end of St. Paul's iſland, which is a convenient place for careening.

The King's or Pearl iſlands are pretty numerous, and are low and woody. They are ſeven leagues from the neareſt part of the continent, and twelve from Panama. But though they have obtained the name of Pearl iſlands, our author could never ſee one pearl-oyſter near them. The northernmoſt of theſe is called Pachea, or Pacheque, which is a ſmall iſland eleven or twelve leagues from Panama, and St. Paul's lies moſt to the ſouth. But the reſt, though bigger, have no particular names. Some of them are planted with rice, bananas and plaintains, by the negroes who belong to the inhabitants of Panama. Though theſe iſlands lie cloſe together, they have channels between them fit for boats, and between them and the continent is a channel of a moderate depth, ſeven or eight leagues broad.

Having cleaned their barks at St. Paul's iſland, they ſent them to cruize towards Panama, and four days after they returned with a prize laden with maize, Indian corn, a ſort of beef, and fowls. This prize came from Lavelia, a large town ſeated on the bank of a river on the north ſide of the bay of Panama. In the harbour where they careened they found abundance of oyſters, muſcles, limpets and clams, which laſt are ſhell-fiſh that ſtick ſo cloſe to the rocks, that there is no other way of getting them out, than by opening them where they grow. They alſo met with ſome pigeons and turtle doves.

Having careened the ſhips, and taken in a freſh ſupply of wood and water, they ſailed from among the iſlands on the 18th of February, and anchored in a great channel between them and the continent. The next day they cruized in the channel towards Panama, about which the ſhore appears very beautiful, by its being interſperſed with ſmall woods and hills. Beſides, about a league from the continent ſeveral ſmall iſlands appear in view, partly covered with trees; and on the other ſide of the channel the King's iſlands afford a delightful proſpect.

On the 18th, they anchored directly oppoſite to Old Panama, once a famous city, but the greateſt part being laid in aſhes by Sir Henry Morgan, it was never rebuilt. About four leagues from the ruins of this place ſtands New Panama, a very handſome city, in a ſpacious bay of the ſame name, into which run ſeveral long navigable rivers, ſome of which are not without gold. It has a view of many pleaſant iſlands, and the country about it affords a delightful proſpect at ſea, from the variety of the adjacent hills, vallies, groves and plains. The houſes are for the moſt part of brick, and pretty lofty, eſpecially the churches, the monaſteries, the preſident's houſe, and other public ſtructures, which, Mr. Dampier ſays, make the beſt ſhow of any buildings he ever ſaw in thoſe parts. It is encompaſſed with a high ſtone wall, on which are mounted a conſiderable number of guns, that were formerly planted on the land ſide, but now they are alſo planted towards the ſea. This city carries on a great trade, as being the ſtaple for all goods, to and from every part of Peru and Chili. Beſides, every three years when the Spaniſh galleons go to Porto Bello, the Plate fleet arrives with the king's plate, and that which belongs to the merchants at Panama, whence it is carried on mules by land to Porto Bello.

Panama is ſeated in a healthy air, it having the benefit of the ſea-wind from ten or eleven in the morning till eight or nine o'clock at night; and the land-wind from nine, till the morning. Beſides, Panama is ſeldom troubled with fogs, nor is the wet ſeaſon, which holds from May till November, ſo exceſſive at Panama as on the other ſide of the bay, though it is ſevere enough in the months of June, July, and Auguſt, at which time the merchants of Peru, who are uſed to an air that is conſtantly ſerene, and without rain or fogs, cut off their hair to preſerve them from fevers.

On the 20th of March, they anchored within a league of the three Perico iſlands, which are ſmall and rocky, and the next day took another prize, laden with beef, hogs, fowls, and ſalt, from Lavelia.

On the 24th, they ſtood over to the iſland of Tobago, in the ſame bay, ſix leagues ſouth of Panama, a ſmall rocky and ſteep iſland, three miles in length, and two in breadth, except on the north ſide, where it has an eaſy aſcent, and as the ſoil is good up to the middle of the mountains, it produces abundance of fruit, as plantains and bananas; and near the ſea ſide, cocoa and mammee trees. Theſe laſt are large and ſtraight, they being ſixty or ſeventy feet high, without knots, or even boughs, but at the top ſome ſmall branches ſprout out, thick and cloſe together. The fruit, which is round, and of the ſize of a large quince, is covered with a rind, that is at firſt grey, and before it is ripe is brittle; but when at maturity grows yellow, peels with eaſe, and changes to the colour of a carrot. The ripe fruit ſmells and taſtes well, and has two rough ſtones in the middle, of the ſize of a large almond.

The ſouth-weſt ſide of Tobago is covered with trees and fire-wood, and on the north ſide, a clear ſpring of freſh water falls from the mountains into the ſea, near which formerly ſtood a pretty town,

with a handſome church; but the greateſt part of it has been deſtroyed by the Buccaneers; and farther towards the weſt lies a ſmall town, called Tobagilla.

While they were at anchor before this laſt town, they were in great danger of being deſtroyed by a pretended merchant of Panama, who, under the colour of trading privately with them, inſtead of bringing (in the night) his bark laden with merchandize, advanced pretty near them in a fire-ſhip, when ſome of the men, more ſuſpicious than the reſt, bid her come to an anchor; but ſhe not doing ſo, they fired at her, which ſo terrified the men, that immediately ſetting her on fire, they jumped into their canoes, and the Engliſh were obliged to cut their cables to eſcape the danger. At the ſame time Capt. Swan, who lay at the diſtance of a mile at anchor, ſaw a ſmall float, with only one man upon it, driving towards his ſhip, but it ſoon after diſappeared. This he imagined to be ſome materials made up with combuſtible matter, in order to be faſtened to his rudder, as it happened to Capt. Sharpe near Coquimbo; but it is ſuppoſed the fellow, thinking himſelf diſcovered, had not the courage to proſecute his enterprize. However Capt. Swan alſo thought fit to cut his cables, and to keep under ſail all night. The above engines are ſaid to have been contrived by Mr. Bond, who formerly deſerted from them to the Spaniards, without whoſe aſſiſtance they could not have fitted out the fire ſhip; it being almoſt impoſſible to conceive the ignorance of the Spaniards in the South-Seas, eſpecially in maritime affairs.

On the 28th in the morning, while they were buſy in recovering their anchors, they diſcovered a whole fleet of canoes, full of men, paſs between Tobagilla and the other iſland, who proved to be Engliſh and French privateers, that had lately croſſed from the North Sea over the iſthmus of

Darien. Theſe were 280 in all, 200 of whom were French, and 80 Engliſh, which laſt were taken on board Capt. Davis, and the reſt put into the prize they had taken, loaden with flour, under the command of a Frenchman called Capt. Gronet, who in return offered Capt. Davis and Capt. Swan, each a commiſſion * from the governor of Petit Guaves. That governor having granted them blank commiſſions, Capt. Davis accepted one of them; but as Capt. Swan had received one from the Duke of York, he refuſed it.

Thus reinforced they ſailed towards the gulph of St. Michael, in queſt of Capt. Townly, who with 180 men was ſaid to be croſſing the iſthmus, and the next day they came up with them among the Pearl iſlands; for he had taken two barks, one laden with flour and the other with ſugar, with ſome jars of wine and brandy, part of which he readily diſtributed among the men belonging to Capt. Swan and Capt. Davis, becauſe he wanted the jars, in order to fill them with water.

As it was the latter end of the dry ſeaſon, and all the water on ſhore dried up, they now ſailed to the point of Garrachina, where the natives brought them ſome refreſhments; but meeting no freſh water there, they ſet ſail for Porto Pinas, which obtains its name from the vaſt number of pines that grow there, it being pretty woody; hence it affords an agreeable proſpect, the country riſing from the ſea ſide, by a gentle aſcent to a conſiderable height. Two ſmall rocks at the entrance of the harbour render the paſſage into it narrow, and

* About this time it was very common for this French governor to ſupply with commiſſions not only the Buccaneers, but alſo to give them blank ones for any others with whom they might chance to join company. But though they were in reality no more than licences to hunt, fowl, and fiſh on the iſland of Hiſpaniola, yet, under their ſanction, the latter committed great ravages in America.

it is beſides expoſed to the ſouth-weſt wind, on which account they did not enter the harbour, and were unable to land from the high ſea near the ſhore. They therefore ſteered for Tobago, and in their way took a veſſel laden with cocoas from Guaiaquil, and ſome time after a canoe with four Indians and a mulatto, who having been in the fire-ſhip that was ſent to burn Capt. Davis's veſſel, was immediately hanged; as if all ſtratagems uſed between enemies at war were not allowable.

While they were employed in filling of water and cutting of wood for fuel, at the iſland of Perico, where they had caſt anchor on the 3d of April, they ſent four canoes to the continent, to get ſome ſugar in the adjacent ſugar-works, to make their cocoa up into chocolate, and particularly to get ſome coppers, which were wanted for boiling proviſions, on account of their number being ſo greatly encreaſed, and theſe returned with three coppers.

In the mean while Capt. Davis ſent his bark to the iſland of Otoque, in the bay of Panama, which was inhabited only by negro ſlaves, who bred up a few hogs and fowls; and here the Engliſh met with a meſſenger ſent to Panama, with an account that the Lima fleet was ſailed. But though moſt of the letters were thrown into the ſea, yet from the reſt they underſtood that the fleet was coming under a convoy compoſed of all the ſhips of ſtrength they had been able to aſſemble from Peru. Being informed that the king's ſhips always proceeded that way, they ſailed back on the 10th, to the King's or Pearl iſlands, and the next day anchored at the place where they had been careened, and where they met Capt. Harris, who had brought a freſh ſupply of men from the river St. Maria.

On the 19th, 250 men were ſent in canoes to the river Cheapo, to ſurpriſe the town of that name; the next day all the reſt followed, and on the 22d they arrived at Chepelio, a pleaſant iſland in the

bay of Panama, ſeven leagues from the city of that name, and one from the continent. This iſland lies directly oppoſite to the river Cheapo. It is low on the north ſide, but riſes by an eaſy aſcent to the ſouth. The ſoil is very good, and in the low grounds produces plenty of delicious fruits, as ſapadilloes, avogato pears, mammee ſapatos, ſtar-apples and plaintains; and on the north ſide is a good anchoring place, where there is a fine ſpring of freſh water near the ſhore.

The ſapadillo tree is very like a pear tree, and the fruit reſembles a bergamot pear, only it is ſomething longer. When firſt gathered it is hard, and the juice clammy; but on its being laid by a few days, it becomes ſoft and full of a thin juice. It has two or three black kernels, which reſemble the ſeed of a pompion.

The avogato pear-tree grows as high, or rather higher, than our pear-trees in England, and has a black ſmooth bark, and large oval leaves; the fruit is as big as a large lemon, and is at firſt green; but when ripe turns yellow. The pulp is alſo of a yellowiſh colour, and as ſoft as butter. When they have been gathered three or four days, the rind comes off with eaſe. As this fruit is inſipid, it is commonly eaten with lime juice and ſugar, or with a roaſted plaintain and ſalt. It has a ſtone as big as a horſe plumb. However, this fruit being looked upon by the Spaniards as a great provocative, they have planted it in moſt places of the North Sea, where they inhabit.

The mammee ſapota tree, has neither ſo tall nor ſo thick a trunk as the mammee of Tobago, nor is the fruit either ſo round or ſo large. The rind is ſmooth, and the pulp quite red, with a rough, flat, or longiſh ſtone. This is indeed a pleaſant and wholeſome fruit. There are ſome wild mammee trees, which grow tall and ſtraight, and

are therefore uſed for maſts, but the fruit is not eſteemed.

The ſtar apple ſomewhat reſembles our quince treee, but is much larger, and bears more abundance of broad oval leaves, that almoſt conceal the fruit, which is of the ſize of a large apple, and is eſteemed very good; but Mr. Dampier acknowledges that he never taſted it.

The river of Cheapo riſes in the mountains on the north, and is afterwards incloſed between them and the mountains on the ſouth, it then turns to the weſt, and making a kind of ſemicircle, runs gently into the ſea, ſeven leagues from Panama. But though it is very deep, and a quarter of a mile broad, yet its entrance is ſo choaked up with ſand, that it is only navigable by barks. About ſix leagues from the ſea ſide ſtands the city of Cheapo. On the left bank of the river is a champaign country, which affords a very pleaſant view of ſeveral adjacent hills covered with woods, though the greateſt part is good paſture ground. But on the ſouth ſide of the river a tract of wood land extends for many leagues.

The 250 men who were ſent to this place returned on the 24th, after their having taken the town, without the leaſt oppoſition, but found nothing in it worth mentioning. On the 25th, being joined by Capt. Harris, they ſailed for Tobago, and finding themſelves now 1000 ſtrong, it was conſulted whether they ſhould make an attempt upon Panama. But all thoughts of that expedition were laid aſide, upon their being informed by the priſoners that the inhabitants had received a conſiderable reinforcement from Porto Bello.

On the 4th of May, they ſailed again for the King's Iſlands, and having on the 25th taken three ſeamen at Panama, were informed that a ſtrict order iſſued there, not to fetch any plaintains from the adjacent iſlands, had occaſioned a great ſcarcity,

and that they daily expected the arrival of the fleet from Lima.

On the 28th of May the fleet lay at anchor between two or three ſmall iſlands on the ſouth ſide of Pacheque, and conſiſted of ten ſail, of which only two were men of war. Captain Davis's ſhip carrying 39 guns and 156 men, and Captain Swan's 16 guns and 140 men, the reſt being provided only with ſmall arms, amounted to 960: They had alſo one fire-ſhip, About eleven o'clock they diſcovered the Spaniſh fleet at three leagues diſtance; and about three in the afternoon they ſailed, bearing down right before the wind upon the Spaniards, who kept cloſe on a wind to come up with them; but night approaching, they exchanged only a few ſhot. As ſoon as it began to grow dark, the Spaniſh admiral put out a light at his top as a ſignal for the fleet to come to an anchor; in half an hour after it was taken down, but ſoon appeared as before; which the Engliſh ſuppoſing to be in the admiral's top, kept under ſail; but the Spaniards having put this ſecond light on the top-maſt head of one of their barks, had ſent her to the leeward, ſo that in the morning, the Engliſh fleet found that the enemy had got the weather gage of them, and were coming up with full ſail, which obliged them to make a running fight of it all day, almoſt round the bay of Panama. Mr. Townly being hard preſſed by the Spaniards, was forced to make a bold run between Pacheque, and the three adjacent ſmall iſlands, Captain Harris was forced to weigh from the reſt during the fight; and Captain Gronet, in the flour prize of ninety tons burthen, with 308 men, was a mile to the north of his aſſociates when the enemy appeared, and tacking over to the main, kept himſelf out of the way while there was the leaſt glimmering of danger, for which conduct ſome of the ſhips, the following day, were for diſplacing him; but after

much diſpute, it was agreed to diſmiſs him and his men, moſt of whom were French, and to ſuffer them to keep the ſhip that had been given them, with a charge to quit company immediately. Thus their long projected deſign vaniſhed into ſmoke; but though the Spaniſh fleet, according to the report of ſome priſoners afterwards taken, conſiſted of twenty-four ſail, beſides periaguas or boats of twelve or fourteen oars each, among which were eighteen ſhips of good force, two fire ſhips, and about three thouſand men on board the whole fleet, yet the Engliſh had but one man killed.

On the firſt of June, the fleet ſailed for the iſland of Quibo, or Cobaya, in queſt of Captain Harris, and proceeding to the northward, ſaw many rivers and creeks, which are not near ſo large as on the ſouth ſide of the bay of Panama. The coaſt is partly hilly and partly low grounds, with very thick woods; but in the heart of the country there are fertile plains for feeding of cattle. Some of the rivers on this ſide afford gold, but not in ſuch quantities as thoſe on the other ſide; but there is ſcarce any ſettlement along this coaſt, except upon the rivers that lead to Lavelia and Nata.

On their arrival at Quibo, they found Captain Harris there before them, when it was reſolved that as they had been unſucceſsful in their late attempt, they ſhould now try their fortune by land, by attacking the city of Leon, on the coaſt of Mexico. But as it lay a good way within the land, it was agreed to make canoes on the iſland of Quibo, where they were at anchor, a ſufficient quantity of timber fit for that purpoſe being on the ſpot.

While theſe preparations were making, 150 men were ſent to Puebla Nova, a town at a ſmall diſtance from the continent. They took it without much difficulty, but met with nothing there.

except an empty bark. Having finiſhed all the canoes in a month's time, they ſet out for Rio Leja, which is the port for the city of Leon; and on the 9th of Auguſt, quitting their ſhips, and embarking on board their canoes, of which they had thirty-one, they were in great danger of being ſwallowed up by the waves, which ran mountains high, attended with thunder and lightening, but the ſtorm abated; yet another tornado had like to have ſent them all to the bottom: However this alſo did not laſt long, and they entered the ſouth ſide of the harbour in the night, but did not proceed farther till break of day, when they rowed deeper into the creek, which is very narrow, and the land on both ſides marſhy near the banks, and ſo full of mangrove trees, that there is no paſſing through them. Beyond theſe was a ſmall intrenchment, which they took by ſurpriſe, and having landed 470 men, left the reſt, of which number Mr. Dampier was one, to guard the canoes.

They began their march at eight o'clock in the morning, Captain Townly leading the van, which conſiſted of 100 of the briſkeſt men. Captain Swan followed him with 100 more, next came Captain Davis with 170, and Captain Knight brought up the rear. Captain Townly being advanced two miles before the reſt, was attacked, and having forced ſeventy horſe to retire at the diſtance of four miles from the city, marched forwards, and at three o'clock in the afternoon entered it without oppoſition, though he was ſoon after oppoſed by 200 Spaniſh horſe and 500 foot, firſt in a broad ſtreet, and afterwards in the great market place; but the foot ſeeing the horſe retire, followed their example, leaving the town to the mercy of the Engliſh.

Captain Swan did not enter the the town till four o'clock. Captain Davis came there about five, and Knight came not with the remainder till ſix;

but ſeveral of the men were left behind on account of their growing tired upon the road, among whom was an old grey-headed fellow, named Swan, who was eighty-four years of age, and had ſerved in Ireland under Cromwell, and he bravely refuſing to take quarter, the Spaniards ſhot him dead. They however took ſome others, among whom was Mr. Smith, who having lived a conſiderable time in the Canaries, ſpoke Spaniſh fluently, and being carried before the Governor, was examined as to the ſtrength of the invaders, whom he repreſented to be 1500 men, 1000 in the town, and 500 in the canoes; which had ſuch an effect upon his excellency, that notwithſtanding his being at the head of upwards of 1000 men, he did not chuſe to moleſt them. But the next day ſent a flag of truce to propoſe a ranſom for the town. But the Engliſh demanding 30,000 pieces of eight and proviſions for 1000 men for four months, he refuſed to give it, and they accordingly ſet fire to the city on the 14th of Auguſt, and marched towards their canoes the next morning. However Mr. Smith was exchanged for a gentlewoman, and a Spaniſh gentleman was releaſed, upon his promiſe of delivering 150 oxen for his ranſom at Rio Leja, the place they intended to attack next.

The city of Leon ſtands twenty miles within the country, in a ſandy plain, near a burning mountain, called the volcano of Leon. The houſes are large, and built with ſtone, with gardens about them, but are low, and covered with tiles. It has three churches and a cathedral. The above ſandy plain is ſurrounded with ſavannahs, which afford a free paſſage for the breezes on all ſides, and render the town both pleaſant and healthful. But no great commerce is carried on there, the inhabitants chiefly ſubſiſting on their cattle and ſugar-works, of which there are ſeveral between the landing place and the city; about the midway

between both there is a fine fordable river, and nearer the city an Indian town. The city is alſo ſaid to have a good manufactory of hemp.

On the 16th of Auguſt, in the afternoon, they arrived in their canoes in the harbour of Rio Leja, where their ſhips were by that time come to an anchor. The creek that leads from Rio Leja is broad at its entrance, but afterwards cloſes and becomes a narrow deep channel, lined on both ſides with many cocoa trees. The Spaniards had here caſt up an intrenchment, which fronted the entrance of the creek, and was defended by 120 men, and farther down they had a boom of trees laid acroſs the creek; ſo that had they not wanted courage to keep their poſt, they might have kept off 1000 men. But the Engliſh had no ſooner fired two of their guns, than they quitted it, and left them at liberty to cut the boom, which when the Engliſh had done, they immediately landed, and marched to Rio Leja, a fine town, ſeated in a plain a mile up a ſmall river. It has three churches, and an hoſpital with an handſome garden; they took it without oppoſition, but found nothing conſiderable, except 500 packs of flour, and ſome pitch, tar, and cordage. They alſo received the 150 oxen promiſed by the gentleman they releaſed at Leon, which, together with ſome other cattle, and the ſugar found in the country, was very acceptable. The adjacent country has indeed many ſugar works, and incloſures for cattle, and conſiderable quantities of pitch, tar and cordage, are made by the country people. Rio Leja is however ſeated in an unwholeſome air, near ſome fens and marſhes, which ſend forth a noiſome ſcent. In its neighbourhood grow melons, pine-apples, guavas, and prickly pears.

The ſhrub which bears the guava fruit has long and ſlender boughs, that have a white and ſmooth bark, and leaves reſembling the hazel. The fruit,

which is like a pear, has a thin rind and many hard ſeeds, and when ripe is yellow, ſoft and well taſted. It may be eaten while green, which is the caſe with very few of the fruits either in the Eaſt or Weſt-Indies, and after it is ripe, it may be baked like pears, or coddled like apples. There are however different ſorts diſtinguiſhed by their taſte, ſhape, and colour, ſome being red, and others yellow in the inſide. Before it is ripe it is an aſtringent, but afterwards looſening.

The prickly pear which is alſo common in many places in the Weſt-Indies, grows upon a ſhrub five feet high, and thrives beſt in ſaltiſh ſandy grounds near the ſea ſhore. Each branch of this ſhrub has two or three round leaves of the breadth of a man's hand, not unlike houſe-leek, but edged with prickles of an inch long. At the extremity of the leaf grows the fruit, which is of the bigneſs of a large plumb, ſmall towards the leaf, and thick at the other end, where it opens like a medlar. The fruit has alſo ſmall prickles, and is at firſt green, but by degrees turns red. The pulp is of the ſame conſiſtence as a thick ſyrup, with ſmall black ſeeds; it is cooling, and of a pleaſant taſte. Our author ſays that he has often obſerved, that on eating twenty-two or more of them at a time, they will tinge the urine as red as blood, but without any ill conſequence.

On the 25th, Captain Davis and Captain Swan parted, the firſt in order to return to the coaſt of Peru, and the other intending to proceed farther to the weſt. Upon which Mr. Dampier, deſiring to ſatisfy his curioſity, by obtaining a more perfect knowledge of the northren parts of Mexico, left Captain Davis, and went on board Mr. Swan, who was joined by Captain Townly with his two barks, while Captain Harris and Mr. Knight followed the former.

By this time Mr. Swan's men began to be much afflicted with fevers, which were attributed to the

remains of a contagious diſtemper, that had lately raged at Rio Leja, Capt. Davis's men having undergone the ſame fate. On the 3d of September they ſailed again, ſteered to the weſt, and met with violent tornadoes, thunder and lightning, which kept them out at ſea, ſo that they ſaw no land till the 14th, when they came in ſight of the volcano of Guatimala; it appears with a double peak, like two ſugar-loaves, between which the fire and ſmoke is ſaid to break out before bad weather.

The city of Guatimala is ſituated near the foot of this high mountain, eight leagues from the ſouth ſea, and 40 or 50 from the gulph of Matique, in the bay of Honduras, in the North Seas. It is reputed a rich city, the country about it abounding in ſeveral commodities, which are exported thence into Europe, eſpecially the four noted dyes, indigo, otta or anatta, ſylveſter and cochineal.

The land near the volcano of Guatimala is low by the ſea-ſide, but riſes in a grandual aſcent from thence to the diſtance of about ten leagues from the ſhore. They obſerved floating in the ſea great quantities of drift wood and pumice ſtones, which laſt were thrown out by the mountain, and by the rains waſhed into the ſea.

On the 24th, being in 14°. 30'. north latitude, Capt. Townly went on ſhore with nine canoes, and 106 men, in hopes of finding the town of Teguantapeque, which was well known to be ſituated ſomewhere thereabouts, in order to get ſome refreſhment for the ſick men, both he and Capt. Swan having at leaſt one half of their crews in a very weak condition; but he was obliged to return to his canoes, without being able to find it. The ſhips now coaſted along to the weſt, in ſight of a tract of high land that begins at the eaſt, and after having run for ten leagues within the land to the weſt, ſinks by an eaſy deſcent. On that ſide next the ſea they ſaw rich paſtures, mixed with pleaſant groves, but the ſurf which beat upon the ſhore not

ſuffering the men to land with their canoes, they were forced to continue coaſting for eight or nine leagues, till Capt. Townly, ſeeing no proſpect of landing, returned on board with his men, on the 2d of October. But being ſoon after reſolved to try his fortune again, he ran his canoes aſhore in a ſandy bay, where he landed, but loſt one man, and had moſt of his powder ſpoiled by the water. They were however no ſooner on ſhore, than they found the country full of torrents and unfordable rivers. This obliged them to think of returning to their canoes, which while they were attempting, they were attacked by 200 Spaniards and Indians, whom they ſoon repulſed and put to flight.

Capt. Townly having again rejoined Capt. Swan, they ſtill continued ſailing to the weſtward, but could diſcover neither creek nor bay for 20 leagues farther, when they came to the iſland of Tangola, where there is ſafe anchorage, with plenty of wood and water, and from thence they coaſted along till they came to Guatulco, one of the beſt ports in the kingdom of Mexico. On the eaſt ſide of the entrance of the harbour, about the diſtance of a mile, is a ſmall iſland near the ſhore, and on the weſt ſide of that entrance is a large hollow rock open at the top, from which a column of water forces its paſſage in the manner of a fountain, and riſing to a great height even in the calmeſt weather, affords a good mark to ſeamen, bound for this port. At the bottom of this harbour, which is three miles deep, and one mile broad, there is a fine brook of freſh water, near which formerly ſtood a town that was ſacked by Sir Francis Drake, but there are no ſigns of it now remaining, except the ruins of an old chapel, ſtanding in the midſt of a grove. The land is here covered with a variety of trees, which, riſing in regular ridges, form a very agreeable proſpect.

Capt. Swan being ill, went on ſhore here with all the ſick, and a ſurgeon to attend them, while Capt. Townly marched at the head of a conſiderable number of men to the eaſtward, in ſearch for houſes and inhabitants, and about a league from Guatulco, came up with a river called Capulita, which is very deep, and has a ſwift current; ſome of his men ſwimming acroſs the ſtream, ſeized two Indians, whom they ſuppoſed to be ſtationed there as centinels to watch their proceedings, though they were entire ſtrangers to the Spaniſh tongue. One of theſe they carried on board a ſhip, and made uſe of the other to guide them to an Indian ſettlement, but they found nothing there, beſides ſome vanelloes drying in the ſun.

The vanello is a perfume ſold at a pretty high price in many parts of the Weſt-Indies, and being infuſed into chocolate, gives it a delicate flavour. It grows on a ſmall kind of vine that creeps up about the trees, and at firſt bears a yellow flower, that produces a pod about four or five inches long, which is at firſt green, but when ripe becomes yellow, and has black ſeeds. After they are gathered they are laid in the ſun, which makes them ſoft and of a cheſnut colour. The Spaniards who purchaſe the vanelloes very cheap of the Indians, ſoak them afterwards in oil.

On the 10th of October, they ſent four canoes before, to the weſtward, in hopes of taking ſome priſoners, who were acquainted with the ſituation of the country, and theſe were ordered to wait at Port Angelo. The ſhips at Guatulco had taken in a ſupply of wood and water, as well as plenty of a ſmall kind of turtle, by which the men were greatly refreſhed, they having had no freſh proviſions for a conſiderable time. On the 22d, two of the canoes being ſeparated from the reſt, returned on board, after attempting to land at a place where they ſaw many cattle feeding upon a Savanna, but

the ſea running high, they were overſet, and one man drowned, four guns loſt, and the reſt of their arms ſpoiled with the water. However, the next day 100 men landed at Port Angelo, and got plenty of ſalt, hogs, cocks, hens, and maize, in a houſe near the plain, but could carry little on board, on account of the diſtance of the place from the ſea ſide.

On the 28th they continued their voyage, and at night met with the two other canoes, who had been as far as the port of Acapulco, and in their return took in a ſupply of freſh water, in ſpite of 150 Spaniards, who would have oppoſed them; after which they ſtood in a ſalt water bay, on the banks whereof they found a conſiderable quantity of dried fiſh, which they brought on board. The entrance of this bay is cloſely hemmed in with rocks on both ſides, ſo that the paſſage betwixt them is not above a piſtol ſhot over, though the bay is of conſiderable compaſs. As the ſhips were juſt off the bay, twelve men were ſent in a canoe for more fiſh; but the Spaniards being already alarmed, poſted themſelves behind the rocks, and fired ſuch a volley of ſhot upon the canoes at their entering the bay, that they wounded five of the men. They however rowed forward out of gun-ſhot where they ſtaid two days and three nights, not daring to return the ſame way they came; but at laſt Capt. Townley, who lay near the ſhore, hearing the firing of guns, manned one of his canoes, and driving the Spaniards from the rocks, opened them a free paſſage, and they returned on board on the 21ſt.

On the 2d of November, they continued their courſe weſtward, until they came to a large river, two leagues to the weſt of the rock of Algatroſs, on the banks of which the Spaniards had caſt up an entrenchment, defended by 200 ſoldiers. The Engliſh however landed, and with little oppoſition

forced them to fly. They found there a conſiderable quantity of ſalt, uſed in ſalting the fiſh taken in the bay. They now marched three leagues into the country, and having taken a mulatto priſoner, he informed them that a ſtout ſhip was lately come to Acapulco from Lima; when Capt. Townly ſtanding in need of a better ſhip than his own, propoſed cutting her out of the harbour, and in ſpite of Capt. Swan's remonſtrances on the difficulty of the enterprize, and the neceſſity they were under of ſtocking themſelves with maize, and other proviſions, which were to be had in great plenty where they now were, he carried his point, and the canoes were manned for the expedition; but they narrowly eſcaped being loſt in a tornado, and the men were obliged to wait a whole day in Port Marquiſs, a league to the eaſtward of Acapulco, where they dried their cloaths and arms, and the following night rowed ſoftly into Acapulco harbour; but found the ſhip ſo well guarded, that quitting their enterprize, they retired greatly diſappointed.

They ſome time after landed to the north-weſt of the hill of Petaplan, and 170 men marching fourteen miles into the country, came to a mean poor Indian village, which was deſerted by the inhabitants, who carried off their effects, ſo that they found only a mulatto woman and her four ſmall children, all of whom they brought off; but being carried on board, ſhe declared that ſome mules laden with flour, and other goods deſigned for Acapulco, had ſtopped on the road to the weſt of that village; upon which they ſailed to the harbour of Chequetan, and landing ninety-five men, with the mulatto woman for their guide, ſhe conducted them through a pathleſs wood, by the ſide of a river into a plain, near which they found ſixty mules at a farm houſe laden with flour, cheeſe, chocolate, earthen-ware, and ſome cows,

which they killed, all which they carried off, except the earthen-ware; and ſoon after Captain Swan went on ſhore, and killed eighteen cows without the leaſt oppoſition.

Having thus ſtocked themſelves with as much proviſions as they could conveniently ſtow on board their different veſſels, they diſmiſſed the woman and her children with a preſent of ſome old clothes and other trifles, for which ſhe ſeemed very thankful: but Captain Swan in ſpite of her tears and intreaties, detained one of her boys, who was about eight years of age, had a ſprightly genius, and afterwards proved a very good and uſeful boy, and the captain behaved to him like a kind maſter.

On the 21ſt of November, they continued their courſe to the weſtward, in hopes of diſcovering a town in about 18°. 8'. north latitude; but they could find no traces of it, nor of the city of Colima, which was reported to be very rich: And though they rowed twenty leagues along the ſhore, they could not meet with any place where they were able to land, or perceive the leaſt ſign of inhabitants. At laſt they ſpied a horſeman, and having with difficulty made the ſhore, in hopes of taking him priſoner, they purſued him, but ſoon loſt him in the woods; upon which, they returned on board on the 28th.

The next day, the two captains once more took to their canoes with 200 men, in order to go in ſearch of a town called Salagua; and as they were rowing along the ſhore, ſaw two horſemen on the beach, one of whom by way of deriſion, drank to them out of a pocket bottle; in return for which civility they ſhot his horſe; whereupon his companion fled, and two of the men ſtripping themſelves, ſwam on ſhore, in order to ſecure him; but being unarmed, they could not ſucceed in their attempt, he keeping them at bay with a long knife.

On the 30th, the canoes returned on board, the ſea every where running ſo high, that the men could not find any ſafe landing. However on the firſt of December, they came in ſight of the port of Salagua, which is parted by a rocky point about the middle, that gives it the appearance of two harbours. On their nearer approach, they ſaw a large thatched houſe, which appeared to be new, with a conſiderable body of Spaniards, both horſe and foot, making a military parade, with their drums beating, and colours flying. The next morning 200 of the ſtouteſt of the Engliſh landed; but the Spaniſh foot did not ſtand one charge; and the horſe ſoon followed them, when two of the Engliſh having knocked down their riders, mounted and purſued the fugitives ſo far, that they were ſurrounded, unhorſed, and received ſeveral wounds, and would have certainly been killed, if ſome of the ſwifteſt of their companions had not come up timely to their relief. Here they found a broad ſtoney road leading into the country, which was interſperſed with thick woods. This road, they were informed by two mulattoes whom they made priſoners, led to the city of Oarrah, which was four long days journey from the ſea, and that the body of troops they had put to flight was ſent from that city to ſecure the Manilla ſhip, which was to ſet ſome paſſengers on ſhore at this place.

This induced them to ſail again to the weſtward, towards Cape Corientes, in hopes of meeting with the above galleon; and on the 11th, coming in ſight of that cape, they took their ſtations in ſuch a manner as they imagined would prevent their miſſing her; however wanting proviſions, fifty or ſixty men were ſent in a bark to procure ſome to the weſt of the cape; but returned without being able to get round it. However they left four canoes behind, manned with forty-ſix men, who intended to row to the weſt.

On the 18th, the ſhips ſailed to the iſles of Chametly, eighteen leagues to the eaſt of Cape Corientes. Theſe are five ſmall low and woody iſlands, ſurrounded with rocks that lie in the form of an half moon, within a mile of the continent, between which, and theſe iſlands, there is ſafe anchorage. They are inhabited by fiſhermen, who are ſervants to ſome of the inhabitants of the city of Purification, which is a conſiderable city fourteen leagues up the country.

On the 24th the four canoes which had been left by Captain Townly's bark, returned to the ſhips near the cape, having got round by the help of their oars, and landed in the valley of Valderas or Val d'Iras, the valley of Flags, having met with but indifferent ſucceſs. This valley lies at the bottom of a deep bay, incloſed between Cape Corientes and the Point of Pontique. It is about three leagues wide, and bounded on the land ſide by a green hill, which by its eaſy deſcent into the valley, affords a delightful proſpect, as do the wide ſpread paſtures ſtored with cattle; and the pleaſant groves of guavas, orange, and lime trees; that grow here in vaſt numbers. At this place the canoes had landed thirty-ſeven men, who having advanced three miles into the country, were attacked by 150 Spaniards, horſe and foot; but happily an adjacent wood afforded them a retreat, whence they fired upon the Spaniards, and having killed their leader and ſeventeen more horſemen, obliged them to retire; but in this ſkirmiſh the Engliſh loſt four men, and had two wounded, whom they brought down to their canoes upon horſes, one of which they killed and eat; for though there was plenty of horned cattle in the plain, they were afraid of venturing back for fear of meeting a freſh body of Spaniards.

On the 28th, Captain Townly, who had before ſailed with ſixty men to ſurprize an Indian village,

returned on board with forty buſhels of maize. They continued cruiſing off this cape till the firſt of January, when their proviſions being exhauſted, they ſteered to the valley of Valderas to provide a ſupply of beef. They came to anchor about a mile from the ſhore, and having landed 240 men, of whom fifty were conſtantly employed in watching the motions of the Spaniards, they killed and ſalted as many cows as would ſerve them two months, and had they not wanted ſalt, might have taken a much larger ſupply. Mean while the Spaniards often appeared in large companies, but never dared to attack them. But while they were engaged in this neceſſary buſineſs, the Manilla ſhip paſſed by them to the eaſtward, as they were afterwards informed by ſome priſoners whom they happened to ſeize. The loſs of this great and valuable prize was chiefly attributed to the wilfulneſs of Captain Townly, in reſolving to attempt taking the ſhip in the harbour of Acapulco, when they ought to have been providing themſelves with a ſufficient ſupply of beef and maize. They had hitherto a double deſign in view; firſt the taking of the Manilla ſhip, and ſecondly, ſearching after rich towns and mines near the coaſt, not knowing that theſe all lie in the inland parts of the country. But now finding themſelves quite deceived in their hopes, they parted, Captain Townly ſailing back to the eaſt, and Mr. Dampier in Captain Swan's ſhip to the weſt.

On the 7th of January 1686, they ſailed from their ſtation off the valley of Valderas, and on the 20th, anchored on the eaſt ſide of the Chametly iſlands, which are different from thoſe above-mentioned. They being a knot of ſix ſmall iſlands in 23°. 11'. north lat. and three leagues from the continent; one or two of them have ſome ſandy creeks, and produce a fruit called penguins, of which there are two ſorts, the red and yellow. The

red penguin reſembles a ninepin in ſhape, but is no bigger than an onion. It has no ſtem, but grows immediately out of the ground, ſixty or ſeventy ſometimes riſing upright in a cluſter, encompaſſed with prickly leaves of a foot and a half, or two feet long. The yellow penguin grows on a ſtem of the thickneſs of a man's arm, which riſes a foot from the ground, with leaves half a foot long and an inch broad. The fruit grows in cluſters on the top of the ſtalk, it being round and of the ſize of an hen's egg. The rind is pretty thick, and the pulp, which has a delightful taſte, is full of black ſeeds. Captain Swan here took 100 men with him to the north to diſcover the river Cullacan, ſuppoſed to lie in 4°. north latitude, with a very wealthy town upon its banks; but though they rowed above thirty leagues, they could diſcover no river, nor even any ſafe landing place. However they afterwards landed on the weſt ſide of a ſalt lake, ſeven leagues to the northward of the Chametly iſlands, where they found one houſe, in which they took ſeven or eight buſhels of maize, and were told by an Indian priſoner they had taken, that there was generally a conſiderable number of black cattle in this place, which the Spaniards had driven off, but that they might probably find proviſions at an Indian town, at about five leagues diſtance. They therefore immediately directed their courſe thither, but on their approaching the place, were oppoſed by a good body of Spaniards and Indians, but theſe being beaten back at the firſt charge, they entered the town, where they only found two or three wounded Indians, who told them that the town was called Maſſactan, and that five leagues from thence were two rich gold mines. They ſtaid there till the ſecond of February, when eighty men were ordered to a town called Roſario, on a river of the ſame name, whence they took ninety buſhels more of maize, being at this

time more valued by them than all the gold in the Indies, which was therefore neglected, though they were told that the mines were only two leagues from thence.

From Roſario the ſhips ſteered to the river St. Jago, one of the moſt conſiderable rivers on this coaſt, where Capt. Swan ſent ſeventy men to look for a town, while the ſhips anchored at its mouth. On the eaſt they found a large field of maize, in which they ſeized an Indian, who told them that four leagues farther was a town called Santa Pecaque, of which Capt. Swan being informed, he went with 140 men in eight canoes five leagues up the river, and then landing, marched through fertile plains and woods for three or four hours, and the Spaniards quitting the place at their approach, the Engliſh entered it without oppoſition.

Santa Pecaque is ſeated in a ſpacious plain on the ſide of a wood, but though it is not very large it is neatly built, and has two churches, and like moſt of the Spaniſh towns in theſe parts has a ſquare market place in the middle. At five or ſix leagues diſtance from the town are ſilver mines, the ore of which is carried from this place on mules, twenty one leagues to Compoſtella, the capital of this part of Mexico. This laſt city is inhabited by about ſeventy white families, and 5 or 600 mulattoes and Indians.

As the men found here plenty of maize, ſugar, ſalt, and ſalt-fiſh, Capt. Swan ordered one half of them to carry proviſions on board, while the reſt took care of the town. This they did by turns, and having ſeized horſes, made uſe of them to eaſe them in their labour. Thus they proceeded for two days, but on the 19th of January, Capt. Swan being informed by a priſoner that 1000 armed men had lately marched from St. Jago, a rich town at three leagues diſtance, in order to attack him; he commanded his people to get all the horſes they

could, and to march in a body with all the proviſions they could carry to their canoes: but they refuſing to obey him till all the proviſions could be carried on board, he was forced to let one half of them go on with 54 horſes; theſe had ſcarcely marched a mile, before the Spaniards, who lay in ambuſh, attacked and killed them all upon the ſpot, for though Capt. Swan marched to their relief, they were all ſlain and ſtripped, but as they had probably paid pretty dear for the victory, they never attempted to engage him, by which means Capt. Swan returned on board with the reſt of his men.

The day after this bloody engagement, they ſteered towards California, and on the 7th of February came to an anchor in Prince George's iſland, the middlemoſt of the Tres Marias. Mr. Dampier having been long ſick of the dropſy, was here buried for about half an hour up to the neck in the ſand, which threw him into a profuſe ſweat, and being afterwards wrapped up warm and put to bed in a tent, found great benefit from this extraordinary remedy. They remained careening till the 26th, but as there was no freſh water to be got here in the dry ſeaſon, they ſailed to a little rivulet on the continent near Corientes, where they continued a conſiderable time, when finding that their ſucceſs in this part of the world had been hitherto very indifferent, and that there appeared no probability of its mending, Capt. Swan, Mr. Dampier, and a majority of the other men, agreed to ſteer their courſe for the Eaſt-Indies, though many on board were greatly averſe to this voyage, which they thought it impoſſible for them to accompliſh.

On the 31ſt of March 1686, they ſailed from Cape Corientes, and after the firſt day, advanced very faſt in their voyage, having very fair weather and a freſh trade wind; but in all this voyage, they ſaw neither fiſh nor fowl, except a large flight

of boobies, which appears on their approaching the Ladrone iſlands; and one on the 20th of May they diſcovered land, to their great joy, as they had but three days proviſions left, and the next day came to an anchor about a mile from ſhore, on the weſt-ſide of the iſland of Guam, which Mr. Dampier computes to be 125°. 11'. or 7302 miles weſt of Cape Corientes.

Capt. Swan immediately wrote a very obliging letter, which he ſent with a few preſents to the governor; he in return received great plenty of hogs, cocoa-nuts, rice, biſcuit, and 50 pounds of fine Manilla tobacco, and being afterwards informed by one of the Friars, that Mindanao, one of the Philippine iſlands, abounded with proviſions, they left Guam on the 2d of June, and ſailing with a ſtrong eaſt wind, arrived on the 21ſt on the coaſt of St. John's, one of the Philippine iſlands, and came to an anchor in a ſmall bay on the eaſt ſide of Mindanao.

The Philippians are a range of large iſlands extending from 5°. to 19°. north latitude, the chief of them is Luconia, which is now entirely under the dominion of the Spaniards. To the ſouth of Luconia, are 12 or 14 other large iſlands, beſides an infinite number of ſmaller ones in the poſſeſſion of the Spaniards; but the two ſouthermoſt, thoſe of St. John and Mindanao are the only ones not ſubject to the Spaniſh juriſdiction.

The iſland of St. John lies between ſeven and eight degrees north latitude, about four leagues eaſt of Mindanao, and is 38 leagues in length, its breadth about the middle 24 leagues, and the ſoil is extremely fertile.

Mindanao is next to Luconia, the largeſt of all the Philippine iſlands: It extending 60 leagues in length, and 40 or 50 in breadth; the ſoil is generally good, and the ſtony hills produce many ſorts of trees, which are not at all known among

us. The valleys are watered with brooks and rivulets, and are ſtored with ſeveral ſorts of ever-greens, and with rice, water-melons, plaintains, bananas, guavas, nutmegs, cloves, cocoa nuts, oranges, betel nuts, durions, jackas, and particularly the tree whence ſagoe is gathered, which grows wild in groves of ſeveral miles in length: this is called by the natives the Libby tree.

The Libby tree reſembles the cabbage tree, but is not ſo tall. It has a thin hard bark, full of white pith, like that of the elder. The tree being cut down and ſplit, the pith is taken out and beat well in a trough or mortar, and then pouring water upon it, is well ſtirred, and ſtrained through a cloth, through which the water forces all the mealy ſubſtance, and leaves only an uſeleſs huſk behind, which is thrown away. This, after it is well ſettled, they ſeparate from the water, and form it into cakes, which when baked, are almoſt as good eating as bread, and on this food the natives of Mindanao live for three or four months in the year. The ſagoe which is exported is dried in ſmall bits like confits, and carried to other parts of the Eaſt-Indies. It is an excellent ſtrengthener, and is now well known almoſt over all Europe.

The plaintain tree is about three feet in circumference, and grows to the height of ten or twelve feet. It ſprings out of a ſucker, with only two leaves; but when it is a foot high, another pair of leaves ſprout out, and in the ſame manner both the leaves increaſe in ſize and number to the very top. The fruit which is ſhaped like a hog's pudding, ariſes from the heart of the tree in cods ſix or ſeven inches long, growing in cluſters. When it is arrived at maturity, it is a pure pulp without either ſeed or kernel, as ſoft and yellow as butter, and melts in the mouth like marmalade. The tree, on being cut down, is ſplit in the middle, and left to dry in the ſun, when it appears compoſed of

threads of equal bigneſs, which are drawn out by perſons, who obtain a livelihood by that employment, and are afterwards woven into pieces of cloth of ſeven or eight yards in length. This iſland alſo produces another kind of plaintain of a leſs ſize, the fruit of which has a black ſeed, and is eſteemed a great aſtringent.

The Banana ſeems a ſmaller ſpecies of plaintain, and is more ſoft and delicate though not ſo luſcious. It is beſt eaten when raw, for it is not very agreeable when roaſted or boiled. It is ſometimes maſhed into drink, and is pleaſant enough when taken that way.

The Durion fruit is produced by a tree that reſembles the apple-tree. It is as large as a pomkin, but is not to be eaten till it is quite ripe, when the top burſting open, diffuſes a very fragrant ſmell. The pulp, which is very delicious, is as ſoft and white as cream; it is divided into cells like a walnut, and is like that covered with a thick green rind. In the heart of it, is a ſtone as big as a bean, the out-ſide of which, on being roaſted, peels off, in a thin ſhell, when the kernel in taſte reſembles a cheſnut. But this fruit will not keep above two days after its being plucked.

The Jaca-tree is a fruit of the ſame ſpecies, but yellower and fuller of ſtones or kernels, which are good when roaſted.

The Betel-nut is rounder and larger than the nutmeg, and grows upon a very high tree, which produces no leaves except near the top. This fruit is much valued, it being grateful to the ſtomach. It alſo reddens the lips, cleanſes the gums, and preſerves the teeth, though it dyes them black. It is chewed all over the eaſt, and is apt to make thoſe very giddy who are not uſed to it.

The nutmegs here are extremely large and good; and here alſo are excellent cloves, but the

people do not care to propagate them, for fear of the Dutch, who monopolize the ſpice trade. There are alſo many other different kinds of fruit produced here.

Though this iſland has no beaſts of prey, it affords great numbers of wild and tame beaſts, as horſes, cows, buffaloes, deer, goats, wild hogs, monkeys, guanoes, lizards, ſnakes, and ſcorpions. They have alſo centipedes, which though no thicker than a gooſe quill, are five inches long, and their ſting is as fatal as that of a ſcorpion. Their hogs feed in prodigious herds in the woods, and are remarkable for having thick knobs growing over their eyes. There is alſo here a creature four times as large as a guanoe, which it nearly reſembles; it has a forked tongue, but Mr. Dampier was unacquainted with the effects of its bite.

They have no tame fowls, beſides hens and ducks, but abundance of thoſe which are wild, as turtle doves, pigeons, parrots, parroquetoes, bats as large as our kites, and an infinite number of ſmall birds of various kinds.

Their chief fiſh are bonitos, mullets, breams, cavalies, and turtle. Here are good harbours, creeks and rivers, and in the heart of the country are mountains that afford conſiderable quantities of gold.

The climate of Mindanao is not ſo exceſſive hot as might be expected, conſidering its nearneſs to the equator; for the ſea breezes cool the air by day, as the land winds do by night. From October till May the winds are eaſterly, with fair weather; and from May to October they are weſterly, with rains and violent tempeſts, which frequently tear up the largeſt trees, lay the whole country under water, and oblige the inhabitants to go from houſe to houſe in canoes. This ſtormy weather is in July and Auguſt, but it abates in September, in which month they have very heavy fogs, that laſt until

ten or eleven o'clock in the forenoon, eſpecially if it has rained the preceding night.

The people are in general much alike as to ſtrength, nature, and colour. They are well limbed, have ſmall heads, flat foreheads, ſmall black eyes, ſhort noſes, wide mouths, and black teeth and hair, though their teeth are ſound, and their complexions are of a bright tawny. They are of low ſtature, and have ſmall limbs, are ingenious and nimble, but thieviſh and indolent, civil and obliging to ſtrangers, but implacable when offended. The men are clothed with a turban tied once round the head, in a knot, the ends hanging down, and either laced or fringed; they wear breeches and frocks, but neither ſtockings nor ſhoes.

The women are ſmaller featured than the men, but though they look pretty well at a diſtance, they have ſuch little noſes, that in ſome of them ſcarce any riſing can be diſcerned between their eyes: They have alſo very little feet. They tie their black and long hair in a knot, hanging down behind. Their garments are a piece of cloth that ſerves for a petticoat, and a looſe frock that reaches a little below the waiſt, the ſleeves of which are longer than their arms, and ſet in plaits about their wriſts, but are ſo narrow that they can ſcarcely get their hands through.

They have a peculiar cuſtom in the city of Mindanao: as ſoon as any ſtrangers arrive, the men come on board to invite them to their houſes, where they are ſure to inquire whether any of them have a mind for a pagally, or innocent female friend. The ſtrangers, in point of civility are obliged to accept the offer made them of ſuch a friend, and to ſhew their gratitude by a ſmall preſent, in return for which, they have the liberty to eat, drink, and ſleep in their friends houſe, as often as they pleaſe, paying for it only a trifling gratuity. Some ſtrangers are alſo allowed a female

friend upon the principles of an innocent attachment, and it is not unuſual, for even the wives of the ſultan, and his nobles, who are here allowed to take greater liberties than thoſe of the vulgar, to enquire of any ſtranger who paſſes by, whether he has got a pagally or comrade, and on his anſwering in the negative, to ſend him a preſent of tobacco and betel, as an earneſt of their friendſhip.

The iſland is divided into ſeveral principalities, each governed by its own ſovereign, and for the moſt part, the people in each ſpeak in a different dialect, though they are all of the ſame religion, which is that of Mahometaniſm. The Kilanoones, who inhabit the inland part of the country, are maſters of the gold mines, and are alſo rich in bees wax, both which they exchange with the Mindanaians for foreign commodities. The Salogues, who inhabit the north-weſt end of the iſland, carry on a trade with Manilla, and ſome other of the adjacent iſlands. The Altoores were formerly under the ſame government with the Midanaians; but were ſeparated from them, by falling to the ſhare of the younger children of the Sultan of Mindanao, who of late has laid claim to them again. There are ſeveral other nations, but that which is the moſt populous and extenſive is Mindanao, whence the iſland derives its name, the inhabitants of which being near the ſea, and engaged in commerce, are pretty much civilized.

The city of Mindanao is ſeated near a ſmall river on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, and two miles from the ſea. The houſes are there built upon poſts, eighteen or twenty feet high, having but one floor, to which there is an aſcent by a ladder; but that floor is divided into ſeveral rooms. The roof is of palm leaves, and in the ſpace under the houſes, the poorer ſort of the people keep their poultry,

and others empty their dirt, where it lies till the land floods carry it away.

The Sultan's houſe ſtands upon 150 great poſts, and is much higher than the reſt, with a broad ſtair-caſe leading up to it. In the hall ſtand twenty pieces of cannon, placed on field carriages. The general and other great men have alſo ſome great guns in their houſes. Their Sultan has another houſe near the former, which is not more than four feet from the ground; and here he and his council ſit croſs-legged on rich carpets, when they give audience to ambaſſadors and foreign merchants; and as no chairs are uſed in the country, the floors of the houſes are in general well matted.

The food of the common people is rice, ſagoe, and ſome ſmall fiſh; but the better ſort eat buffaloes and fowls, though a great deal of rice with them. Like the other eaſtern nations, they uſe no ſpoons, but take up their victuals in their fingers. They waſh after meals, and pour all their water upon the floor near the fire ſide, when it ſinks through; and where any are ſick, they eaſe themſelves through a hole made for that purpoſe in the floor of their bed-chamber; but thoſe who are in health perform this in the river. They are extremely fond of bathing, which is a great refreſhment in theſe hot countries; and it is not uncommon for the natives to walk into the river, ſtrip themſelves there, waſh their cloaths, put them on upon the ſame ſpot, and then walk about their buſineſs.

Almoſt every one is either a carpenter, black-ſmith, or goldſmith. They build good ſerviceable ſhips both for trade and pleaſure, and deal in gold, bees-wax, and tobacco, the laſt of which is better than that of Manilla.

The moſt common diſtempers are fluxes and gripings of the guts, fevers and agues, for which the country affords ſufficient medicines, that are

far from being unknown to the people. They are alſo very ſubject to leproſies, which after their being cured, leave large blotches upon the ſkin.

Some of the inhabitants ſpeak Spaniſh, for the Spaniards had formerly ſome footing among them; but the Malayan tongue, and that of Mindanao, are the commoneſt languages. They are afraid of the Dutch and Spaniards, and have often invited the Engliſh to ſettle among them.

Though the Sultan is deſpotic, he is very poor, notwithſtanding his having the power of commanding every private ſubject's purſe at his pleaſure. He was between fifty and ſixty years old, and beſides his ſultanna, had twenty-nine concubines. When he went abroad, he was carried in a litter upon four men's ſhoulders, attended by a guard of eight or ten men, but he never ventured far from the city; for the country being woody, is incommodious for travelling. He however ſometimes took his pleaſure upon the water in a neat veſſel, built for that purpoſe, in which was a cabbin made of bamboo, and divided into three rooms; in one of them he frequently repoſed himſelf upon a carpet, ſmall pillows being laid for his head, his women attended in the ſecond, and in the third, ſervants waited with tobacco and betel.

His ſoldiers in their wars make uſe of ſwords, lances, and a weapon much like a bayonet, which all perſons from the greateſt to the meaneſt always wear about them. They never fight any pitched battle in the field; but make ſmall wooden forts defended by guns, in which they encamp and endeavour to ſurprize one another by ſmall parties, but they never give or take quarter.

As they are Mahometans, they have their ſabbath on Friday, when the Sultan goes twice to his moſque, wherein there is a great drum with only one head, which is ſtruck with a large ſtick, knobbed at the end with cotton, at 12, 3, 6, and 9 of the

clock, by day and night, and this ſerves inſtead of a clock.

They ſeldom or never circumciſe their children, till they are eleven or twelve years of age, which, as it is done with great ſolemnity, private people keep their children till ſome man of quality circumciſes his, and ſo make a general circumciſion. This office is performed by a Mahometan prieſt, who holding the foreſkin, ſnips it off with a pair of ſciſſars. They keep the ramadam, like the other Turks, in Auguſt, beginning at one new moon, and continuing till they ſee the next; during which time, they keep a very rigorous faſt till the evening, when they employ an hour in prayer, and afterwards go to ſupper.

Their only muſic is that of bells without clappers, which are commonly ſixteen in number, and increaſe in weight from three to ten pounds; theſe being ſtruck with a ſtick, produce an uncouth noiſe; for the harmony that might be produced from them, is deadened by their being placed upon a table. Mr. Dampier obſerved a ſet of theſe, in the houſe of Raja Laut, the Sultan's brother, who was both chief miniſter and general, and his ſon being about to be circumciſed, gave occaſion to their being uſed for ſeveral days together, before the performance of the ceremony. There are however women who ſing, and not only dance in concert to their voices, but are joined by other people, and even the Sultan's children do not diſdain to dance with them.

They have a particular averſion to ſwine's fleſh, and will not permit any one who has touched a hog, to enter their houſes, for ſeveral days after; yet there are great numbers of theſe animals, that run wild about the iſland, and which they frequently deſired Captain Swan's men to deſtroy, but would not converſe with them for ſeveral days after they had been thus defiled. The following is a remark-

able inſtance of their ſuperſtition in this reſpect: Raja Laut, the Sultan's brother, once deſired to have a pair of ſhoes of one of the ſailors, but being afterwards told that they were ſewed with thread pointed with hog's briſtles, he ſent them back in a great paſſion, deſiring to have another pair ſewed in ſome other manner, and his requeſt being complied with, he appeared highly ſatisfied.

As the ſeaſon of the year was far advanced, Capt. Swan imagining he ſhould be under the neceſſity of ſtaying there ſome time, reſolved to make what intereſt he could with the Sultan, and therefore ſent Mr. Moore on ſhore, with a preſent of three yards of ſcarlet cloth, and three of ſilver lace. He had an audience granted him at about nine o'clook at night, and was very graciouſly received; the Sultan diſcourſing above an hour with him in Spaniſh, and an excellent ſupper was provided for him, and thoſe who went with him before they returned on board. Captain Swan paid the Sultan a viſit the following day, and was entertained with betel and tobacco. He was alſo ſhewn a letter from the Eaſt-India company to the Sultan; for they had at that time ſome notion of building a fort there. Raja Laut being at variance with the Sultan, when Captain Swan conferred with his majeſty, was not preſent; but he waited for him on his return from court, and treated him and his men very handſomely, with fowls and boiled rice. He was a man of quick underſtanding, ſpoke and wrote Spaniſh very well, and was fond of converſing with ſtrangers, by which means he was pretty well acquainted with the cuſtoms of the Europeans. He was very friendly in his advice to Captain Swan, to whom he made an offer of his houſe, and during his ſtay upon this iſland, entertained both him and his men in a very hoſpitable manner. This great man had ſeveral wives, with each of whom he lay by turns, and with the mother of his eldeſt

ſon, two nights running. She who was queen of the night had always a particular reſpect ſhewn to her all day, and wore a ſtriped ſilk handkerchief by way of diſtinction.

The tempeſtuous weather now approaching, the ſailors hauled the ſhip up the river, 50 or 60 fiſhermen lending their aſſiſtance; after which they moored her in a hole dug for that purpoſe, wherein ſhe was always afloat, and here many citizens came on board of her, who ſoon provided the men with pagallys, and Capt. Swan being generally attended at dinner with his trumpets, Raja Laut was greatly delighted with the muſic.

During the wet ſeaſon, the city of Mindanao, which is a mile in length, and ſtretches along the bank of the river, was a perfect pond, and the floods frequently waſhed down large pieces of timber from the country, that would have endangered the veſſel, had not great care been taken to prevent it. As ſoon as the floods began to ſubſide, Capt. Swan hired a warehouſe, in which he depoſited his goods and ſails, in order to careen the ſhip, when it was ſurpriſing to ſee the multitude of worms that had eaten into her bottom, during her ſtay in this harbour. But having new ſheathed her, they ſteered out on the 10th of December, when they began to take in rice, and to fill their water. But the king's brother who had his views in delaying the veſſel, conſtantly kept ſeveral of the men on ſhore, hunting of black cattle, under the pretence of ſtocking the ſhip with beef. However Mr. Dampier, who made one in theſe excurſions, obſerves, that in ten days they met with only four cows, none of which they were able to run down.

At this time, Captain Swan had, as our author imagines, ſome thoughts of quitting Mindanao, in order to take in a lading of ſpice, in a neighbouring iſland, which is ſince fallen into the hands

of the Dutch. However, moſt of his men expected that he would have continued privateering, to which he had an utter averſion, though he carefully concealed it from his people.

The day after Chriſtmas-day, Raja Laut had a hunting match, in ſearch of black cattle, in which he was accompanied by five or ſix Engliſhmen, and all his wives: but in this hunting match, they killed but three heifers. However, he and his company got drunk two or three times, with a pleaſant extract of rice.

At this time one of the Engliſh ſailors happening accidentally to find Capt. Swan's journal, in which he had taken notice of the ſlighteſt offences of every ſailor on board, and was even laviſh of invectives againſt the whole crew in general, he ſhewed it to the reſt of his comrades, who upon this, reſolved to depoſe Capt. Swan, which they accordingly did, chuſing Mr. Read, captain in his room, and Mr. Teate, maſter; and leaving him with 36 men on ſhore, ſet ſail on the 14th of January, 1687, in order to cruize before Manilla.

Our author having ſailed from Mindanao, with the greateſt part of the crew, anchored on the 3d of February, off an iſland in 9°. 15'. on the weſt ſide of the iſland of Sebo, where they took in water, and ſcrubbed their ſhip's bottom. It is about eight or ten leagues in length, and in the middle of the bay they ſaw a great number of bats of a prodigious ſize, ſome of whoſe wings when extended, reached eight feet from tip to tip, and were edged with ſharp, crooked claws, with which they clung faſt to any thing whereon they happened to lay hold. Every night they obſerved vaſt ſwarms of theſe bats take their flight towards the great iſland, and return to the ſmall one in the morning.

On the 10th of February they weighed, and coaſting along by the weſt ſide of the Philippines, paſſed by Panga, a large iſland inhabited by the Spaniards. They there ſaw many fires, ſuppoſed

to be lighted to give notice of their approach; the ſight of a ſhip on this coaſt being very uncommon. On the 18th, they came to an anchor at the north end of Mindora, a large iſland forty leagues in length; a ſmall brook of water ran into the ſea, near the place where they were at anchor; and they ſaw great numbers of hogs and oxen, but they were ſo wild, that they could catch or kill none of them. While they were here, a canoe with four Indians came from Manilla, who told them that the harbour of Manilla was ſeldom without twenty or thirty veſſels, belonging to the Chineſe, Portugueſe, and Spaniards, and that if they had a mind to carry on a clandeſtine trade, they would deliver their letters to certain merchants who reſided there.

On the 21ſt, they again ſet ſail, and two days after came to the ſouth-eaſt end of the iſland of Luconia, when they took two Spaniſh barks, bound from Pagaſſanam in this iſland to Manilla.

The iſland of Luconia or Manilla, extends ſix or ſeven degrees in length, and near the middle is ſixty leagues broad. It is ſurrounded by many ſmall iſlands, eſpecially at the north end; the chief and the neareſt to it is Mindora, which gives its name to a channel that runs between that iſland and Luconia*. Though this iſland is ſituated in 15°. north latitude, it is eſteemed to be in general extremely healthy; and the water that is found upon it, is ſaid to be the beſt in the world. It is partly compoſed of large plains of paſture ground, and partly of mountains, which afford ſome gold. It produces all the fruits of the warm climates, and the ſavannas or plains are well ſtored with buffaloes, cows, ſheep, goats, hogs, and a moſt ex-

* Mr. Dampier had the greateſt part of this deſcription from Mr. Coppinger, the ſurgeon on board, who came to this iſland from the coaſt of Coromandel. But with his deſcription, we have incorporated that given by Mr. Walter, in his account of Commodore Anſon's voyage.

cellent breed of horſes, ſuppoſed to be carried thither firſt from Spain. The inhabitants who live in ſmall towns are Indians, under the Spaniſh juriſdiction, and inſtructed in the Romiſh religion, by the Spaniſh prieſts. It is well ſeated for the Indian and Chineſe trade; and the bay and port of Manilla, which lie on its weſt ſide, are, perhaps, the moſt remarkable on the whole globe, the bay being a large circular baſon, near ten leagues in diameter, great part of it entirely land locked. On the eaſt ſide of this bay, ſtands the city of Manilla, which is large and populous, and is ſeated at the foot of a ridge of high hills, fronting the harbour. The houſes are ſpacious, ſtrong, and covered with tiles, and the ſtreets large and regular, with a market place in the middle; and it has many handſome churches and convents. The city is well watered, and is in the neighbourhood of a fruitful and plentiful country. A conſiderable part of the buſineſs of this place, is its trade to Acapulco.

The time of the year being too far ſpent to think of trade, they reſolved to ſail for Pulo Condore, the chief of a knot of ſmall iſlands on the coaſt of Cambodia, and to return in May, in order to wait for the Acapulco ſhip. They accordingly ſailed from Luconia on the 26th of February, and on the 14th of March, came to an anchor on the north ſide of Pulo Condore two miles from the ſhore.

This iſland is five leagues long, and is the only one among theſe ſmall iſlands that is inhabited. It produces ſeveral ſorts of trees, among which is a very tall one, three or four feet diameter, in which the inhabitants make an horizontal inciſion half way through, a foot from the ground, and then cutting the upper part a-ſlope inwardly down, till it meets with a tranſverſe inciſion, a liquor diſtils into a hollow, made in the ſemicircular ſtump, which, when boiled, becomes good tar,

and if boiled ſtill more, acquires the conſiſtence of pitch, for which it is uſed. One of theſe trees affords two quarts of this juice every day, for a month together, and then drying up, recovers again.

This iſland alſo produces mangoes, a fruit about the bigneſs of a ſmall peach, very juicy and pleaſant, and has ſo fragrant a ſcent, as to perfume the air at ſome diſtance. Of the green fruit, a very good pickle is made, by cutting it in half, and mixing it with ſalt, vinegar, and cloves of garlick.

Grapes grow in this iſland on a ſtraight tree, the trunk is a foot in diameter, upon which the fruit are in cluſters, about the body of the tree, in the ſame manner as the fruit of the cocoa tree. Of theſe, there are both red and white grapes, which nearly reſemble ours, and are of a pleaſant vinous taſte.

This iſland likewiſe abounds in wild nutmeg trees, of the ſize of our walnut trees, and the fruit, like our walnuts, grows amongſt the boughs. It is, however, ſmaller than the true nutmeg, but though it exactly reſembles it, it is without either ſmell or taſte.

Here are ſeveral ſorts of fowl, as turtle doves, pigeons, wild cocks and hens, parrots and parroquetoes; and alſo hogs, guanoes, and lizards; and the ſea affords turtles, limpets, and muſcles. There are many freſh water brooks, which for ten months in the year run into the ſea. The inhabitants of the iſland of Polu Condore, originally came from Cochin-China, and are of a middle ſtature, but well ſhaped, and of a much darker complexion than the Mindanaians. Their hair is ſtraight and black; their eyes are of the ſame colour, but ſmall, as are their noſes, though they are pretty high: they have thin lips, little mouths, and white teeth: They are very civil. But though the iſland is

conveniently ſituated for carrying on a trade with Japan, China, Manilla, Tonquin, and Cochin-China, yet the natives are poor, and have no other employment than gathering the juice of the tar-tree, and making turtle oil, by boiling the fat of the turtle for that purpoſe, which they export to Cochin-China.

They offer their women to all ſtrangers for a trifle, a cuſtom which is not peculiar to theſe iſlands, ſince it is alſo uſed at Pegu, Siam, Cochin-China, Cambodia, and other places in the Eaſt-Indies, as well as on the coaſt of Guinea in Africa.

They are Pagans, and our author imagines that they worſhip idols in the figure of an elephant and a horſe, he having obſerved a repreſentation of the former, in a temple on the ſouth of the iſland, and an image of the latter, on the outſide. This temple ſtood in a ſmall village, and was a mean edifice, built of wood.

They remained at this iſland from the 16th of March to the 16th of April, in which time they careened the ſhip, and made a freſh ſuit of ſails out of the cloth taken on board the Spaniſh prize. During their ſtay, the people ſupplied them with hogs, turtle, and fruit, in exchange for which they gave them rice. They afterwards went to the north ſide of the iſland, to take in freſh water. They then ſailed for the bay of Siam, which they entered on the 24th of April, and afterwards ſteered to Pulo Ubi, where they had touched in their paſſage. Here they found two veſſels at anchor, laden with lacquer, uſed in japanning: They were bound from Champa to Malacca, and had 40 briſk ſociable ſailors on board, armed with lances, ſwords and ſome guns.

On the 21ſt of May they returned to Pulo Condore, where they found a ſmall bark at anchor, when Capt. Read ſending a canoe to hail her, charged his men not to venture on board, without

having firſt made friends of the people, whom he ſuſpected to be Malayans; diſregarding his orders, they boarded her without ceremony; but were ſoon obliged to retreat, being attacked with creſſets, a kind of bayonets, ſo that they were obliged to leap into the ſea, and to ſecure their eſcape by ſwimming; and it is very remarkable, that one Daniel Wallis ſwam for ſome minutes, till he was taken up, though he had never practiſed it before, nor was ever able to repeat it again. In revenge for this treatment, Capt. Read ſent two canoes filled with men well armed, to chaſtiſe the Malayans in the bark; but having firſt cut a hole in the bottom of the veſſel, they ſunk her, and then eſcaped into the woods.

On the 4th of June 1687, they weighed from Pulo Condore, intending to cruize of Manilla, but the eaſt wind continuing five or ſix days together with great violence, brought them near the coaſt of China; and on the 26th, they came to anchor on the north-eaſt end of St. John's iſland, in 22°. 30'. north latitude.

The ſhore of this laſt iſland is for the moſt part covered with trees; the ſoil is in general fertile, and affords good paſture, and there are ſome groves ſcattered about the inland parts. Bullocks, buffaloes, goats, and China hogs abound here. Theſe laſt are all black, with ſmall heads, thick necks, very ſhort legs, and great bellies, which ſweep the ground. But though there are no wild fowl, there are plenty of tame ducks, cocks, and hens. The natives live for the moſt part by cultivating the earth, which produces rice. They are tall, ſtraight bodied men, with long viſages, and tawny complexions; they have high foreheads, ſmall eyes, aquiline noſes, black hair, and ſtraggling beards. They were formerly very proud of their hair; but when the Tartars made a conqueſt of China, they obliged them to ſhave their heads, reſerving only

one lock on the crown, which they ſuffered to grow to a great length, generally platting it, though ſometimes they let it flow looſe. They never wear a covering for their head, but inſtead of it, uſe an umbrella; or if they have but a little way to go, they make uſe of a large fan; they wear ſlippers on their feet, but no ſtockings; and their covering is a light frock and breeches. The women of any diſtinction, like thoſe on the continent of China, cannot walk far on account of the ſmallneſs of their feet, which are ſwathed up tight in their infancy, to prevent their growing, ſmall feet being eſteemed a great beauty. They work very well at their needles, and are curious in embroidering their ſhoes; but the poorer ſort of women wear neither ſhoes nor ſtockings, and their feet are ſuffered to grow larger that they may have it in their power to earn their bread.

In the iſland of St. John is a ſmall town built upon poſts, in a marſhy ground, but the houſes are mean, low, and ill-furniſhed. While they were here at anchor, a Chineſe junk lay near them; ſhe was flat, both at the head and ſtern, had little huts on her deck three feet high, covered with palmetto leaves, and a large cabbin with an altar and a lamp burning in it. The hold was divided into ſeveral partitions, each of them ſo tight, that if a leak ſhould ſpring in one, the goods in the next would receive no damage. Every merchant had his particular room, where he ſtowed his goods and ſometimes lodged in it himſelf. Theſe junks have only a mainmaſt and foremaſt, the former with the ſail narrow aloft, like that of a ſloop; and the latter has a ſquare ſail, and ſquare yard. In fair weather they alſo uſe a topſail, which they haul down on the deck in foul weather, yard and all. The mainmaſts of the largeſt junks, are as big as any of our third rate men of war, and not pierced, being all of one tree.

On the 3d of July, perceiving all the ſigns of an approaching ſtorm, they haſtily weighed anchor, and made what haſte they could out to ſea, with a view of having ſufficient room, and at about eleven at night, the wind coming to the north-eaſt, they had a moſt violent tempeſt, which laſted till about four in the morning, when the hopes of the men were revived, by ſeeing a Corpus Sanctum upon the main-maſt, which they conſidered as a fore-runner of good weather, yet had this been upon deck, the ſuperſtitious ſailors would have conſidered it as a ſign of their deſtruction. The Corpus Sanctum is a ſmall glittering meteor reſembling a ſtar, and is frequently ſeen dancing about a ſhip in hard weather.

About eleven o'clock the following day, there was a flat calm, after which, the ſtorm returned with more violence than ever, and laſted by intervals till the 6th, when the weather proved very ſerene; but the men being extremely terrified by this laſt ſtorm, and dreading the approaching full-moon, reſolved to ſteer towards the Piſcadores or Fiſher Iſlands, in 23°. north latitude. Theſe are a good number of iſlands that lie between the iſland of Formoſa, and the continent of China. Betwixt the two eaſtern-moſt is a good harbour, where they caſt anchor; and on the weſt ſide of the latter is a large town, with a fort that commands the harbour, defended by a garriſon of 300 Tartars. The houſes are low, but neatly built. Some of the men going on ſhore, were carried before the governor, who being informed that they were Engliſh who intended to trade, uſed them in a very friendly manner, told them that he would give them aſſiſtance, but that they muſt not pretend to trade there, it being abſolutely forbidden. He however ſent a preſent to the captain, of a ſmall jar of flour, ſome cakes of fine bread, about a dozen

of pine apples, and a few water melons. The next day, an officer who made a very grand appearance, came on board with a looſe coat, with breeches and boots of black ſilk, and a black ſilk cap, upon which was a plume of black and white feathers, bringing on board a preſent from the governor, of a very fine fat heifer, four goats, two large hogs, twenty large flat cakes of bread, two baſkets of flour, two jars of ſam-ſhu, or arrack, and fifty-five jars of hoc-ſhu, a ſtrong pleaſant liquor extracted from wheat, reſembling mum. Captain Read, in return for theſe preſents, ſent the governor a gold chain, an Engliſh carabine, and a curious Spaniſh ſilver hilted rapier, and cauſed the nobleman to be ſaluted with three guns at his paſſing over the ſhip's ſide.

On the 29th of July, they left the Piſcadores, and ſteered for ſome iſlands between Formoſa and Luconia, known by no other name than the Five Iſles; and on the 6th of Auguſt came to an anchor on the eaſt ſide of the northern-moſt, in 20°. 20'. north latitude. They imagined that theſe iſlands were uninhabited; but, to their great ſurpriſe, they found three large populous towns, on the eaſt ſide of this laſt iſland, all within a league of the ſea. To one of theſe iſlands they gave the name of Prince of Orange iſland: This is about eight leagues long and two broad. To the northern-moſt, which is four leagues long, and a league and a half wide, Mr. Dampier gave the name of Grafton, in honour of the duke of Grafton, in whoſe family his wife then lived; and to a third, which lies ſouth of Grafton iſland, they gave the name of Monmouth iſland, in honour of the duke of Monmouth. This laſt iſland is three leagues long and one broad; theſe were the largeſt of the number. One of the others they called Baſhee, from a pleaſant liquor of that name; and the other they

termed Goat-iſland, from the number of goats they ſaw upon it.

Though Orange-iſland is the largeſt of the five, it is uninhabited on acount of its being rocky and barren, but Grafton and Monmouth iſlands contain many people; and there is one town in Goat-iſland.

The hills of theſe iſlands are rocky, but the vallies have plenty of graſs, and are well watered with freſh running ſtreams. They produce pine-apples plantains, bananas, ſugar-canes, cotton, pompions, and potatoes, and are well ſtored with goats and hogs.

The natives are of a dark copper colour, and are ſhort and ſquat, with round faces, low foreheads, and thick eyebrows. Their eyes are of an hazle colour, and ſmall, but much bigger than thoſe of the Chineſe; they have ſhort noſes; their lips and mouths are of a middle ſize; they have white teeth, and black thick lank hair, which they crop ſhort, ſcarcely permitting it to cover their ears. They go always bareheaded, and the men have no other clothes but a cloth about their middle, and ſome of them a jacket made of a plaintain leaf, which is as rough as a bear's ſkin. The women have, however, a ſhort petticoat of coarſe callico, of their own making, which reaches a little below their knees. But both ſexes wear ear-rings made of a pale yellow metal, reſembling gold, which they dig out of the mountains. Mr. Dampier acknowledges that he did not know whether it was really that valuable metal or not; but obſerves, that though it looked at firſt of a fine colour, it afterwards fades; which made the people on board ſuſpect it, and prevented their purchaſing much of it. Their rings and other ornaments, made of this metal, the natives rub over with a paſte of red earth, then throw them into a quick fire, till they are red hot, in which

condition they throw them into water to cool, and then rubbing off the paſte, they appear of a beautiful luſtre.

Their houſes are ſmall, and ſcarcely five feet high, made with ſmall poſts, wattled with boughs. At one end of them they have a fire place, near which are boards, whereon they lie to ſleep on the ground. They live together in ſmall villages, built on the ſides of rocky hills, three or four rows one above another. Theſe precipices are ſaid to be framed by nature alone into different degrees, or, as it were, deep ſteps or ſtories: upon each of which they build a row of their houſes, each row being above the other, and to theſe rows they aſcend by ladders ſet in the middle from one row to another, which being drawn up, there is no poſſibility of climbing to attack them; and to prevent their being aſſaulted from above, they chuſe a ſituation where the back of the rock forms a ſteep precipice next the ſea. There is a kind of a ſtreet to every row of houſes, which runs parallel with the tops of the houſes in the row beneath.

Theſe people are very ingenious, for they underſtand the uſe of iron, work it themſelves, and build very neat boats, which reſemble our yawls. They have alſo larger veſſels, managed with twelve or fourteen oars. The women manage the affairs of huſbandry, while the men employ themſelves in fiſhing. With reſpect to their food, they make a diſh of locuſts, which at certain ſeaſons of the year come to devour their plants. Theſe they catch in nets, and afterwards broil or bake them in an earthen pan; and this diſh is not ill taſted. Their ordinary drink is water; but they have a liquor, which in taſte and colour reſembles Engliſh beer, and this is made of the ſugar-cane, boiled and mixed with blackberries, which they afterwards put into jars, and let it work for five or ſix days, when it becomes a ſtrong and pleaſant liquor, and

is called baſhee. Their language has no affinity either with the Chineſe or Malayan; but our author obſerves, that bullawar, which ſignifies gold among the Indians of the Philippine iſlands, is the name they give to the yellow metal already mentioned.

The only arms uſed by theſe people are lances, headed with iron. They wear a kind of armour made of a buffaloe's ſkin, which reaches down to the calves of their legs, and has ſleeves; it is at the bottom pretty wide, but comes cloſe about the ſhoulders, and is as ſtiff as a board. Mr. Dampier could perceive nothing like religion amongſt them, or any thing like civil government; there ſeeming to be no man above the reſt, except in his own family, for children behaved with great reſpect to their parents. Yet they appeared to have ſome ſort of laws; for during our author's ſtay there, he ſaw a young man buried alive, as he ſuppoſed for theft. Each man has but one wife, who treats him with reſpect. The boys are educated to fiſhing, and the girls work with their mothers in the plantations, which are in the valleys, where every perſon plants as much ground as is ſufficient for the neceſſities of the family. They are a civil, quiet people, both to ſtrangers, and among themſelves, and though there was ſometimes occaſion for it, they never quarrelled with the Engliſh, while they were there. They have no coin; but part with their yellow metal in grains by gueſs.

When the ſhip firſt came to an anchor, the natives had ſo little ſuſpicion of being injured, that above 100 boats came round the veſſel, and thoſe who rowed them made no ſcruple of going on board; during all the time they ſtayed there, they plentifully ſupplied the men with hogs and goats, diſpoſing of a hog of fourſcore pounds weight, for two or three pounds of iron, and a good fat goat for an old iron hoop; beſides a great quantity of

yams, potatoes, and baſhee, for old nails, ſpikes, and leaden bullets.

While they continued at theſe iſlands, a violent ſtorm aroſe, which drove them out to ſea, and they were ſeveral weeks expoſed to the violence of the tempeſt, before they could get back to the baſhee iſland. This laſt ſtorm ſo diſcouraged the men, that they reſolved to lay aſide the deſign of cruiſing before Manilla, and they were now more inclined to ſteer to England, than to undertake any other enterprize. However, they were induced by the perſuaſions of Captain Read to ſteer for Comorin. But as the eaſtern monſoon was at hand, our author obſerves, that their neareſt and beſt way would have been to have paſſed through the ſtreights of Malacca; but Mr. Teate perſuaded them to go round to the eaſt of the Philippines, and keeping ſouth of the ſpice iſlands, to paſs into the Indian ocean about the iſland of Timor.

On the 3d of October they ſailed from theſe iſlands to the ſouth, and on the 16th came to an anchor between two iſlands that lie to the ſouth-eaſt of Mindanao, where they hauled their ſhip on ſhore to clean her bottom, and made for her a fore-top-maſt, a fore-yard, a boltſprit, and a new pump.

While they lay here, a young prince belonging to one of the adjacent ſpice iſlands came on board, and told them that Capt. Swan and ſome of his men were ſtill in the city of Mindanao, where they were highly eſteemed for the great ſervices they had performed in fighting againſt the Alfoores. As they were now ſo near him, Mr. Dampier attempted to perſuade ſome of the men to ſubmit to his command; but this coming to Capt. Read's knowledge, he took effectual meaſures to prevent it. They were however afterwards informed, that moſt of Mr. Swan's men got off in different ſhips; but that himſelf and the ſurgeon, going on board a Dutch veſſel in that road, were overſet by the

natives, and drowned; and that there was reaſon to ſuſpect that this was done by Raja Laut's order, as well for the ſake of ſome gold the captain had in his poſſeſſion, and which fell into his hands at Mr. Swan's death, as in revenge for his having uttered ſome few ſlighting expreſſions againſt him.

On the 2d of November. Capt. Read left theſe iſlands, ſteering a ſouth-eaſt courſe, and on the 22d, ſtanding three leagues to the ſouthward of the iſland of Celebes, they perceived a large proa, in which were 60 men, attended by ſix ſmaller ones, whom they ſtrove in vain to allure on board, by ſhewing them Dutch colours. On this coaſt they found cockles of ſo extraordinary a ſize, that the meat of one of them was ſufficient to ſerve ſeven or eight people.

On the 6th of December, Mr. Read came to an anchor in an harbour on the eaſt ſide of the iſland of Bouton, in 4°. 54'. ſouth latitude. This iſland is twenty-five leagues in length, and four in breadth. Within a league of the harbour, and half a mile from the ſea, is a long town called Callafuſung, ſeated on the top of a ſmall hill, in a pleaſant plain, encloſed with a wall of cocoa trees, and beyond theſe with a ſtrong ſtone wall. The inhabitants are not unlike the Mindanaians, though they are more cleanly. They are Mahometans, and ſpeak the Malayan tongue. They are governed by a Sultan, who hearing that the ſhip was Engliſh, came on board attended by ſome of his nobles, and three of his ſons, and aſſured Capt. Read, that he was at liberty to trade with his ſubjects for whatever he pleaſed, and that he was ready to ſerve him to the utmoſt of his power. Mr. Read cauſed him to be ſaluted with five guns on his coming on board, and on his returning on ſhore, with the ſame number. The natives readily brought fowls, eggs, potatoes, and other proviſions on board; and the following day Capt. Read,

by invitation, viſited the ſultan in his palace, which is a very neat building. He was received in a room on the ground floor, covered with mats, after his having firſt paſſed through a lane of forty naked ſoldiers, armed with lances; and in this apartment was entertained with cocoa nuts, betel and tobacco. The ſultan ſome time after made him a preſent of a boy, each of whoſe jaws had two rows of teeth, and of two he-goats. Rice and potatoes were in great plenty upon this iſland, as were alſo ſeveral kinds of beautiful birds, particularly parrokeets, whoſe feathers are beautifully coloured, and cockadores, a bird as white as ſnow, with a bunch of feathers upon his head like a crown, and in other reſpects reſembling a parrot.

They ſtaid here till the 12th, when attempting to weigh, they broke their cable and loſt their anchor, which had hooked on a rock. However, they got clear of the numerous ſhoals about theſe iſlands, and on the 20th paſſed by Ombra, which in ſome maps is called Pentara, where they ſaw thick ſmokes by day and large fires by night; but though there is a good town contiguous to the ſea, on the north ſide of the iſland, the weather would not permit their ſtanding in for it.

Having got clear of all the iſlands on the 27th, they ſteered for New Holland, which they fell in with on the 4th of January, 1688, in latitude 16°. 50'. ſouth, and running along to the eaſt twelve leagues, came to a point of land, to the eaſt of which they anchored on the 5th.

The land is dry and ſandy, and that part had no freſh water, except what was got by digging; many ſorts of trees are ſeen growing in the country, at a diſtance from each other, with pretty long graſs under them, among which is one that produces gum dragon, or dragon's blood; they however found no kind of fruit, nor ſo much as the tract of any brute beaſt, except one, which ſeemed

to be the footſtep of an animal like that of a large maſtiff dog. There are alſo very few fowls or ſmall birds, and the ſea ſeems to be almoſt deſtitute of fiſh, except the manatees and turtle, of which there are great plenty.

The inhabitants appear to be deſtitute of all the accommodations and comforts of life, they have no houſes or coverings but the heavens; no garments except a piece of the bark of a tree, tied like a girdle round the waiſt; no ſheep or poultry; and neither boats nor iron to procure them better accommodations; their only food appears to be a ſmall ſort of fiſh, which is brought in with every tide, and left in ſtone wiers, built upon the ſhore for that purpoſe at low water.

They are tall, ſlender, ſtraight, and ſtrong limbed, with great heads, round foreheads, and large eye-brows. They have alſo thick limbs, wide mouths, bottle noſes, black woolly hair, and a very dark complexion. They have no beards, and it is remarkable that the two fore-teeth of the upper jaw are wanting both in men and women. But whether this is a natural defect, or that they are pulled out by way of ornament, our author does not pretend to determine. There ſeemed to be no particular connections between the ſexes, nor any ſuch thing as marriage, for to appearance they lived in common; and Mr. Dampier could not diſcover whether they had either religion or government; but as neither he, nor any one on board, could underſtand a ſingle word of their language, it is not improbable that he might be miſtaken in ſeveral of theſe conjectures. Their only weapons are wooden lances, formed of a ſtraight pole made ſharp and hardened at the end, and wooden ſwords.

Theſe poor people were dreadfully frightened at the appearance of the ſhip's crew on their coaſt; but their fears ſubſided, on finding that they had

no intention to injure them. Some of the ſailors endeavoured to prevail with them by giving them clothes, to lend their aſſiſtance in taking in a ſupply of water; but they could find no means of making themſelves underſtood; for the natives grinned at each other, examined the clothes with ſeeming amazement, and then laid them down on the ground.

On the 12th of March they left this coaſt, in order to ſteer for Cape Comorin, and on the 28th, caſt anchor at a ſmall woody iſland, in 10°. 30'. ſouth latitude, where they watered, and caught a great number of boobies and land crabs. On the 12th of April they reached the iſland of Trieſt, which is not above a mile in circumference, but ſo very low, that it is quite overflowed by the tide at flood, and yet it bears great plenty of cocoa nuts, with which they ſtocked themſelves, and here took a quantity of fiſh, and two young alligators. This place they left on the 18th, and on the 29th took a proa at anchor, with four men on board, whom Mr. Read took priſoners, after having ſeized their cargo, which conſiſted of cocoa nuts and oil, and ſunk the veſſel, to prevent Mr. Dampier and ſome others from making their eſcape.

On the 5th of May, they came to an anchor at the north-weſt end of the iſland of Nicobar, the moſt ſoutherly of a cluſter of iſlands, to which it gives name. The chief commodities of which are ambergriſe and fruit, which are brought on board ſuch ſhips as come into the road, by the natives.

This iſland, which is 12 leagues in length, and three or four in breadth, is ſituated in 7°. 30. north latitude. It enjoys a fertile ſoil, is well watered, and forms a very agreeable landſcape from the ſea. The natives are tall, well limbed, and of a dark copper-colour complexion, with black eyes, well proportioned noſes, long faces, and

lank black hair. The women have no eye-brows, and probably pluck off the hair with a view of rendering themſelves more agreeable.

Their houſes, which are raiſed upon poſts eight feet from the ground, conſiſt but of one room, and are neatly thatched with palmetto leaves. They have no appearance of any ſettled government amongſt them, every perſon appearing upon an equal footing. They are diſperſed about the iſland, and there are ſeldom found above four or five houſes together. They have a few ſmall hogs, ſome cocks and hens, and plaintains; but neither rice, yams, nor potatoes. They uſe proas, which hold twenty or thirty men, and make uſe of oars as we do, ſitting upon benches made of ſpilt bamboo.

Here Capt. Read took in a freſh ſupply of water, and ordered the men to heel the ſhip, in order to clean her. While they were here, Mr. Dampier got leave of Capt. Read to go on ſhore, with his cheſt and bedding, and Mr. Hall and Mr. Ambroſe being alſo deſirous of leaving this profligate and unruly crew, came on ſhore with him. The place where they landed had but two houſes, the maſter of one of which by ſigns invited Mr. Dampier to enter, intimating, that in the darkneſs of the night he might be expoſed to ſome danger from wild beaſts in the woods. Mr. Coppinger, the ſurgeon, was very deſirous of following their example, but was prevented by force. However, the pilot they had brought from Pulo Condore, and the four men who had been taken in the proa, were alſo left upon the iſland. The above pilot being a Portugueſe, and underſtanding the Malayan, and other Indian tongues, was an uſeful member of this little community.

About twelve o'clock at night Mr. Read got under ſail, when thoſe on ſhore laid down to ſleep, which they did not dare to do before, leſt he ſhould

have revoked his leave, and have diſpatched ſome of his men to take them on board by force; and indeed he would ſcarcely have permitted them to have ſtaid there, if he had imagined that they could find the means of leaving the iſland.

Early in the morning Mr. Dampier was viſited by his kind hoſt, accompanied by four or five of his friends, bringing with him a large calabaſh of toddy. Though the Indian was at firſt ſurprized to ſee the number of his gueſts ſo much encreaſed, he ſoon appeared perfectly ſatisfied, and ſold them a proa for an axe, which one of them had catched up and privately brought away with him, knowing it to be a good commodity among the Indians. This proa was as large as a wherry, but they no ſooner got on board her, with all their effects, but it overſet with them, and it took them up three days in drying their papers, and the other goods contained in their cheſts. However, with the aſſiſtance of ſome Achin ſailors, they ſoon ſet her to rights, and fitted her with a good maſt and balance-logs, or out-liggers,* and then ſteered for the eaſt ſide of the iſland, followed by the inhabitants, in eight or ten canoes; but they were frighted away by Mr. Hall, who fearing that ſuch a large company would increaſe the price of proviſions, fired a gun over their heads, which had like to have produced very ill conſequences; for the Achin men, who were their moſt uſeful hands, were ſo terrified that they leaped out of the canoe, and it was ſome time before they could be perſuaded to believe that no harm was intended them, and it ſo intimidated the inhabitants that they brought them no proviſions, which they uſed to purchaſe for ſmall ſtripes of cloth and old rags.

* See an accurate deſcription of theſe proas, in Commodore Anſon's Voyage.

Now the inhabitants every where appeared to oppoſe their landing; but in a day or two Mr. Dampier and Mr. Hall, leaping on ſhore in the ſight of great numbers of them, ſoon made peace by ſhaking them by the hand, upon which they were as plentifully ſupplied with proviſions as uſual. Theſe conſiſted of mallories, the pulp of which being taken from the rind and the core, and preſſed together, may be preſerved ſix or ſeven days: Some hens, and a few cocoas, with ſome large cocoa-nut ſhells, filled with about eight gallons of water. With only theſe ſea ſtores, they left Nicobar on the 15th of May, 1688, ſteering directly towards Achin.

On the 18th the ſky became overſpread, and a halo or bright circle encompaſſing the ſun, made them apprehend an approaching ſtorm; and indeed the tempeſt was ſoon ſo violent, that they expected every moment to be ſwallowed up by the ſea. However, on the 19th in the morning, after having been dreadfully buffeted by a tempeſt of wind, rain, thunder, and lightening, they to their great joy heard one of their Achin men cry Pulo-Way, which is an iſland ſituated near the north-weſt end of Sumatra; but about noon they diſcovered that the high land they had miſtaken for that iſland proved the golden mountain of Sumatra; the next day, ſteering for the ſhore, they came to an anchor near the mouth of a river, thirty-ſix leagues to the eaſt of Achin, and being half dead with the fatigues of the voyage, were conducted to a ſmall fiſhing town near the river, where they were kindly treated by the inhabitants, and ſtaid till June; but finding that they recovered their health but ſlowly, they reſolved to make the beſt of their way to the Engliſh factory at Achin; for which purpoſe they were provided with a proa, that carried them thither in three days, where they were received with great hoſpitality, and treated in a very friend-

ly manner by Mr. Dennis Driſcol, who was in the ſervice of the Eaſt-Inda Company, and ſerved as an interpreter between them and the Sabander, or chief magiſtrate.

Here Mr. Dampier contracted an acquaintance with Captain Bowrey, who would have perſuaded him to ſail with him to Perſia, in quality of boatſwain; but he declined accepting of this propoſal, on account of the ill ſtate of his health. However, Mr. Hall and Mr. Ambroſe entered on board Mr. Bowrey's ſhip, and afterwards Mr. Dampier engaged with Captain Weldon, under whom he made ſeveral trading voyages, for upwards of fifteen months, and afterwards entered as a gunner to an Engliſh factory at Bencoolen; but quitted the employment five months after, from a diſlike to the governor of the fort.

Upon this coaſt he ſtayed till the year 1691, and then embarked for England, on board the Defence, Captain Heath commander, when he was obliged to make his eſcape by creeping through one of the port-holes; for the governor had revoked his promiſe of allowing him to depart, but he brought off his journal and moſt valuable papers.

On the 25th of January, 1691, Captain Heath ſailed in company with three other ſhips, but had not been long at ſea before a fatal diſtemper raged on board, which was attributed to the badneſs of the water that was taken in at Bencoolen, during the land floods, when it is often impregnated with the tinctures of poiſonous roots or herbs. Upon this occaſion, Captain Heath behaved extremely well; for he not only conſtantly kept watch himſelf, but ſupplied the men with ſome of his own tamarinds; for the moſt effectual remedy they could diſcover was, mixing this fruit with the rice they eat. By this diſtemper they loſt above thirty of their men, and had ſcarce ſo many left

as were ſufficient to bring them to the Cape of Good Hope: but by the aſſiſtance of a Dutch captain and his men, they came to an anchor there in the beginning of April, when they were ſet on ſhore, and ſupplied with beef, mutton, and other refreſhments.

Here Mr. Dampier alſo landed with the painted prince that had been given him by one Mr. Moody, who had bought him and his mother at Mindanao, and afterwards went with Mr. Dampier to Bencoolen, when, at parting, he gave him half the ſhare in this painted man and his mother, and left them in his cuſtody. They were born in the iſland of Meangis, which, as he told our author, abounds in gold, cloves, and nutmegs. He was curiouſly painted on the breaſt, betwixt his ſhoulders, and on the back, but moſt of all on the fore part of the thighs, after the manner of flower work. This Mr. Dampier underſtood was performed by pricking the ſkin, and then rubbing into it a gum, which flows from a tree called damurer, uſed in ſome parts of the Indies inſtead of pitch; and he told Mr Dampier, that thoſe of his country wore golden ear-rings and bracelets about their arms and legs, and that their food was fowl, fiſh and potatoes. As to his captivity, he ſaid, that as one day he, his father and mother, were going in a canoe to one of the adjacent iſlands, they were taken by ſome of the Mindanaian fiſhermen, who ſold them all to Raja Laut's interpreter, with whom he and his mother lived five years as ſlaves, and then were ſold for ſixty dollars to Mr. Moody. Some time afterwards Mr. Moody made Mr. Dampier a preſent of his other ſhare in them; but the mother died ſoon after; and our author had much ado to ſave the ſon's life.

By the above ſickneſs, Capt. Heath's ſhip was ſo thinned, that he was obliged to accept of the ſervice of ſome Dutch ſailors, who privately de-

ſerted to him from other ſhips, either for the ſake of profit, or of ſpeedily returning to England.

After ſtaying here ſix weeks, they left the Cape on the 23d of May; on the 20th of June they arrived at St. Helena, and ſailing from thence on the 2d of July, anchored in the Downs on the 16th of September, 1691. Mr. Dampier after his arrival in the Thames, being in want of money, ſold at firſt part of his property in the painted Prince, and by degrees all the reſt After which this Indian was carried about for a ſight, and ſhewn for money, but at laſt died of the ſmall pox at Oxford.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

PRINTED BY JOHN THOMPSON.

5/19/86